Title
Military Oral History collection

Dates
ca. 1890-1970

Extent
400 sound tape reels and other material

Administrative History
Dr. Reginald H. Roy, who held the Chair of Military History (1968-1988) and Social Sciences Research Centre (1970-75), established the military oral history collection held in the Special Collections of the McPherson Library at the University of Victoria. Twenty-nine interviews constitute the Social Sciences Research Centre interviews with and about Maj. Gen G.R. Pearkes, Dr. Roy’s students working part-time on DND funds conducted 185 interviews. Dr. David Stafford interviewed nine people about covert operations in World War II, Dr. Barney Singer of the UVic History Department contributed one interview with a holocaust survivor, and Elizabeth Hazlitte, a nurse at the Veterans’ Hospital contributed interviews with six World War I veterans. Since 2005, the History Department has offered a Military Oral History seminar course as a component of the Canadian Veterans Oral History Project, a joint project of the Royal United Services Institute of Vancouver Island (RUSI VI) and University of Victoria. The seminar course offers students the opportunity to interview veterans for course credit and the resulting interviews are deposited with University of Victoria Special Collections. Each of these principles constitutes a series in the inventory. Many of the interviews have been digitized and can be found in UVic Library's "Military History" module of its digital collections.

Scope and Content
The collection consists of records generated by a number of different sources that have been brought together as a collection. The Social Sciences Research Project (1970-75) includes 29 interviews (and transcripts) with Major General The Hon. G.R. Pearkes and significant associates of Pearkes. They cover Pearkes’ military career in both World Wars, his political career, particularly as Minister of Defence, and his role in the office of Lieutenant Governor or B.C. (1960-68). Over a number of years, subsequent to the Pearkes interviews, Dr. Roy commissioned several senior students to interview 185 former military personnel, Canadian and Allied. These were funded by the Department of National Defence. The collection offers personal accounts of action in the Great War and in most theatres of the Second War in which Canadians participated, as well as post war peacetime activities in NATO. When Dr. Roy retired
in 1988, he gave a number of guest lecture tapes and some C.B.C. military oral history tapes. In 1982, Dr. Barnett B. Singer, a sessional lecturer, donated one interviews with a holocaust survivor, Mr. William Jacobs of Victoria. In 1983, Dr. David Stafford donated nine research interviews (and transcripts) for a book that he was doing on clandestine operations in World War II. In 1984, Elizabeth Hazlitte, a nurse at Victoria's, Veteran's Hospital, gave her interviews with six Great War veterans that she had completed on an L.I.P. grant. In 1990, Robert Winkenhower gave an interview of Olga Ghosh about the experience of a Jew living in Germany in the 1930's (accessioned 1994). In 1993, Cmdr. Hal Lawrence, a naval historian, donated copies of cassettes, summaries and transcripts of 120 interviews with retired Canadian navy personnel. These interviews were conducted between 1980 and 1990 under contract with DND. In 1993, B. Marshall, through Dr. Reg Roy, donated a cassette of an episode of Lister Sinclair's CBC radio programme called "Ideas". The episode was called "A Sense of War" and contains the experiences of Nursing Sisters in W.W. II. In 1997, Dr. Shawn Cafferky donated 22 tapes and transcripts of interview on Naval aviation also commissioned by D.N.D. Directorate of History and Heritage. Interviews with Lt. Col. John Edmonson, M/Gen. Norman Ross and Mr. Geo. Kidd (Major) were added in 2007. "War Stories: A Life Remembered", an audio recording of Thomas Miller's experiences in the Canadian Army during World War II on 2 compact discs was donated in 2008, as well as an interview with Ross Purse describing conditions in Oeyama Camp in Japan during World War II. Will Pratt's interviews of Japanese-Canadian veterans were added in 2009. An interview with LCol Cyril Neroutsos was added in 2010. Since 2005, the History Department has offered a Military Oral History seminar course as a component of the Canadian Veterans Oral History Project, a joint project of the Royal United Services Institute of Vancouver Island (RUSI VI) and University of Victoria. The seminar course offers students the opportunity to interview veterans for course credit and the resulting interviews are deposited with University of Victoria Special Collections as annual accruals.

Finding Aids

Finding aid available.

Title Source

Title based on the contents of the collection.
A Guide to the Canadian Military History Oral History Collections in the University of Victoria Libraries' Special Collections

Compiled by William S. Thackray
Edited by William S. Thackray and Chris Petter


Inventory

Table of Contents
Elizabeth Hazlitte Collection of Interviews
Dr. Reginald H. Roy Collection of Interviews
Dr. David A.T. Stafford Collection of Interviews
Social Sciences Research Centre Collection of Interviews
Dr. Barney Singer Interview

Table of Contents

Elizabeth Hazlitte Collection of Interviews

Atkinson, Glen, Cpl., 1891-198-
Browning, Egbert, Sgt., 1894 -198-
Gilbert, William, 1889 -198-
Hampton, Mr. Eli, 1891-198-
Lynn, Hugh A., 1891-198-
Twidale, Percy, 1892-198-

Dr. Reginald H. Roy Collection of Interviews

Adam, John Stronach, Brig.-Gen., O.B.E., E.D., 1908-
Adams, Kenneth F., R.-Adm., 1903-1986?
Adams, Robert Cecil, Bty. Sgt.-Maj., W.O. II, 1918-
Andrews, Joseph James, Maj., 1914-1990
Bailey, Harvey F., Maj., 1913-
Bainbridge, Charles Garden, LAC, 1925-
Barnes, George Barkley, Cdr., 1898-1985
Bartlett, Richard E., Lieut.-Cdr., 1919-
Bateman, Merritt Hayes, Col., 1919-
Baxter, Thomas, Bdr., 1895-1984
Beach, Horace Dugald, Capt., Silver Star (U.S.), Ph.D., 1919-
Beer, John Pope, Col., M.B.E., 1920-
Birch-Jones, Peter Meredith, Cdr., 1925
Boehm, Carl Rice, Col., M.B.E., 1905-1988
Boulton, Angus George, Cmdre., D.S.C., 1911-
Bousfield, William, Pte., 1895-19--
Bradbrooke, Gerard Renvoise, Brig., M.C., 1896-1980
Bridgman, A. Graham, Cmdre., 1917-
Buckingham, N.A., Lt.-Col., 1920-
Burch, Walter Chester, C.P.O., 1911-
Burns, Eedson Louis Millard, Lt.-Gen., C.C., D.S.O., O.B.E., M.C., 1897-198-
Burton, John Francis, Lt.-Col., 1920-
Butcher, Ernest M., Col., 1921-
Butters, Thomas William Lowell, Capt., 1918-1990
Campbell, Ian Wallace, Lt. 1923-
Carriere, Felix, Capt., 1920-
Carson, Robert John, Col., 1914-
Cave, John Clifford, Lt.-Col., 1907- Charles,
John A., R.-Adm., C.M.M., 1919- Choat,
Russell Frederick, Cdr., O.M.M., 1924-
Christmas, Beverley Evans, Col., 1919-1988
Clarke, Bernard, Capt., 1915-
Claydon, Frederick, Pte., M.M., 1898-198-
Cleeton, Alfred Joseph, Pte., 1892-
Clerkson, C. Harold, Capt., M.C., 1921-
Clive, Clifford David, Lt.-Col., 1915-
Cockburn, Lestock Peter, W.O. I, 1917-
Conover, Robert Oliver, Col., 1927-
Coppinger, Stephen J., Lt., 1920-
Corker, Arthur Donovan, Pte., M.M., 1894-
Corry, Geoffrey D., Lt.-Col., 1923-
Costeloe, Betty, Mrs., Sect. Off., 1915-
Costeloe, James Geoffrey, Maj., 1920-
Costin, Frank William, Lieut.-Cdr., 1928-
Coulter, James R.B., Cdr., 1920?- 
Crabtree, Kenneth S., Maj., 1909-1985?
Cumming, James Malcolm, Cmdre., 1930-
Cunningham, A.E., Maj., 1906-
Dayton, Francis James, Cdr., 1924-
de Faye, Thomas, Col., 1917-1999
Dickins, Clennell H., Lt., O.C., O.B.E., D.F.C., 1899-
Dillon, Charles J., R.-Adm., 1912-
Dobson, William, F/L, Rev., 1914-
Dougan, John Alpine, Maj, M.C.and Bar, 1921-
Downes, Marguerite, Lt., 19--?-
Dudley, Robert Woodhouse, Capt., 1924-1986?
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
Dunn, Meriel Joyce, Mrs., C.P.O., 1922-
Eckenfelder, George V., Capt., 1910-
Edmondson, John S., Lt.-Col., 1919-
Edmundson, K., Lt.-Col., M.D., 1903-
Edwards, Gerald John James, Maj.-Gen., D.F.C., C.D., 1921-1989
Elkington, Eric Henry William, Lt.-Col., M.D., 1893-
Ellis, Martin Henry, Capt., 1900-
Fairclough, Floyd A., Leading E.R.A., 1924-
Falconer, William Lynn, Sgt., 1897-
Fall, Gwendolen Margaret, Mrs., 1910-
Fall, Joseph Stewart Temple, G/C, D.S.C and Two Bars, A.F.C., 1895-1988
Ferrie, Ronald Fraser, Maj., 1920-
Finch-Noyes, Edward William, R.-Adm., 1908?-198?-
Gaddes, William Henry, Ph.D., P/O, Lt., 1912
Gerrard, Alex, Pte., 1895-1979
Gibbens, Gerald H., P/O, 1916-
Giles, Harold Trevor, S/L, D.F.C., 1922-
Gonder, Harold Bertrand, Maj., 1909-
Goode, Clarence Shirley, S/L, 1896-1987
Goodman, Charles Elsworth, Maj., 1926-
Grant, John M., Capt., C.B.E., 1895-1988
Gray, Raymond Skelton, Capt., 1912-
Gray, William Archibald, Lt., 19--?-
Greenwood, Alfred Lewis Francis, S/L, 1917-1988
Hall, A.C. Vassar, Capt., 1909-
Halladay, Warner H., W/C, 1921-
Hamill, Patricia Mary Jones, Capt, 1918-
Hamilton, William Stebbing, Col., 1920-
Harries, Maurice R., Lt.-Col., 1910-
Henderson, Lawrence S., Lt.-Col., D.S.O., 1908-
Henigman, Clarence Francis, F/O, 1920-
Henley, Roy E., Pte., 1902-
Henry, Vincent, Cdr., 1922-
Hewitt, T.H., Lt.-Col., M.C., 1889-
Hibbard, Inez Jessie, Mrs., 1906-
Hibbard, James C., R.-Adm., D.S.C., Bar, 1908-
Higgins, Richard Davidson, F/O, 1922-
Hinton, Peter, Capt.
Holmes, Philip D.P., S/L, D.F.C., 1924-
Horsfield, Richard E., W/C, -198?-
Hoyt, Alfred Geoffrey, Col., 1921-1998
Huth, Merlin, Lt., 1888-198?-? Ingram,
Isabella, Miss, 1908- Jacobs,
Isabella, Miss, 1908- James,
Isabella, Mrs., 1908- Jacobs,
Isabella, Mrs., 1908- James,
Isabella, Mrs., 1908- James,
Isabella, Mrs., 1908- James,
Jones, Anthony Lidden St. John, Lt., 1894-
Keddie, Morgan, G/C, 1904-
Kenyon, Lloyd Everett, Brig.-Gen., 1915-
Kitching, George, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1910-
Kitching, Hugh, Lieut.
Koehler, Henry Earl, Maj., 1917-
Lane, Reginald J., Lt.-Gen., D.S.O., D.F.C., 1920-
Laurie, William L., Col., O.B.E. 1896-1918-
Lawrence, Edward G., Maj., 1894-1918-
Lazier, Donald Rowan, Pte., 1915-
Leir, Richard Hugh, R.-Adm., 1921-
Lorimer, J. Duncan, Capt., 1919-
Macdonald, Alan Fraser, Maj., O.B.E., 1913-1918-
Macdonald, Bruce F., Maj.-Gen., 1917-1918-
McGill, William W., Lt., 1890-
MacGregor, Ernest Morgan Keith, Brig.-Gen., M.C., 1923-
McKay, Harold James, F/O, 1916-
McKenzie, James, Pte., 1897-
McMurray, William Hamilton, Lt.-Col., O.B.E., M.C., E.D., 1894-1985
MacNeil, Charles E.C., Maj., 1912-
McNeil, Donald Lauchlin, F/L, M.D., 1914-
Madden, John Russell, Maj., 1924-
Magnusson, Norman L., Maj.-Gen., C.M.M., D.F.C., 1918-
Main, John, Sgt., 1915-1918-?
Maltby, Richard Gosse, Lt.-Col., 1921-
Mansbridge, Stanley H., W/C, 1918-
Micklewright, Malcolm A., Gnr., Ph.D., 1920-
Milne, George Ralph, Lieut.-Cdr., 1916-
Morres, Stephen E.E., Brig., 1907-
Morrison, Finlay Angus, Lt.-Col., 1917-
Murdock, Robert Waugh, R.-Adm., 1918-
Nation, Madeleine, Maj., -198-
Norton, Francis H.A., Capt., 1916-
Parkinson, Robert H., Capt., 1916-
Paul, Ralph T., S/L, 1913- Perodeau,
G.N. Giles, Maj., 1919- Plant, John
Lawrence, A/V/M, 1910- Plows,
Arthur Howard, Maj., 1903-
Pope, Frederick Norman, Lt.-Col., 1911-
Potts, John T., Lt., 1898-1918-?
Ralph, Reginald, Capt., 1920-
Reid, Albert W., Lt., Hon. Col. (U.S.), 1896-?
Richardson, Clinton Argue, Brig., D.S.O., 1908-
Robinson, J. Emerson, Capt., 1915-
Rockingham, John Meredith, Maj.-Gen., C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1911-1918-?
Rose, H.J.F., Capt., 1910?-1918-?
Ross, John Stewart, Brig.-Gen., D.S.O., C.D., 1911-1989
Ross, Norman H., Maj.-Gen., 1915-
Ross, Stirling MacNeil, Lieut.-Cdr., 1929-
Roy, Reginald H., Lt., Ph.D., 1922-
Rubenstein, Norman, Bdr., 1919-1998-
Ruffee, George Edward Moodie, Capt., M.C., 1922-
Seaborn, Robert Lowder, Hon. Capt., Most Rev. Bp., 1911-
Sehl, Thomas, W/C, 1899-1998-?
Shaw, Colin, H.P., Capt., 1925-
Shawcross, Ronald Gendall, Maj., 1916-
Sheppard, Earl Herbert, Lt., 1916-
Shimmin, Robert Allen, Cdr., 1924-
Simpson, Robert John, M.W.O. (W.O II), 1924-
Smith, Herschel A., Lt.-Col., 1920-
Stirling, Michael Grote, R.-Adm., 1915-
Stone, James Riley, Col., D.S.O., M.C., 1908-
Storrs, Anthony H.G., R.-Adm., 1907-
Swanton, S. Lloyd, F/L, 1918-
Taylor, Edward Drummond, Lt.-Col, 1915-
Taylor, James Earl, F/L, 1919-
Teagle, Ernest Edmund, Capt., 1918-
Tedlie, Alfred James, Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1916-
Thomas, Gordon C., L/Cpl., 1898-198-
Uhlman, J.C., F/L, 1896-
Walsh, Richard Norman, Lt.-Col., 1913-
Ware, Cameron B., Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1913-
Waterman, Philip Fay, F/L, 1918-
Wightman, Cyril Marrott, Col., 1904-
Wilkins, Ronald Edward, Lt.-Col., O.B.E., 1913-
Wilson, W.A. F/L, 1917-
Wishart, William Donald, Col., O.B.E., 1907-
Wright, Nancé Eveline, Mrs., 1920-

Dr. David A.T. Stafford Collection of Interviews

Birch-Jones, Sonia, Mrs., 1921-
Cacchioni, Thomas A., F/O, D.D.S., 1922?-?
Chassé, Pierre, Col., 1923-
Ingram, Mary Isabella, Miss, 1908-
Johnson, Eugene Morris, Capt.
Masters, Robert L., F/Sgt, 1922-
Matula, Robert, 1920?-?
Rubenstein, Norman, Bdr., 1919-1998-
Stephen, Hugh Roulston, Capt., 1913-

Social Sciences Research Centre Collection
Interviews by Dr. Reg Roy for the Biography of Major-General The Honourable George Randolph Pearkes

Abelson, M., Mrs.
Auger, Fred
Bostock, William N., Brig.
Cheng, Roger, Capt.
Clark, S. Findlay, Lt.-Gen., C.B.E., 1909-
Dixon, C. Garfield, Cdr., 1921-
Foulkes, Charles, Gen., C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1903-
Fulton, Edmund Davie, The Hon., P.C. (Can.), Q.C., 1916-
Graham, Howard D., Lt.-Gen., O.C., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1898-
Green, Howard Charles, The Hon., P.C. (Can.), M.P., 1895-
Harkness, Douglas S., The Hon., P.C. (Can.), M.P., 1903-
Howsam, George Roberts, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B., M.C., 1895-1988
Kendall, F.W., Lt.-Col.
Ladner, Leon J., Q.C., 1884-
Miller, Frank R., Air Chief Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
Molyneux, R.
Pearkes, Blytha (Mrs. G.R.), 1901-
Pearkes, Hilda, Miss
Pearkes, John A., 1931-
Plant, John Lawrence, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B.E., A.F.C., 1910-
Pollard, M.E., Lt.-Gen.
Potts, Arthur Edward, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., 1890-
Price, Charles Basil, Maj.-Gen., C.B., D.S.O., D.C.M. 1889-
Rennie, C.H.
Roberts, Richard H.N.
Smith, Douglas, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B.E.
Spry, Daniel Charles, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1913-
Sutherland Brown, Clare, Mrs.

Dr. Barney Singer Interview

Jacobs, William
Elizabeth Hazlitte Collection of Interviews

Corporal Glen Atkinson

16th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

(The Canadian Scottish Regiment)

Record ID: 00000148
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 1983, Veterans' Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.
Atkinson, Glen, Cpl., 1891-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Glen Atkinson ; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitte
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Elizabeth Hazlitte collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 180 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Much of the original reels have poor audio quality.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born in 1891 in Brantford, Ont. (d. 198-). When he was quite young his family
moved to Russell, Man. where he received his education. The area teemed with wildlife and as a
teenager he learned to shoot well, trading game for shotgun shells. Moved to Victoria, B.C. at
fifteen years of age. In 1910 returned to the prairies to homestead, turning the sod with a team of
oxen. This was a successful endeavour with the assistance of his wife (at seventeen he was
married in Vancouver). Immediately after marriage they moved to Calgary where he obtained a
job as a teamster, but soon returned to homesteading. Besides growing grain he eventually
fenced some of his land and ran cattle. Joined up in Victoria, B.C. and spent the next four years
in France and Belgium. Proceeded overseas where his first battle was that of Vimy Ridge.
(50:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Points out that his wife lived in Saanich during this time while his parents ran his
farm on the prairies. Describes Vimy Ridge and the deep German dugouts. A soldier's attitude
toward casualties. Comments on other areas of the Western Front. Describes Passchendaele: vast
numbers of dead, including some killed by our own artillery. Aided a badly wounded comrade.
Received a slight wound from a nearly spent piece of shrapnel. Describes a chlorine gas attack in
which he suffered some damage to his nose. Fought on the Marne and at Arras (where the big
attraction was the municipal bathhouse). On balance, enjoyed the civilian aspects of Europe; felt
that he could live there happily. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Describes a Belgian family with whom he stayed. He was in Mons at the end of
the war and was billeted close by for a while. Considered the war a great learning experience.
After the battle at Passchendaele he became a driver and enjoyed working again with horses.
Offers an account of the Hindenburg Line, crossing no-man's-land: barbed wire on concrete
posts was so thick that one could almost walk on it. Describes the horse drawn cookcart.
Difficulties obtaining safe water supplies. Billeting stories. Returned to his farm after the war to
find it in excellent condition. (45:00)
(Reel 2, Side 2) Additional accounts of farming, drought, sale of farm, working for neighbours, move to Victoria where he became engaged in the painting business. Cleared land near Swan Lake, Victoria, where he successfully grew potatoes. Lived close by for many years. (45:00)

Sgt. Egbert Browning
British Army

Record ID: 00000149
Browning, Egbert, Sgt., 1894 -198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Egbert Browning ; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitt
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Elizabeth Hazlitt collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Speech is slurred on the recording.
Recorded on original sound cassette 1983?, Veteran's Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born ca. 1892 (d. 198-). Spent some of his early years in Ireland where his father was employed by the War Department in survey work. Returned to London at about eighteen years of age. After a twelve-month course in surveying he joined his father and brothers in the survey business during the period 1910-1914. Due to the crowds of volunteers he had a difficult time joining up when war came in 1914. With the rank of sergeant he eventually joined a "special service" unit composed of technical personnel. Initially posted to the remount depot at Woolwich where he learned to ride. Inspected by Lord Kitchener. Hospitalized with a serious case of pneumonia. Went to Le Havre, then "up the line" in charge of a small unit. Encountered the Prince of Wales. Visits the 3rd Corps area where he inspected well-built (German?) trenches. Armistice, 1918.

(Side 2) Returns to comments on the first, hard winter of the war. Obtained leave in 1916 in order to be married. Anecdotal account of honeymoon on the Isle of Wight. Very unsettled after the war. Tried his hand at learning farming. Emigrated to Canada, to Victoria, B.C., in 1924. Worked on the Taylor farm at Patricia Bay. General comments on North Saanich, his brothers, etc.

Mr. William Gilbert
28th Canadian Infantry Battalion, C.E.F.
Record ID: 00000150
Gilbert, William, 1889-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Gilbert ; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitt
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Elizabeth Hazlitt collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 180 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 1983, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born ca. 1889 in England (died in 198-). Placed in a residential school, the West London District School, since his mother was unable to support her children. Classes held in the morning, work on the school farm in the afternoon; firm discipline. Later came to Canada to work on farms in Ontario. For a time worked in a mine in Cobalt, Ont. Went west to Calgary, broke land on the prairies. Worked as flunky in a logging camp, skidded logs with a team of horses, rode the freights in B.C. and northwestern U.S. (30:00) Had other odd jobs until, on Oct. 23, 1914, he joined the army, the 60th Rifles of Canada, in Moose Jaw. Became part of the 28th Battalion, C.E.F. Trained in Winnipeg. (48:00) (Reel 1, Side 2) Further comments on basic training, defaulters, civilian entertainment of troops, discipline, route marches. Overseas to England as part of the 6th Brigade, 2nd Canadian Division. Issued with British equipment and, carrying it all, they marched to Folkestone to embark for France. He describes guard duty at the front and the trench system. Breakfast in the trenches consisted of tea and bacon. Comments on trench life, rum ration, trench raids. Moved to Ypres in early 1916, then to the Somme. Belgian civilians not always trustworthy. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) On Sept. 15 went "over the top" for the first of three times on the Somme. Court martialed for guard duty transgression; severe reprimand only. Vimy Ridge. Small wound in elbow. Lice a major problem to the troops. Moved to Passchendaele where conditions were terrible. In charge of a stretcher party. Married in England in Dec. 1917. After the war he returned to Victoria, then homesteaded on the prairies under the system of returned soldiers' grants. Wife became ill and returned to England.

(Reel 2, Side 2) Homesteading a very hard life: short of money, livestock, all necessities. Wife returned, but after a stormy existence she returned to England. He moved to the B.C. coast. Obtained a divorce. Bought property at Roberts Creek in 1927. Employed in Vancouver. Could not enlist in World War II because of his age, although he was a W.O. II in the Seaforth Highlanders. In 1967 he moved to Victoria. The account returns to reminiscences of early life in England. Dr. Bernardo's Homes, details of emigration to Canada. Worked on an Ontario farm for three years, under the auspices of Dr. Bernardo's Homes, until 1906, in order to obtain basic farming knowledge. It was a hard life for a teenager. (45:00)

Private Eli Hampton

88th Canadian Infantry Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force
(Victoria Fusiliers)

Record ID: 00000151
Hampton, Mr. Eli, 1891-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Mr. Eli Hampton; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitt
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten partial transcript (2 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Elizabeth Hazlitt collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Tape summary is brief due to damaged cassette and incomplete transcript.
Recorded on original sound cassette July/Aug. 1983, Veterans Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born the eldest of seven children in 1891 (died in 198-). Due to the death of both parents he became the breadwinner for the family at the age of fourteen years. Emigrated to Canada in 1912. Became successful in the painting trade in Victoria, B.C. Joined the army. Comments on the great snowfall in winter 1915-16. The troops from the Willows Camp cleared the streetcar lines and were awarded free transportation on the trams for a month. Overseas. Vigorous training in England which he feels toughened them all for the trench warfare which was to follow. Sent to France in June 1917. Following the war he was a member of the army of occupation in Germany for five weeks. As a musician he entertained troops in hospitals and at town concerts.

Mr. Hugh A. Lynn

Canadian Army Service Corps

Record ID: 00000152
Lynn, Hugh A., 1891-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Hugh A. Lynn ; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitt
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (8 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Elizabeth Hazlitt collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound cassette 1984, Veterans Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1891 in Belfast (died in 198-). At fourteen years of age he began five years of employment with a pawnbroker. Emigrated to Victoria, B.C. in 1910. His first job was sweeping the streets, but through a lucky meeting he obtained a job as a (horse) driver with the Victoria Fire Dept. Through a friend he learned to drive a motor truck and, when war came, was quickly accepted into the Army Service Corps as a motor driver. Spent much time delivering trucks to
the French Army in the Jura Mountains, a long drive across France. Anecdotes: leave in London, driving experiences, his love for his favourite Fire Dept. horse, Mike. Explains that people used to gather to watch the Fire Dept. training sessions when the horses were put through their paces. Describes a race between horesdrawn fire engines and fire trucks. The horses always won over a short distance. He repeats his story of truck driving in France. After the war he returned to the Victoria Fire Dept. where he worked for forty years. Mentions that he knew Emily Carr casually, as a neighbour.

Mr. Percy Twidale

113th Canadian Infantry Battalion, C.E.F.

16th Canadian Infantry Battalion, C.E.F. (Canadian Scottish)

Record ID: 00000153
Twidale, Percy, 1892-198- My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Percy Twidale ; interviewed by Elizabeth Hazlitte 1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Elizabeth Hazlitte collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June and Aug. 1983, Veterans Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born into a farming family in Lincolnshire on June 10, 1892 (died in 198-). Recounts his childhood adventures, some humorous. In 1906, at the age of fourteen, he emigrated to Canada to live for a time with his brother in Alberta and work as a ranchhand (15:00). He provides a good description of a cattle roundup on the open prairie south of Calgary, those engaged in it, including the well-paid cook, living conditions, etc. Also participated in the last roundup before the C.P.R. fenced the land for farms. (35:00) Winter conditions were extremely hard on men and animals. In March 1916 he joined the Lethbridge Highlanders (113th Battalion, C.E.F.) and, after harvest leave in August, they proceeded overseas to England in late September. (45:00) The unit moved to France while he was in hospital with the flu. Transferred to the 16th Battalion (Canadian Scottish), but upon reaching France he and his draft were seconded to the "First Entrenching Battalion" (perhaps the First Construction Battalion) and spent the winter preparing railway grades, digging trenches, burying water pipes, cables, etc. Returned to the 16th Battalion in time for the attack on Vimy Ridge in Apr. 1917. A member of the first wave of infantry, he had his rifle smashed from his hands by shell splinter, picked up another from the ground and almost immediately received a shrapnel wound through his shin. Able to escort six German prisoners to the rear. Hospital at Etaples where, more than twenty-four hours later, his leg was operated upon (53:00).

(Side 2) Hospital at Manchester, Eng. where he remained for eight months. Gangrene developed in his wound and he was near amputation, but intensive nursing care and the removal of
additional foreign matter deep in the wound saved his leg. Eventually in 1919 he married one of
his English nurses in Canada. In the meantime, at Christmas 1917 he was invalided home.
Returns to comments on early days in the Army. Describes narrow-gauge railway at Vimy and
the problems of maintaining it under shellfire. A great deal of night work was necessary in order
to keep the activity secret from the Germans. "Task work": two men given a set amount of labour
which had to be completed in the allotted time. In this there might be five hundred men working in
pairs, digging a cable trench which had to be seven feet deep -- a protection against shellfire.
Often they dug up bodies (usually French) during the course of this work. Recalls his early
upbringing in England as a staunch Anglican. Repeats tale of broken rifle. (26:00)

Dr. Reginald H. Roy Collection of Interviews

Brig.-Gen. John Stronach Adam, O.B.E., E.D.

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

The Calgary Highlanders

Record ID: 00000159
Adam, John Stronach, Brig.-Gen., O.B.E., E.D., 1908-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Stronach Adam ; interviewed by Chris Bell
5 sound cassettes (ca. 435 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 435 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives files contain a record of Brig.-Gen. Adam's Army service provided by himself.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Aug. 24 (Reel 1, Side 1), 27 (Reel 1, Side 2), 1982 and
May 5 (Reel 2, Side 1), 13 (Reel 3, Side 1), 16 (Reel 3, Side 2), 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on June 13, 1908 in Victoria, B.C. Offers some family history and, as told to
him, conditions experienced by his family when they moved to Victoria in the 1890's. Father
employed by the City of Victoria Engineering Department, but died in 1915. Some description of
wartime Victoria as seen through the eyes of a boy. (35:00) As a youth he had a keen interest in
the local fire hall and assisted in cleaning equipment after a fire. Member of the Boys Naval
Brigade which offered him valuable training. At Victoria High School he was bugle sergeant in
the cadet corps. Graduated in 1926 and obtained a teaching certificate from the Provincial
Normal School in 1927/28. Returns to a description of the military camp at the Willows
Fairgrounds during World War I. After World War II he became involved in saving Fort Rodd
Hill as a national park. (1 hr. 40 min.)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment in 1927. Discusses uniforms, rugby
team, commanding officers, officers in the 1920's, attitudes to training and mess customs,
weapons. (25:00) When he was commissioned he had to buy all items of officer's kit. In 1928
attended summer camp, the only period for which they were allowed to retain their pay; at all
other times it was paid into regimental funds. Formation of the 2nd Battalion with the purpose of incorporating all prospective militiamen throughout Vancouver Island. (45:00) Joined the 2nd Battalion as a captain and second-in command of "D" Company which was situated in the outlying areas of Victoria. Platoons were formed from Salt Spring Island to Sooke. As an officer serving during the Depression he found himself assisting the troops to find jobs, even to purchase their own boots for parade nights. Mentions the commanding officer, Lt.-Col. W. Bapty. (15:00) In 1936 he left the militia, but on Sept. 5, 1939 he was recalled to duty. He became adjutant of the recruit training depot at Work Point Barracks, remaining until June 1940. Appointed to 6th Brigade Headquarters at Camp Shilo and left for overseas in Aug. 1940 as part of the brigade advance party. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Discusses the composition of the 6th Brigade. Initially not pleased to lose one of their western battalions to receive instead a partly-trained Les Fusiliers Mont-Royal. Selected for the War Staff College at Kingston, Ont. (25:00) Anecdotes of shipboard travel. Staff college was an excellent, tough, four-month course. (45:00) Promoted to major while in Kingston. Returned to England to the Canadian reinforcement unit commanded by Brig. A. Hamilton Gault (of Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry fame). Anecdotes of Gault. Appointed deputy adjutant and quartermaster general at 1st Canadian Infantry Division under Maj.-Gen. Pearkes where he was to ensure that the supply services functioned properly. Discusses the padre's and their role in the army. Comments on 4th Brigade headquarters during the Dieppe raid in 1942 and the reception of the returning troops in England. (38:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Posted to a staff position in both the 1st Division and the 3rd Division, then to 1st Canadian Corps as deputy assistant adjutant general, then to Italy. Returns to experiences under Pearkes. Anecdote re 1st Canadian Division exercise. Impression of Montgomery. In Italy he served as assistant adjutant and quartermaster general (Lieutenant-Colonel) for Maj.-Gen. Chris Vokes of 1st Canadian Division (15:00). Explains his staff and the functions of his office. Posted to London for a short time, then to northwest Europe. Promoted to colonel and appointed assistant military government officer at 1st Canadian Corps. This entailed providing liaison between the army and civilian governments. Involved with the supply of food to the Dutch people. Impressions of the Dutch. Further account of the Italian campaign. Returned to Canada to a position with the Department of Veterans Affairs in Vancouver (Oct. 1945). (1 hr. 15 min.)

(Reel 3, Side 2) In 1953 moved to Victoria. Offered command of 25th Militia Group in 1955. Describes militia group components and the personnel. Became heavily involved in civil defence. General comments on the feelings of the public toward civil defence, disarmament, nuclear weapons. Personal philosophy offered to a considerable extent.

Rear-Admiral Kenneth F. Adams
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000160
Adams, Kenneth F., R.-Adm., 1903-1986?
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Kenneth F. Adams ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
4 sound cassettes (ca. 255 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 255 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives hold an additional interview with R.-Adm. Adams. Reel includes a 60-min. interview
conducted by Chris Bell, March 31, 1983, Sidney, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Aug. 16, 23 (both on reel 1) and 30, 1978 (Reel 2),
Sidney, B.C.

Record ID: 00000161
Adams, Kenneth F., R.-Adm., 1903-1986?
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Kenneth F. Adams ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives
hold additional interviews with R.-Adm. Adams. The two reels include 255 min. of
interviews conducted by Chris D. Main, Aug. 16, 23, and 30, 1978, Sidney, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 31, 1983, Sidney, B.C.

(Interview 1, Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by Chris D. Main) Born on Sept. 6, 1903 in Victoria,
B.C. (d. 1986?). Educated in Victoria and at Royal Naval College of Canada (R.N.C.C.),
Esquimalt, 1919-1922. Explains entrance exam, conditions of service, tuition fees, discipline.
R.N.C.C. closed in 1922. Determined to go to sea; joined Imperial Oil and later became Captain
of a tugboat on the British Columbia coast. Asked to join the Royal Canadian Naval Reserve in
1927 as a lieutenant and in Jan. 1928 was accepted into the Royal Canadian Navy. Sent to the
Royal Naval College, Greenwich for a year. Served in the Mediterranean with the Royal Navy.
Comments on the naval tailor, Gieves. Appointed navigating officer in the new H.M.C.S. Skeena
(destroyer) where he remained for two years, during which time they offered protection to
British subjects during a revolution in El Salvador. (45:00) Returned on course to England.
Attitude toward the government and defence policy. Promoted to lieutenant-commander.
Training exercises began to improve as more money was allocated by the government. (20:00)
When war broke out he was executive officer of H.M.C.S. Stadacona (shore establishment).
Problems of expansion. (36:00)

(Interview 2, Reel 1, Side 2) Stadacona. Patrols from Halifax. Major problem providing crews for new ships.
Appointed captain of H.M.C.S. Prince David (armed merchant cruiser), patrolled the southern
part of the North Atlantic during 1941. Sighted German raider, but did not engage. Shortly
thereafter they towed a disabled British ship one thousand miles into Bermuda. Searched for
survivors of the sinking of the British armed merchant cruiser, H.M.S.Voltaire. Went to sea on
convoy escort duties. Captain of H.M.C.S. Stadacona in 1942. Commanded H.M.C.S.
Assiniboine (1943); describes attack on submarine. (50:00) Director of warfare and training,
Ottawa. In 1944 established H.M.C.S. Somers Isles in Bermuda. Appointed captain of H.M.C.S.
Iroquois (Tribal class destroyer). Operated in the English Channel, then with the Home Fleet at
Scapa Flow. Early in 1945 participated in a raid on shipping off Norway. Describes Murmansk convoy experience. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Comments on the "offensive spirit" in naval captains. Part of force delivering Prince Olaf of Norway to Oslo in May 1945. German officer assisted with pilotage. Part of the escort returning the German cruiser Prinz Eugen from Copenhagen to Wilhelmshaven. Iroquois returned to Canada. Captain of Stadacona in 1945. Discusses the Halifax riot on V-E Day; took steps to see that it was not repeated on V-J Day. Attitude of Halifax civilians toward the navy. Postwar navy, ranks, attitudes. Integration and unification; has concerns about discipline and morale. (45:00) In 1946 posted to command H.M.C.S. Uganda (crusier) which was largely used as a training ship. Ottawa: deputy chief of personnel. In 1949 appointed to command H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier) and as a commodore headed a cruise to NATO countries in Europe. (30:00) Transferred to H.M.C.S. Naden (shore establishment). In Victoria as commanding officer. Proposed that naval reserves should be more of an independent command and was eventually given command of that branch. Personal views of the naval establishment. (40:00)

(Interview 2, Side 1 interviewed by Chris Bell) Prewar naval experiences: first served in the small destroyer, H.M.C.S. Vancouver. Describes officers, living conditions, including a small bathtub which was stowed in the ceiling of officers' cabins, wardroom with working fireplace, staff of two stewards, cook, etc. As a lieutenant received five dollars per day and was required to pay for extra messing. No refrigeration in the ship, therefore fresh food lasted less than a week. Ship life exactly paralleled that of the Royal Navy (R.N.). Discusses old wardroom at H.M.C.S. Naden, social customs, etc. Courses at Greenwich. H.M.C.S. Skeena, latest thing in destroyers. Manning of ships was a serious problem in the first war years, largely due to the inability to supply properly trained crews as fast as ships became available. During service with the R.N. he was sports officer for a twenty-seven-ship flotilla of destroyers. First lieutenant in H.M.C.S. Champlain in 1936 which was in rather poor shape, largely due to the adverse weather conditions on the east coast. The Depression was a difficult time for ships and personnel. Personal views of the naval establishment. (62:00)

Battery Sgt.-Maj. Robert Cecil Adams, (W.O.II)

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000002
Adams, Robert Cecil, Bty. Sgt.-Maj., W.O. II, 1918-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Cecil Adams ; interviewed by Grant Gray
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. 5 in. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 20, 1985 (sides 1 and 2), Sooke, B.C.
(Side 1) Born on May 22, 1918 in Vancouver and educated at private schools in Victoria, B.C. and Port Hope, Ont. While employed by the British Columbia Electric Railway Company in Vancouver in 1936 he joined No. 111 (Coast Artillery Co-operation) Squadron, Royal Canadian Air Force (reserve) at Sea Island. There he was an aircraftman, 1st class and a fitter by trade. Some of the duties and conditions extant during the Depression are discussed. He was released in 1939 and in Sept. of that year joined the 1st Searchlight Regiment, Royal Canadian Artillery (R.C.A.), Vancouver, and shortly thereafter transferred to the 108th Field Battery at Lethbridge, Alta. (15:00) Barrack conditions, equipment and training were all found wanting. In May 1940 he was posted to the 2nd Anti-Tank Regiment, R.C.A. at Shilo, Man., part of the 2nd Canadian Infantry Division. (25:00) In Aug. of that year they went overseas to Aldershot where equipment shortages continued to adversely affect training. Discipline from the point of view of a battery sergeant-major is mentioned. (40:00)

(Side 2) Trained at the School of Artillery, Larkhill, Wiltshire. Participated in the defence of the south coast of England. Describes anti-tank training at Larkhill and the type of equipment in use. A late arrival in Normandy (by Liberty ship), he describes the scene on Courseulles Beach and at Carpiquet Airport. The regiment was by then equipped with seventeen-pounder self-propelled guns mounted on Valentine tank chassis. Explains the administrative job of the battery sergeant-major in "A" echelon. Recounts the heavy losses in the fight for Normandy. Later, during the manpower shortage of 1944/45, the unit acted for a short time as infantry. Heavy fighting on the Dutch/German border. Guns were regained in the spring of 1945 for the advance over the Rhine. Returned to Canada and civilian life in 1945. (35:00)

Maj. Joseph James Andrews

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000012
Andrews, Joseph James, Maj., 1914-1990
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Joseph James Andrews ; interviewed by Cameron Falconer
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 8, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 24, 1914 (d. May 21, 1990) in Victoria, B.C. Many personal anecdotes in this account. Family background, parents born in British Columbia. Educated in Victoria and at University of British Columbia (Bachelor of Arts, 1937). Taught school at Ladysmith. Joined The Canadian Scottish Regiment (C.S.R.) (militia) in 1940, became a sergeant, went "active" later that year. Sent to Gordon Head Camp (officer cadet training unit) where commission was obtained. Further training at Currie Barracks, Calgary; first experience with conscripts not unfavourable. Overseas in 1942 as a reinforcement officer. Rejoined the Canadian Scottish
eventually to command the mortar platoon. Comments in a general way on training and specifically on the mortar platoon who were mounted in Universal carriers. Recounts serious fight with British sergeant while on a night scheme. Wounded. On D-Day commanded the carrier platoon. (4:00) Considerable difficulty getting off beach due to vehicle blockages at exits. Eventually found themselves three miles ahead of the main body of the battalion. Experienced heavy fighting throughout Normandy. Later, near Calais, as mortar platoon commander again, single-handedly found and captured a German coast artillery observation post which was directing fire inland. Seven prisoners. Describes the night bombing of Calais and artillery "stonks". Second-in-command of "A" Company during fighting in Breskens Pocket. Describes attack in Buffaloes near Nijmegen and accidental shelling by our own artillery. As the war drew to its end the psychological effect of many casualties became very noticeable: experienced troops were becoming fewer and fewer. Not much fun any more; it became hard work. Now a company commander (major). Explains "left out of battle" (L.O.B.) system. Always somebody to take command. The company sergeant-major was the last member of the Canadian Scottish to be killed (the night before the war ended). After the war Andrews returned to teaching. Spent four or five years with the Canadian Scottish (militia). Commanded the mortar platoon at Sidney despite being a field officer. (45:00)

Maj. Harvey F. Bailey

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000006
Bailey, Harvey F., Maj., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Harvey F. Bailey ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 19, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on March 19, 1913 in Saskatoon, Sask. Served in the militia from age fifteen: signals, artillery, and finally, in 1939, the King's Own Rifles of Canada (K.O.R.C.). Commissioned in 1940. Trained with the K.O.R.C. at Terrace, B.C. where adverse weather conditions presented a problem. Describes the armoured train which ran between Prince George and Prince Rupert and his low opinion of it. Sent overseas as a reinforcement officer in Jan. 1943. Posted to the South Saskatchewan Regiment (2nd Canadian Infantry Division). Promoted to captain, but felt he was not a particularly well-trained infantry officer. Requested a transfer to the Regina Rifles (3rd Canadian Infantry Division). On D Day + 17 he was sent as a reinforcement to Normandy where he remained in a holding unit for a month. Gives impressions of the landing, state of countryside, etc. Sent to Canadian Scottish Regiment. (20:00) Describes heavy bombing and civilian casualties in Caen. Comments that, on the basis of many interviews, the quality of troops received as reinforcements in Europe was not very high. Heavy fighting in Normandy. Bombing of our own forces due to a mix-up of target designation colours (smoke). (30:00) Wounded in
action against enemy tanks. Rejoined the regiment in Holland. Speaks of the semi starvation of Dutch civilians, patrol activity, and Schu mines (anti-personnel) which posed a great danger. (45:00) Describes attacks on Emmerich and Cleve in Germany. Assumed command of his infantry company as a major. Heavy fighting; no daylight movement possible. Before unit was relieved one company was reduced to five effective members. Emotional return to the rear complete with pipers. Organized as many parties as possible in their rest area (great therapy). (20:00) Gives details of the company actions in the Reichswald and beyond. Additional comment on the fight for Emmerich. His company was reduced to thirty-six out of 125 men. Continuous shortage of reinforcements: received one officer and fifteen men. Describes the formation of an "advance to contact group", a small battle group consisting of a company of infantry, troop of artillery, section of anti-tank guns, mortars, and Bren gun carriers, and its use in operations. Everyone was a little more cautious as the end of the war approached. (32:00) For a short time after the war he commanded a small German town. A number of Polish slave labourers were released and placed in the local hospital. Civilian authorities were well-organized and cooperative. Returned to Holland to relieve British troops involved with the repatriation of German prisoners of war. (40:00) Returned to Canada, arriving in Moose Jaw on Aug. 16, 1945.

LAC Charles Garden Bainbridge

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000013
Bainbridge, Charles Garden, LAC, 1925-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Charles Garden Bainbridge ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 7, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 10, 1925 in Winnipeg, Man. His family moved to Hamilton, Ont., and then during the Depression homesteaded in northern Ontario. Once again in Hamilton, and after a partial high school education, he became a civilian aircraft inspector. In 1943 he joined the Royal Canadian Air Force, unfortunately failing the physical requirements for aircrew. Basic training was undertaken at the manning depot in Toronto after which he was sent for general duties at Trenton, Ont. Later he was sent to an equipment depot in Toronto. (30:00) Sent overseas in 1944 to Gloucester, England where a course in anti-gas training was undertaken. Explains the necessity of this and compares the fearful attitude then prevalent on gas to our present attitude toward nuclear warfare. He was posted to the Canadian No. 6 Group (Bomber) Headquarters near York as a batman for six officers. Did not like this duty nor a later one as a steward in the Officers' Mess. (39:00) Posted to No. 420 and No. 425 Squadrons as an intelligence clerk. Duties included decoding signals, providing target information, and attending briefings. Debrieffings were often hard, e.g. facing up to numerous casualties. (45:00) No. 425 was a French Canadian
squadron with an excellent reputation. Mentions the Air Force distress at bombing our own troops in Normandy in the summer of 1944. Some aircrew in tears. He participated, as an unauthorized passenger disguised as a sergeant, on a daylight raid against a target on the Dutch/German border. A little nervous at the sight of flak. From the air observed a V-2 rocket being launched. First realization that another era was approaching. At the close of the war he underwent a short battle course for members of the Occupation Forces for Germany. Landed in Bruges in time to observe the Belgian treatment of prostitutes and collaborators. (15:00) The unit was stationed at Oldenburg in Germany. While there he did not feel any personal animosity toward German civilians. In the Occupation Force his duties involved interrogation and disarmament of German air force personnel and assisting with weapons research. Also attempted to find the graves of missing Canadian aircrew. This unit was disbanded in Apr. 1946. While on leave he attended part of the Nuremberg war crimes trials. Visited Belsen, after which he felt that the trials were justified, but in retrospect not as sure that they all were, although he feels that the trials were conducted fairly. Comments on a few major defendants. (30:00) Discharged at Trenton in Sept. 1946. After 1960, for a short time, was a second lieutenant in the Royal Canadian Army Pay Corps (militia).


Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000003
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by James Douglas Baird ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives. Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews. One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reel June 17 (side 1), 27, and July 18 (side 2), 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on June 28, 1907 in Red Deer, Alta. where he received a high school education (d. June 12, 1990, Victoria, B.C.). Initially served with the 61st Field Battery, Royal Canadian Artillery (R.C.A) (militia) in Edmonton. In Sept. 1939 he joined the 91st Field Battery in Calgary where the conditions were inadequate and the equipment was old and insufficient. In late 1940 he was commissioned in the 6th Field Regiment, R.C.A where he had been serving as a non-commissioned officer. Transferred to the newly formed 17th Field Regiment, R.C.A where intensive training was undertaken at Petawawa. They proceeded overseas in Dec. 1941 to unsuitable barracks at Aldershot, England. Anti-invasion duty at Hove. Inadequacies of Exercise Spartan and general training are described. (15:00) Promoted to major in 1943 and joined the 13th Field Regiment, R.C.A., eventually becoming second-in-command. In the training for D-Day the early lack of success with towed twenty-five-pounder equipment firing from landing craft was a source of concern, and, although fairly effective results were finally obtained, much more accurate fire was achieved with self-propelled 105-mm. guns (Priests). The Sherman tank
chassis provided a more solid gun platform. (23:00) New fire-control instruments had to be developed. Baird was fire-control officer in a specially fitted motor launch on D-Day. By noon of that day they were several hundred yards inland, but with an arc of fire of 340 degrees the situation was critical. By July 30, 1944 the regiment had been in action for fifty-five days and was refitted at Bayeux with twenty-five-pounder towed equipment. The Priests were converted to armoured personnel carriers (Kangaroos). He returns to a discussion of fire-support at D-Day landing (45:00), including rocket attacks by Typhoons. States opinion of the effectiveness of the 105-mm. gun compared to the twenty-five pounder in the anti-tank role and comments on the German 88-mm., "the finest gun ever made". Called "Back Slope Baird" because of his insistence that all movements across country should be done between the contour lines on the map. He found French maps quite unreliable with contiguous maps drawn on a different grid. He proposed a simple method of correction which was eventually adopted by the artillery. (13:00) Gives examples of ammunition expenditure and Mike and Uncle targets. The 3rd Canadian Division was accidentally bombed by the United States Air Force and the Royal Canadian Air Force during the operation against Falaise. (40:00) Discusses action during Operations Totalize and Tractable. Feels that the lack of experience of the 2nd Canadian Division and of training of the 4th Canadian Armoured Division were partly responsible for the failure to close the gap at Falaise sooner.

(Side 2) The attacks on Boulogne and Calais are described. By careful use of land contours the regiment was able to bring fire on the latter city: an important factor in the surrender. Awarded the Distinguished Service Order. (07:00) In Belgium fifth columnists correcting German artillery fire from an old telephone exchange were discovered, taken out and shot by members of the regiment. Describes the extremely wet conditions in Breskens Pocket and at Walcheren Island. Very effective German artillery fire in the Hochwald. Dutch civilians very helpful, however in Normandy civilians not as trustworthy. (29:00) After the German surrender one had to be constantly on guard as many weapons were in civilian hands. Hitler Youth troops very cocky and required some control; S.S. Panzer troops, on the other hand, "were terrific soldiers". General comments on Canadians stationed in Holland. (45:00) Accounting for stores and surplus ammunition. Demobilized Feb. 1946. Baird joined the R.C.A. militia in Victoria in 1947 and retired in 1951. Comments on officer training: it is advantageous to come up through the ranks as long as this is accomplished in a reasonable period of time. Unification had a poor effect on the armed forces. It promoted a lack of esprit de corps which could result in reduced effectiveness in action. (12:00)

Cdr. George Barkley Barnes
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000007
Barnes, George Barkley, Cdr., 1898-1985
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by George Barkley Barnes ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy with Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 25, 1979, Crofton, B.C.

Born on Dec. 13, 1898 at Work Point Barracks in Victoria, B.C. (d. 198-?) Recounts his early life in Victoria and Crofton districts. Was a great-grandson of Capt. C.W. Barkley after whom Barkley Sound, Vancouver Island was named. His father, an officer in the Royal Marine Artillery stationed in Victoria, was sent home to England and returned to Vancouver Island in 1906. Schooling at the University School, Victoria and in Duncan, B.C. At age fifteen wrote the entrance exam to the Royal Naval College of Canada, Halifax and joined on Aug. 1, 1914. Graduated in Dec. 1916. Midshipman training was undertaken in H.M.S. Leviathan (cruiser) in the West Indies. Considers Canadian midshipmen more advanced academically than Royal Navy (R.N.) midshipmen, but the latter had experienced more sea time. Served in H.M.S. Minotaur (cruiser) based in Scapa Flow where he was engaged in convoy duty to Trondheim in Norway. Sub-lieutenant courses taken at H.M.S. Excellent at Portsmouth. Observed the Victory parade in London, 1919, following which he was awarded a prize, offered by the French government, of a trip to Paris and the battlefields of northern France. Returned to Canada on leave in the same ship as a Chinese labour battalion being repatriated to China. Met Adm. Jellicoe who was conducting his naval mission to Canada. Served again with the R.N. in the West Indies. Returned to Canada in H.M.C.S. Patrician (destroyer) in 1920. Additional courses in Britain. In 1922 served in H.M.S. Harebell (sloop). Fisheries patrol to North Russia.

Lieut. Cdr. Richard E. Bartlett
Royal Navy (Fleet Air Arm)

Royal Canadian Navy (Air)

Record ID: 00000004
Bartlett, Richard E., Lieut.-Cdr., 1919-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Richard E. Bartlett ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 5, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 21, 1919 in Fort Qu'Appelle, Sask. After completing his senior matriculation he was accepted in 1938 by the Fleet Air Arm. After six months of general naval training aboard H.M.S. Courageous he took flying training with the Royal Air Force (R.A.F.) and was awarded his wings in 1939, at which point he became an acting sub-lieutenant. In Apr. 1940 he joined No. 803 Squadron (Skuas) in H.M.S. Ark Royal. During the Norwegian campaign air cover was provided for the retreating British army. At Trondheim harbour he was wounded and shot down
while attacking the German battle cruiser Gneisenau and spent two weeks in a Norwegian hospital. He was transferred to Germany to an Air Force interrogation centre (Dulag Luft), then to Stalag Luft I on the Baltic coast. Describes camp conditions, low rations, first "escape committee". Enemy discovery of an escape tunnel resulted in two weeks of solitary confinement. Later, in retaliation for German prisoners held in poor conditions at Fort Henry, Kingston, Ont., they were sent to the fortress of Thorn (now Torun) in Poland and placed in dungeons. Eventually transferred to Warburg (now West Germany) where he participated in an escape. Captured in a railyard, placed in punishment cells. Finally to Stalag Luft 3 in Silesia where the "great escape" was well under way. Not an active participant. Fifty of those who escaped were later shot as an example to others. Secret "death zones" were established by the Germans which tended to reduce the zeal for escape. In Feb. 1945, to avoid the approaching Russian Army, the prisoners were marched to the west for days, living in the open. Some died when attacked in error by British fighter aircraft. Liberated by the British army and flown to England by the R.A.F. on May 5, 1945. Bartlett rejoined the Fleet Air Arm that year and transferred to the Royal Canadian Navy in 1946.

Col. Merritt Hayes Bateman

The Sherbrooke Fusiliers Regiment

(27th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000014
Bateman, Merritt Hayes, Col., 1919-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Merritt Hayes Bateman; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 95 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 95 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 28, 1987, Sidney, B.C.

Born on May 21, 1919 in Quyon, Que. Joined the Sherbrooke Fusiliers (Machine Gun) in June 1940. Housed in former cattle barns, some World War I uniforms, Ross rifles, etc. Battle dress, fall 1940. Much emphasis on route marches. As part of War Bond Campaign in 1941 the regiment marched from Sherbrooke to Connaught Ranges near Ottawa, a winding route of some three and one-half weeks duration. (10:00) Civilian attitude towards war: in several villages they did not see one adult! In Aug./Sept. 1941 the unit moved to Newfoundland vice the Regina Rifles who were sent to Hong Kong. Issued Lee-Enfields, Brens, and carriers. U-boats seen at Conception Bay. Asserts that some Germans came ashore in civilian dress to purchase food from local inhabitants. (20:00) All subalterns sent to Camp Borden, Ont. in Jan. 1942 for armoured training as the unit was redesignated 27th Armoured Regiment. Then sent to England on sixteen-week troop commanders course. In the fall of 1942 the regiment became part of the independent 2nd Armoured Brigade. Trained on General Lee and Ram tanks. Issued Shermans not long
before D-Day. Each troop initially had one Sherman Firefly for anti tank role (seventeen-pounder gun). (35:00) D-Day seemed like another of many sea exercises until bodies were seen on the beaches. Once ashore the tanks dropped their "Turtles" (sledges attached under each tank, carrying 110 rounds of 75-mm. ammunition) at a rendezvous. (45:00) Enemy opposition stiff from midnight, June 6. Tank hit at Carpiquet Airport, two killed. Wounded, evacuated to beach. Returned to unit after capture of Caen. Participated in Operation Totalize. Promoted to captain. Special training for direction-finding at night. Criticized 4th Canadian Armoured Division. (10:00) Own unit lacked flexibility. More freedom required to make battlefield decisions. Lost second tank. On Aug. 15 was wounded again. Returned as second-in-command of squadron in Oct. (20:00) By then the regiment was near Nijmegen. Jan./Feb. 1945 crossed into Germany. On Christmas Eve 1944 moved back eighty miles to defend against German Ardennes offensive. Returned to Dutch/German border. Much flooding. During attack on Cleve had to drive along a railway line two to three feet under water, led by a man with a pole! (30:00) Sent to England for armoured tactical course. War ended. Promoted to major. Returned to England in Nov. 1945. Second-in-command of regiment. Returned to Sherbrooke in Jan. 1946 bringing their only Sherman (named "Bomb") to survive European operations. Now a memorial. Demobilized, returned to university. Unsatisfactory. Rejoined army, stayed for twenty eight years. Served as instructor in gunnery with the British forces in Germany. Staff college, Kingston, Ont. Worked with Col. C.P. Stacey (Canadian Army historian) for two and one-half years in England. Member of British Battle Honours Committee. (40:00) Gives details of selection: each unit entitled to eight only. Returned to Canada as Director of Armour (colonel). For four years was "military advisor" in London. Retired.

Bombardier Thomas Baxter

10th Battery, Canadian Field Artillery

Record ID: 00000015
Baxter, Thomas, Bdr., 1895-1984
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Thomas Baxter ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 39 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 39 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 25, 1982 (side 1), Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 11, 1895 in Regina, Sask. (d. 1984?). Joined the 5th Regiment, Canadian Garrison Artillery (militia) in Victoria just before World War I. He was called out for guard duty at Esquimalt on Aug. 2, 1914. Later, on duty at Dunce Head, he saw H.M.C.S. Rainbow leave harbour on her first wartime patrol on Aug. 4. He discusses the purchase of submarines CC 1 and CC 2 in Seattle and the close shave they had with the Esquimalt harbour defences. Baxter volunteered for overseas duty when he learned of the execution of Nurse Edith Cavell by the Germans in 1915. He recounts his experiences on a troop train moving across Canada. Embarked on the S.S. Missanabi at Halifax. Arrived at Shorncliffe Barracks in England (10:00) where for
two months he underwent a not very vigorous training period. In Apr. he went to France with the 10th Battery, Canadian Field Artillery where his first duty was as a sentry in the Ypres salient. Describes the fighting on the Somme (1916), "dodging" shells, etc. Promoted to corporal (bombardier). Some discussion of the Canadian attack on Vimy Ridge (1917). Returned to the Ypres area (20:00) where he recounts the great difficulty of daylight movement under constant shellfire which caused a number of casualties in his unit. In 1918 a gas shell exploded nearby and, while he only experienced a mild contact, it was enough to send him to hospital in England for three months. He was there when the Armistice was declared. He returned to Canada in 1919, directly to Victoria, via the Panama Canal. Baxter goes on to tell of "miracles" in that he escaped death. Some philosophical/religious comments, including the present situation regarding the probability of war. (39:00)

Capt. Horace Dugald Beach, Silver Star (U.S.), Ph.D.

Three Rivers Regiment (12th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000017
Beach, Horace Dugald, Capt., Silver Star (U.S.), Ph.D., 1919-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Horace Dugald Beach ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 15, 19, 24, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) "Ace" Beach was born on March 12, 1919 near Ernfold, Sask. Farmed during the period 1937 1940; attended the University of Saskatchewan for two years. Joined the Canadian Officers Training Corps in 1941, then went "active" in 1942 (Armoured Corps). Underwent basic training as an officer cadet at Brockville, Ont. Considered living conditions to be good, especially compared to a Saskatchewan farm in the 1930's. Commissioned and posted to Camp Borden. As a reinforcement officer he went overseas in Dec. 1942. Impressions of England. (12:00) In 1943 he and others were sent to North Africa (6th Armoured Division) where they trained on Sherman tanks in preparation for the invasion of Sicily. He joined the Three Rivers Regiment (1st Armoured Brigade) in the fall of 1943, just below Ortona, Italy. Description of the people and of Italy. (25:00) In Jan. 1944 was appointed intelligence officer at regimental headquarters. Mentions certain highly respected units in Italy, including the Van Doos, the Ghurkas, and the Japanese-American regiment of the United States Army. (36:00)

Describes the circumstances of battle at the Gari River. Has a high opinion of his commanding officer (Lt.-Col. F.L. Caron). Here they supported Indian troops who were, in general, pretty good, with good officers. Describes some of the duties of the intelligence officer, including handling information about the enemy and passing it on to the regiment's officers. Rough Italian terrain very bad for tanks. Feels that some advances by our troops were slow, partly due to lack
of aggressive training which tended to be corrected as the troops became more skilled. Discusses the positive effect of the news of the D-Day landing. Heavy casualties before the Hitler Line. Miscellaneous actions, 1944. (16:00)

Dedication of Polish troops mentioned. Made a critical battle assessment (Lake Trasimene Line, a copy of which is in the University of Victoria archives) which, it was felt, should not be passed upward. (26:00) Offers his impression of Italian partisans, civilians, and the black market in which a number of Allied soldiers were involved. Discusses position at the Gothic Line, near Bologna. Impressions of politicians in Canada; some bitterness. (40:00) In his opinion troops returning to Canada were better, more unified Canadians. Operation Goldflake (invasion of southern France). (47:00)

(Side 2) Operation Goldflake continues. Reached Belgium where much refitting took place. Went into action in Holland in Apr., 1945. On Apr. 15, near Doesburg, Beach investigated a report that two of the enemy were representatives of a group wanting to surrender. He accompanied the German troops (who were Russian) about two miles forward. Eventually accepted the surrender of about 140 of the enemy. Later awarded the American Silver Star for bringing in so many prisoners. Posted to a twenty-one-man reconnaissance team and promoted to captain. (13:00) The reconnaissance team was in Oldenburg at the end of the war with the task of gathering up weapons so that they would not fall into civilian hands. Many ex-forced labourers, now refugees, created a problem. Before returning to Canada he attended the University of Edinburgh for one term. Discovered psychology; never looked back. When he returned to Canada he felt out of touch with Canadian life. Comments on too drastic cuts in the Canadian army in the immediate postwar period. Returned to the University of Saskatchewan. Rhodes Scholar. Worked in Newfoundland in the mental health field. Describes outposts and their population. (32:00)

Col. John Pope Beer, M.B.E.

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000018
Beer, John Pope, Col., M.B.E., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Pope Beer ; interviewed by David Gantzer
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Nov. 26 and 28, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Feb. 20, 1920 in Charlottetown, P.E.I. While attending high school he joined, in 1937, the 8th Medium Battery, Royal Canadian Artillery (militia) as a gunner. Mobilized in Sept. 1939. For some months they continued to wear their prewar uniforms, including bandoleers, putties, etc. He was commissioned in Feb. 1940 and proceeded overseas in Aug. of that year to
Borden, Hampshire, as a reinforcement officer. After four weeks promoted to lieutenant and posted to 1st Field Regiment, Royal Canadian Horse Artillery (1 R.C.H.A.) (Guy Simonds) where he and five others failed Simonds' artillery examination. (10:00) He was immediately posted to the 11th Army Field Regiment where he remained until June 1942. After a heavy training regime -- gun position officer, command post officer, etc. -- he was promoted to captain and transferred to the 12th Field Regiment of the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. (19:00) He explains the duties of troop commander (troop = sixty persons, four twenty-five-pounder guns), including those of artillery advisor to an infantry company commander. On D-Day Beer was a battery captain (second-in-command), directly responsible for administration and supply ("A" Echelon). Landed in Normandy with the second wave. Recounts forward observation officers' position with the infantry. (30:00) Describes the battle for Carpiquet Airport and later entered Caen as a forward observation officer with the Regina Rifles. Slow going toward Falaise: in his opinion the Germans magnificent in defence. His battery was accidentally bombed by our own Air Force and was out of action for twenty-four hours until new personnel, trucks, and guns were received. (45:00) Describes carnage at Falaise. The 12th Field Regiment supported attacks on the channel ports. In more serious fighting at Leopold Canal he was again a forward observation officer with the Regina Rifles. Their bridgehead across the canal was, for a day or two, about fifty by two hundred yards in size. Describes artillery "stonks". (20:00) Little sleep, heavy casualties. The early winter of 1944/1945 was fairly quiet. Promoted to major, the officer commanding a French Canadian battery from Shawinigan Falls (81st Battery, 14th Field Regiment). In Feb. the Reichswald was attacked: heavy fighting in flooded conditions. Later, the Rhine crossing. (34:00) At the end of the war he assisted in disarming the German troops. Returned to Holland where difficulties were experienced in keeping the Canadians occupied for several months; classroom education was a partial answer. Returned to Canada in Dec. 1945. Joined the Interim Force as a battery commander at Petawawa. Reverted to captain in 1946. Transferred to Camp Shilo, Man. which, in the early days, was not a pleasant place to live. (45:00) In Dec. 1946 he was sent to England on the long gunnery staff course. Immediate postwar England was a place of serious shortages; uncomfortable for a family. While discussing the course, Beer offers an opinion on self-propelled artillery: great mobility somewhat limited by mechanical reliability. He returned to Camp Shilo as an instructor in gunnery. Promoted to major in 1950. That year the artillery began to change to American equipment. In the early 1950's Beer spent one year at the army staff college, Kingston, and from there was appointed second-in-command of the 81st Field Regiment at Petawawa where the regiment was in training for service in Korea. They were there for only three months before the war ended, but the unit performed very well. (10:00) Appointed a Member of the Order of the British Empire. Posted as Canadian representative at the Korean Armistice Commission meetings.

(Side 2) In 1954 he was sent as a staff officer to the War Office in London for three years. It was a slightly awkward situation for a Canadian during the Suez war. As a lieutenant-colonel in 1957 he was on the instructional staff at the army staff college for the usual three-year appointment. (10:00) After that, he was posted to the International Control Commission in Saigon. Seven months later he was called home to command 2 R.C.H.A. which he did for a period of three years in Canada and one year in Germany. The regiment was a large unit: five batteries and an Air Observation Post (Air O.P.) flight. Initially the regiment was not in a good state of training or morale. (20:00) He explains the later excellent training in Germany. For a short time he attended the NATO Defence College in Paris. Promoted to colonel and Chief of Artillery, Mobile
Command in Canada, a position he held for four years. Early days of unification were very trying. (30:00) He is of the opinion that unification has had some positive aspects, but there have been many disasters, some of which are still operationally detrimental to the forces. As an example, one specific artillery concern is the lack of an Air O.P. under command. Appointed Canadian faculty advisor at the NATO Defence College in Rome for three years. Arranged and conducted European and overseas tours. Chief of staff, militia headquarters, Victoria, 1972-75. Retired in 1975. Commanded Vernon Army Cadet Camp in the summer for a subsequent four years. (44:00)

Cdr. Peter Meredith Birch-Jones
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000019
Birch-Jones, Peter Meredith, Cdr., 1925-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Peter Meredith Birch-Jones ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Nov. 23 and 25, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Dec. 10, 1925 in Estevan, Sask. Moved to Victoria about 1930 where he underwent a private school education. Attended the Royal Canadian Naval College (H.M.C.S. Royal Roads) from 1943 to 1945. First posted to the Canadian hospital ship Letitia (converted in 1944) which was sent to pick up released Canadian prisoners of war in the Far East, however the ship suffered a breakdown in Hawaii. Eventually joined H.M.S. Duke of York (battleship) in Hong Kong in the rank of midshipman. Saw Hiroshima and Nagasaki in Japan: a sobering experience. Refit in Sidney, Australia (1946), then to Britain. Describes a midshipman's life with the Royal Navy (R.N.). (20:00) Appointed to H.M.S. Implacable (fleet carrier). Details sub-lieutenants' course at Greenwich. Returned to Canada. Joined H.M.C.S. Crescent (C class destroyer) in 1948. The ship sailed for China to protect Canadian interests during the civil war there. In the event, they came under the command of the 8th Destroyer Flotilla (R.N.) based at Shanghai. On their turn as duty ship at Nanking, they made a slightly nervous trip up the Yangtze River with opposing armies on each river bank. (45:00) At Nanking, where they were under very restrictive conditions, about ninety of the ship's company were involved in a mutiny; actually a sit-down strike of about an hour's duration. This was a factor in the investigation culminating in the Mainguy Report. The next duty ship was to have been H.M.S. Amethyst (sloop) which came under attack from Chinese anti-tank guns and was driven ashore. Describes the heavy casualties suffered and other facets of this incident. Crescent paid off in 1949. Commissioned H.M.C.S. Sioux (V class destroyer), the first all-bunk ship in the Royal Canadian Navy. (20:00) Korean War, 1950. Spent six months on naval operations on the west coast of Korea, largely under British naval command. Many long patrols; one of forty-five days. Refueled and provisioned at sea. Participated in the Inchon
landing. On the east coast they patrolled as far north as the Yalu River. Carried out shore bombardments and destroyed floating mines. (30:00) During the evacuation of Chinnampo the ship caught a mine cable around a propeller. Luckily they were able to clear it in time to withdraw. In March 1951 returned to a great welcome at Esquimalt. Sent on the long gunnery course at H.M.S. Excellent (Portsmouth, England). In 1954 was term lieutenant at H.M.C.S. Venture for two years. Gunnery officer in the 2nd Escort (Training) Squadron. East coast command gunnery officer in 1958. Discusses problems with the new three-inch seventy-calibre gun for the 257 class destroyer. Executive officer in H.M.C.S. Restigouche II (Restigouche class DDE). Air force staff college in 1964. Promoted to Commander. Appointed Assistant Director of Common Military Training. In 1967 commanded H.M.C.S. Margaree II (DDH destroyer). (40:00) Deputy director of the staff college followed by an appointment as executive officer in H.M.C.S. Provider II (operational support ship), and later Queen's Harbour Master. Retired in 1975. Difficult to adjust to unification. Strictly a politically motivated change, not a service necessity. The Minister of Defence dug in his heels in the face of opposition with the result that service efficiency deteriorated. (43:00)

Col. Carl Rice Boehm, M.B.E.

Royal Canadian Electrical and Mechanical Engineers

Record ID: 00000001
Boehm, Carl Rice, Col., M.B.E., 1905-1988
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Carl Rice Boehm ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reel, May 30 (side 1) and June 8, 1978 (side 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on July 9, 1905 in Toronto (d. May 2, 1988). A graduate of the University of Toronto, he was a mining engineer by profession. He joined 2 Army Field Workshop, Royal Canadian Ordnance Corps (R.C.O.C.), Toronto, in Nov. 1939 and was commissioned the following month as a lieutenant. Proceeded overseas in Jan. 1940 to Aldershot, Eng. where barrack conditions were less than ideal. Describes work, training and a course at the Armoured Fighting Vehicle Training Establishment at Bovington. Appointed to command the Light Aid Detachment (L.A.D.) of the 3rd Field Regiment, Royal Canadian Artillery (see note re 1st Field Regiment, Royal Canadian Horse Artillery (1 R.C.H.A.)), and then a number of L.A.D.'s from Divisional Headquarters. Transferred to 5th Canadian Armoured Division as Deputy Assistant Director of Ordnance Services where he had to deal with major problems of the Canadian-built Ram tanks. Engines required much more regular maintenance than expected and, due to a faulty run-out, the recoil system of the main armament had to be rebuilt before it could be used. Posted to the 1st British Army in North Africa for three months battle experience. Upon return he was able to recommend a much greater degree of tactical flexibility in the use of Canadian workshops and support group ordnance companies. The lack of armoured recovery vehicles was an
important item to be rectified. He discusses what became the standard Canadian ordnance tactic: leave workshops static as long as possible, then leapfrog rearmost unit as far forward as the tactical situation permitted. They later became adroit at sending small specialist detachments where the need was greatest.

(Side 2) In March 1943 returned to England where he was appointed Assistant Director of Mechanical Engineering at Headquarters Canadian Army, Leatherhead. Promoted to lieutenant-colonel in Apr. 1943. The duties of the mechanical engineering branch of the service included standards of efficiency, operational layouts of workshops, modification of equipment, correcting failures, upgrading, etc. States the problems of repairing and re-equipping the 1st Canadian Infantry Division for the invasion of Sicily. Joined the Royal Canadian Electrical and Mechanical Engineers (R.C.E.M.E.) on the formation of that corps in 1944. He was involved in the preparation for the invasion of Europe, but was in hospital on D-Day. Discharged and reached Normandy on July 25, 1944. Recounts the conversion of seventy-six Priests (self-propelled 105-mm. guns, M-7’s) into armoured personnel carriers (Kangaroos) in four days in preparation for Operation Totalize. In part they had to make up their own armoured plate: two soft steel sheets with the space between sand-filled. When they pirated some beached landing craft for steel the Navy became upset! Later, during the France/Germany campaign, as many as 250 tanks were repaired and restored to battle in one week by the 1st Canadian Army workshops. Briefly discusses civilians encountered, enemy troops, and Operation Veritable (crossing the Rhine). He was on rotation leave in Canada when the war ended and joined Army Headquarters in Ottawa in May 1945. Promoted to colonel in 1946 and appointed Director of the R.C.E.M.E. in 1948. He produced a plan for his corps for the future Canadian Army (see R.C.E.M.E. Quarterly, Apr. 1950) which eventually reduced the corps from 181 active and militia units to twenty-nine. During the 1950’s there was considerable co-operation with industry for the proper use of manpower upon mobilization. This was particularly successful in Hamilton, Ont. Retired on Oct. 10, 1958.

Note re 1 R.C.H.A.: William S. Thackray was unable to confirm the story of the "extra" gun from senior artillery officers. 1 R.C.H.A. did bring back a British gun from France in 1940 in lieu of one damaged in a road accident. In a telephone conversation with Boehm on Feb. 22, 1988 Thackray came to the conclusion that, although Boehm recalled it as an "extra", it was in fact an unauthorized substitute which various other accounts confirm.

Commodore Angus George Boulton, D.S.C.

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000008
Boulton, Angus George, Cmdre., D.S.C., 1911-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Angus George Boulton ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 130 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 130 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 17 (side 1) and 31 (side 2), 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Aug. 7, 1911 at Russell, Man. After graduating from high school he became a
member of the Winnipeg Half-Company, Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve
(R.C.N.V.R.). Went to sea during summer training periods, initially as an unpaid probationary
temporary acting sub-lieutenant. In 1936 his employer transferred him to Toronto where he joined
the Toronto Company, R.C.N.V.R. (10:00) When war came he was a lieutenant and second-in-
command of the present Naval Division. In Oct. 1939 he joined H.M.C.S. Ottawa. Engaged in
convoy duties. Became first lieutenant, rescued survivors, etc. (25:00) Relates experience in
command of H.M.C.S. Rimouski (corvette) in 1941. The following year he took command of
H.M.C.S. Annapolis (Town class destroyer, ex-United States Navy). A wet ship, hard to
maneuver in harbour, with frequent mechanical breakdowns. (45:00) Weather conditions posed
more danger than the U-boats! Offers a list of his watch-keepers' instructions in Annapolis
(1943). Acting lieutenant-commander in 1941, confirmed in 1943. After eighteen months in
Annapolis he was posted to command of H.M.C.S. St. Laurent (River class destroyer). Believes
himself to be the first R.C.N.V.R. officer to command a larger destroyer. Londonderry, Bay of
Biscay where they were bombed, invasion duties. In command of a Canadian destroyer group.
Picked up U-boat survivors. On D-Day they were part of the armada, on submarine patrol. (25:00)
Later in 1944 St. Laurent was part of a hunter group in the North Atlantic. Promoted to
the rank of Commander in Jan. 1945 and, for three or four months, was in command of H.M.C.S.
Somers Isles in Bermuda where "working-up" exercises were carried out. Posted to Ottawa for a
few months. Left the Navy after the war; rejoined in 1946, retaining the rank of commander.
Appointed Commander (i.e. Executive Officer) in H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier).
(35:00)

(Side 2) Discusses staff college at Greenwich, England in 1948/1949, then Canadian Joint Staff
in Washington, D.C. Returning to the Magnificent, he recounts crew discontent, although
nothing major. Admits the tendency of the Royal Canadian Navy at that time toward poor man
(19:00) Posted to Ottawa in 1951, then made Director of Naval Reserves (acting captain). Moved
naval reserve headquarters to Hamilton, Ont. where much effort was made to improve staff work
for naval divisions. As a student at the National Defence College, Kingston, where he went later,
he considered it a very valuable institution, both personally and for the country. Appointed acting
commodore in command of H.M.C.S. Niagara in Washington, D.C. where he was concerned
with the United States Navy. Commanded cruise to Europe of the 3rd Canadian Escort Squadron.
First Canadian ships (new St. Laurent class) to visit Kiel, Germany. Thousands of visitors.
(38:00) Ottawa, assistant to the Chief of the Naval Staff for Plans. Appointed to the Joint Staff,
London, England. Involved in early discussions on building or acquiring nuclear submarines. Last
commodore at H.M.C.S. Naden. Retired on Feb. 19, 1966. (45:00) Discusses reorganization and
integration of the navy. Too much, too fast, morale bad. Reached serious proportions before
senior officers became aware of it. Air Force seemed best able to cope. Comments on a built-in
bias in the navy against staff work for junior officers. This was partly caused by shortages of
good officers in view of the other naval commitments. Eventually a few officers were sent to the air force staff college.

Pte. William Bousfield

66th and 49th Battalions, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Record ID: 00000016
Bousfield, William, Pte., 1895-19--
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Bousfield ; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 49 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 49 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Side 2 of original tape has interview with Pte. James McKenzie.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 2 1977, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1895 in England (d. 19--). The Bousfield family moved to Canada in 1906 to take up farming in Manitoba. Just before World War I they bought a farm in Grande Prairie, Alta. In the summer of 1915, after hearing a recruiting officer of the 49th Battalion, Bousfield travelled to Edmonton and enlisted in the 66th Battalion. The training was very basic, consisting largely of drill in the "awkward squad". There he was first introduced to "French leave" (absent without leave). In due course he went overseas to England and, as a result of a call for volunteers for France, he found himself a member of the 49th Battalion, and in the trenches shortly thereafter. Impressions of life in the trenches. Wounded on two occasions, first by shrapnel, then by machine-gun fire. Describes a harrowing three-mile journey to a field dressing station. Living in the trenches was unpleasant, made more so by large numbers of rats and lice. (15:00) The battalion cooks had to work under great difficulties which affected the quality of the food (very bad). Morale was quite high and both officers and men worked to keep it so. There were always a few men who deliberately attempted to get a "blighty" (wound) in order to get away from the trenches. The men had little time to relax, except to sleep. Rest camps provided time to read and play cards. The Salvation Army did a tremendous job in these camps in order to make the stay of the troops as pleasant as possible for the two to three days that they were there. Describes German shelling which usually seemed heavy. (25:00) Often it was difficult to take shelter: they dug small holes in the sides and sometimes bottom of the trench. On one unpleasant occasion he shared a hole with a corpse. Some discussion of the effectiveness of shells against trenches. Occasionally officers were killed by their own men who believed that they had a grievance. They were usually shot in the back during an advance. Among those so killed was the lieutenant who had first interested Bousfield in enlisting in 1915. Trench discipline usually very good, but tended to slacken out of the line. Serious offenses might result in a term in the British "glasshouse" (military prison). His second wound occurred on the Somme: a bullet in the hand. Discusses first wound and hospital in England. A soldier's pay was $1.10 per day; ten cents more for each stripe (promotion). (35:00) Bousfield was promoted to lance corporal, took "French
leave” when he got married in England: back to private! That sort of leave was not a practical thing to do in France, since security was so tight. The troops were never out of their uniform: same heavy material in winter and summer. They used to cut the bottoms off their pants when in the trenches until the practice was stopped. It helped with the lice problem. Comments on better officers’ uniforms, batmen, life in general. (45:00) The troops slept for short periods during the day when duties allowed. Sentry duty changed every hour in order to ensure that the men remained alert. (49:00)

Brig. Gerard Renvoize Bradbrooke, M.C.

Canadian Machine Gun Corps

Lord Strathcona’s Horse (Royal Canadians)

Record ID: 00000020
Bradbrooke, Gerard Renvoize, Brig., M.C., 1896-1980
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Gerard Renvoize Bradbrooke ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel, May 22 (side 1) and 29 (side 2), 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Nov. 1, 1896 in England (d. 1980). Emigrated to Canada at the age of fifteen. In 1914 he joined the 18th Canadian Mounted Rifles (C.M.R.) as a trumpeter, then transferred to the 32nd Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (C.E.F.) as a bugler. Discusses training, uniforms, rough barrack conditions in Winnipeg. Overseas to Shorncliffe, England in 1915. After considerable effort and a small bribe he was included in a draft to France as a machine gunner in the 28th Battalion, C.E.F. No battle training: never fired a Lee-Enfield rifle before entering the trenches. Personal experiences on the Somme (1916). Carried so much equipment that running was impossible. Occupation of a German trench. Winter terrain very bad. Troops exhausted by the time they reached the front line. Constantly wet, much sickness. Morale high despite conditions. Transferred to the 1st C.M.R. Provides details of first trench raid in daylight. Bombed German dugouts causing high casualties. Prepared for Vimy Ridge attack. Volunteered for the Canadian Machine Gun Corps. Commissioned. Describes use of machine guns; defensive fire, barrages, harassing fire, ammunition expenditure heavy. Later, at Passchendaele, 350,000 rounds fired by his command of eight guns in twenty-four hours. Over half the men in his battery were ammunition carriers and belt fillers. Wounded. Hospital in England. Sent to 3rd Canadian Division Machine Gun Battalion in 1918. Recounts exhilaration at “going over the top”. Near Cambrai in Sept. 1918 he was wounded again. Treated by German doctors at a captured German dressing station. Describes machine-gun limbers: basically two boxes on wheels, joined together and pulled by four horses. Two machine guns in the first, five thousand rounds of ammunition, gun stores, etc., in the second. Four “fighting limbers” to a battery. Armistice signed when in
hospital in England. Military Cross awarded for Passchendaele. Returned to Canada, directly to
Vancouver, aboard the Empress of Asia. Employed in discharging returned soldiers (including
himself in Regina). Later went to Kingston where he rejoined the new Canadian Machine Gun
Brigade which was disbanded shortly thereafter. Joined Princess Patricia's Canadian Light
Infantry about 1922 as a lieutenant. Transferred to Lord Strathcona's Horse (L.S.H.). Discusses
use and disuse of cavalry. Mess life carried on in a most civilized manner. Proud of their mess.
As a brevet-captain was sent to the staff college at Quetta, India for two years. As a single officer
he had seven servants, including two personal, two grooms, and a "buny" who was an
untouchable, for all the menial jobs (including feeding the dog!) and a shared gardener. The
system for about fifty dollars per month gave employment to many, for without this system some
would have starved. The staff college taught students how to instruct and to handle situations of
all types. Was seconded as a staff officer for the official visit of Sir Arthur and Lady Currie to
India. Describes the pomp and display of wealth of various maharajahs at official functions.
Inspiring parades mounted by Indian cavalry. Returned to Canada in 1931 to London, Ont.
Acting major and general staff officer.

As a general staff officer, grade two, he was in charge of training of regular and militia units in his
district. Worked for George Pearkes at National Defence Headquarters, which he found
frustrating. Returned to the L.S.H. in Calgary after two years. Attached to the 4th Hussars in
England for a short time. They had just been mechanized, and he came to believe that the day of
the horse was over. Short discussion of new Canadian Leopard tanks. In 1939 commanded a
mounted escort for the King. At the beginning of the war was an instructor at Royal Military
College. Appointed commanding officer of the Calgary Tank Regiment which he recruited to
strength as part of the 1st Army Tank Brigade. Discusses tank training overseas on Salisbury
Plain. Appointed Canadian Military Observer in Egypt. (45:00) Promoted to brigadier. North
African experiences. Returned to Canada. Organized 2nd Canadian Army Tank Brigade at Camp
Borden. Posted to the 5th Armoured Brigade overseas (5th Canadian Armoured Division). Italy,
but did not see action there as deemed to be over-age. Later was Canadian liaison officer at
Naples. Ill health finally forced him home to Canada. Retired in the fall of 1945. Lastly, he offers
a few thoughts on World War II service and his disappointment at not being in action.

Commodore A. Graham Bridgman

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000025
Bridgman, A. Graham, Cmde., 1917-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by A. Graham Bridgman ; interviewed by William S.
Thackray
4 sound cassettes (ca. 320 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 320 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reels June 3 (tape 1, Side 1), 27 (tape 1, side 2), July 4 (tape 2, Side 1), and Aug. 5, 1980 (tape 2, Side 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Nov. 4, 1917 in Wadena, Sask. While at the University of Saskatchewan he became a member of the 64th Field Battery, Royal Canadian Artillery at Yorkton. Rejected by the Canadian Officers Training Corps on physical grounds, he was able, before graduating in mechanical engineering, to join the Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve through H.M.C.S. Unicorn as an acting probationary sub-lieutenant (temporary) and upon finishing his courses went "active" on May 1, 1941. He was a member of the first three-month class at H.M.C.S. Kings at Dalhousie University. Posted for training to H.M.S. Dispatch (cruiser) and qualified for his engine-room watchkeeping ticket. (20:00) Returned to Canada and joined H.M.C.S. Quinte (minesweeper). In hospital as a result of an auto accident, he missed the sailing and subsequent sinking of the Quinte. (William S. Thackray's note: the ship was not lost due to enemy action. H.M.C.S. Quinte ran aground at Cape Breton Nov. 30, 1942 and was beached. Later refloated and repaired). Posted to H.M.C.S. Stadacona as a lieutenant in 1943. Appointed an engineer-officer aboard H.M.C.S. Stonetown, then under construction, and remained with her until after V-J Day. After working-up sent to Londonderry for convoy duty. Discusses boiler and reciprocating engine problems. Regrets political decision in 1945 to require volunteers for the Pacific War. Joined the Interim Navy as an acting lieutenant commander. Returned yachts on wartime loan to their previous owners. (20:00) In Feb. 1946 joined the Royal Canadian Navy and later H.M.C.S. Haida (Tribal class destroyer). Experiences in Haida. (30:00) Some comments on Canadian-made turbines. Ship construction problems at H.M.C. Dockyard. June 1950, second engineer in H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser) for two years. Promoted to commander in 1952 and senior engineer in Ontario the same year. (45:00) Describes accidental spill of fuel oil when carrying Princess Elizabeth and Prince Philip. Ottawa: Assistant engineer-in-chief responsible for machinery design in the new St. Laurent class destroyers for the next three years. (55:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) In Aug. 1952 arrived in Ottawa to serious staffing problems. C.D. Howe ordered civilian technicians be recruited in England. Had to construct Canadian factories to copy first engine (Y-100) and gears made in England and Switzerland. Necessary to develop new type of lubricating oil to prevent bearing failures. Canadian gear plant unfortunately later dismantled and sold. Lists some major contractors. Many problems involving the very high manufacturing specifications required. Describes main and cruising turbines. (20:00) Contractors given cost-plus contracts which may have been the only effective method of building the ships. Remarks on different shipyards. (30:00) Naval central drawing office established in Montreal. Chief Engineer in H.M.C.S. Bonaventure (aircraft carrier) building in Belfast, Ireland. Latest Canadian technology incorporated. Sailed for Halifax in the summer of 1957. (45:00) Comments on the later famous refit of Bonaventure. Largely a media scandal: some government inefficiency had resulted in inaccurate cost estimates being submitted to the Treasury Board. Promoted to captain. Formed part of the nuclear submarine team in 1959. (20:00) National Defence College in 1960. Principal naval overseer in Montreal. In 1964 member of the study team on integration. (36:00) Idea not bad, but in practice was not as good; especially muddled were the technical services. Some danger of organizational breakdown was evident. Unification, as the next step, came as a shock. (45:00) Among other things, it caused a proliferation of high-ranking officers. Promoted
to commodore in Aug. 1965 and was director general of maritime systems for five years. The DDH 280 class of destroyers was designed. Oberon class submarines authorized. (53:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Discusses DDH (Iroquois class destroyers). Financial constraints limited the number of changes permitted during construction. Very heavy lobbying, even to the Prime Minister's office, regarding the competing British and United States gas turbine engines. The American design was accepted because of more sophisticated controls. As part of unification, a new Defence Department broom caused the contract system to be changed to "fixed price". Some changes not always better than the status quo. The Restigouche class destroyers were modernized. Oberon subs built on target in England without difficulties. The FHE 400 (H.M.C.S. Bras d'Or) hydrofoil project was expensive, but finally successful, although the newly-built weapons system was not installed. The project was mothballed as additional ships were thought to be too expensive. (30:00) Mentions the operational purpose of Bras d'Or. Discusses future ship refit and modernization which have advantages. Acted as technical advisor for personnel. (45:00) Tisdale Report recommended adoption of the American organizational system including dropping the departmental officer distinctions of coloured sleeve stripes. The report felt that more individuals could be "upper-deck" trained. Some confusion resulted from this. Integrated engineering services did not work particularly well, although supply services seemed to. On the whole unification caused too many well-qualified persons to leave the service. (20:00) Moved to the Defence Research Board and was acting chief for about one year. Retired in Aug. 1972. (34:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Ship construction: the most cost-effective shipyard could eventually get it all. From a defence production/wartime point of view, however, it is better, and certainly politically advantageous, to spread the business. High quality work obtainable for the west coast, but wages too high. Refits usually not competitive since specifications are firm. Dockyards are important construction facilities and require their share of business. Comments on the necessary position of civilians in the naval establishment; a dedicated group who thought of themselves as "Navy". Others, such as laundryman Suey Kee of Esquimalt, were included. (15:00) Navy has always had a close attachment to royalty. Religion in the navy used to be emphasized more: "Cause the ship's company to worship Almighty God." Rear-Admiral Hugh Pullen captain of Ontario, used to read part of the Articles of War to the crew on Sunday. Initially Bridgman favoured the common uniform, but now realizes that was a mistake. Because of it the family spirit in the service was lacking. (30:00) New command structure not as centralized and causes fragmented responsibilities. Comments on old and new uniforms. (41:00)

Lieut.-Col. N.A. Buckingham

Royal Montreal Regiment

Governor General's Foot Guards (21st Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000009
Buckingham, N.A., Lt.-Col., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by N.A. Buckingham; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 78 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 78 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 16, 1981, Ottawa, Ont.

Born on May 30, 1920 in Montreal, Que. McGill University undergraduate. In 1939 he joined the 17th Duke of York's Royal Canadian Hussars, then the Canadian Officers Training Corps at McGill. Commissioned into the Royal Montreal Regiment (Machine Gun) (R.M.R.) in July 1940. Machine Gun Training Centre at Valcartier Camp. Overseas in Oct. 1941 with a draft of the R.M.R. (10:00) Joined the regiment in late Nov. 1941 in billets at Cheam (suburban London houses). Given a choice by army headquarters, the R.M.R. opted to become 1st Corps Troops rather than part of an overseas division. The British decided that a corps machine-gun battalion was not effective and that the corps commander should have a reconnaissance battalion. Therefore, at the end of 1942 they became the 32nd Reconnaissance Regiment. In 1944 the unit was disbanded, since battle experience in Italy showed that a regiment equipped with armoured cars was of little use at corps level. Pressure from prominent Montrealers caused one company to be reconstituted as 1st Canadian Army Defence Company. (20:00) Posted to the Governor General's Foot Guards (G.G.F.G.) (4th Canadian Armoured Division) where he received a quick course on Sherman tanks. Landed in Normandy in 1944. Appointed supernumerary liaison officer at 4th Armoured Brigade headquarters. Was in attendance at the "O" Group (Orders Group) when the British Columbia Regiment (28th Armoured Regiment) (B.C.R.) was sent off on its disastrous adventure. Before Operation Totalize attended a very brief "O" Group given by Lt.- Col. W.W. Halpenny (commanding officer of the Canadian Grenadier Guards). Night attack; very slow, troops green. Problems at Rocquancourt on Aug. 9. Infantry did not like the tanks retiring to harbour at night: left them too exposed. B.C.R. pushed on ahead, apparently becoming lost. Buckingham sent on an unsuccessful reconnaissance to see if he could locate them. (45:00) Returned to G.G.F.G. as intelligence officer just before Operation Tractable. Refers to duties. Describes tank casualties. One major cause was a tendency of Shermans to "brew up". Design fault: the five engines of the tank were served by one large manifold, somewhat lightly constructed. It fractured easily, thus pouring gasoline on the hot engines. Caused a low explosion which often blew the tank Commander out of the hatch. A solid hit anywhere might be enough. Crew often trapped, especially the wireless operator. Discusses the rescue of the B.C.R. Originally off course due to smoke and dust. Drivers tend to steer toward areas of greater visibility. Problems of resupplying units in battle. In his opinion the commanding officer's tank not suitable as a command post: awkward due to the extra wireless and other necessities carried. Eventually a properly fitted-out half-track was supplied. (30:00) Comments on regimental and brigade command structure. Mentions Typhoons attacking our own forces. Buckingham himself was attacked by a Spitfire as he was moving down a road. (33:00)
Chief Petty Officer (C.P.O.) Walter Chester Burch

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Record ID: 00000021
Burch, Walter Chester, C.P.O., 1911-
My Naval recollections [sound recording] by Walter Chester Burch; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 25, June 1, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Dec. 7, 1911 in Selkirk, Man. Although underage, Burch joined the militia in 1926 (10th Machine Gun Battalion) in Winnipeg. Transferred to the Fort Garry Horse in 1927/28, then to the Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve (R.C.N.V.R.) waiting list. In Jan. 1929, as a member of the R.C.N.V.R., he was posted for training to Esquimalt. Underwent basic training as an ordinary seaman at $1.65 per day(?). First training cruise to Central America in 1933. Trained as a torpedoman. Offers some thoughts on a prairie preference for the Navy life. Describes coaling operations in minesweepers. Reservists uniforms. Mentions prewar officers, including "Scotty" Brodeur. (45:00) Signed on for active service at 10:00 a.m., Sept. 3, 1939 (was married at 2:00 p.m., left for the west coast at 10:00 p.m.!) Involved with organizational duties at Esquimalt. (11:00) Employed on the examination service. Joined H.M.C.S. Agassiz, the second corvette built on the west coast. Leading torpedoman. Some shortage of equipment. (30:00) Brought own small tools. On the east coast engaged in convoy duty as far as Iceland. (45:00)

(Side 2) Later escorted ships as far as Londonderry. Promoted to coxswain in Agassiz. Late in the war posted to H.M.C.S. Provider I, a depot ship for Fairmile motor launches. Appointed bosun's mate. Bosun and coxswain duties explained. Left the Navy in Nov. 1945. Joined the naval reserve in Victoria in 1946 as coxswain. Served in the Royal Canadian Navy during the Korean War period. Offers the opinion that the present Navy seems to have a smaller perception of tradition and that peacetime sailors have to put up with many fewer problems. The urge to "get on with it" is not so pressing. (35:00)


The Royal Canadian Engineers

Record ID: 00000022
Burns, Edson Louis Millard, Lt.-Gen., C.C., D.S.O., O.B.E., M.C., 1897-198-?
My Army recollections [sound recording] by Edson Louis Millard Burns; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Oct. 23 (side 1), 24 (side 1 and side 2), and 25 (side 2),
1979, Victoria, B.C

(Side 1) Born on June 17, 1897 in Montreal (d. 198-?). Indocitrinated into military life through
his father who was a militia staff officer, a member of the Corps of Guides. Joined the 17th Duke
of York's Royal Canadian Hussars (17th D.Y.R.C.H.) and by 1913 had risen to the rank of signal
sergeant. Admitted to Royal Military College (R.M.C.) in 1914, he found it not that much
different from his early boarding school life, except for rather more discipline. Some discussion of
course work. (10:00) R.M.C. graduates had to take a militia commission, but not necessarily a
regular commission. Many of the military staff were British; the academic staff, Canadian. At
that time the course at R.M.C. was shortened largely through personal choice, a desire to get into
the war. He was advised to join the Royal Canadian Engineers, into which he was commissioned
as a lieutenant in 1915. Served in Canada until March 1916 when he went overseas with the 3rd
Canadian Division Signal Company which, in fact, was composed of engineers. Discusses pay,
leave, and the prominent military tailors, Hawkes Bros. of Saville Row. (32:00) In France he
found that communications by means of the early field telephone were not very satisfactory,
compounded by constantly broken wire. At the front, if time allowed, telephone wires were
buried six feet deep as protection against shellfire, particularly at, and after, Vimy in 1917.
(40:00) First interview ends. Flashback: prewar training and experiences with the 17th
D.Y.R.C.H. (45:00). Again comments on life at R.M.C. General military topics: 4th Canadian
Division, conscription, politics, units, 11th Brigade Headquarters signal section, methods of
passing messages, etc. (20:00) Comments that ex-telegraph operators were very valuable, since
Morse code in much use. Special codes were established (1916), since the enemy was using
sensitive listening devices. Remarks on the capture of Regina Trench/Courcelette in 1916. Burns
became a staff officer with the 9th Brigade in March 1917, dealing with supply and personnel.
Discusses preparation for, and the attack on, Vimy Ridge. Flashback to the Somme: awarded the
Military Cross for maintaining communications under heavy fire, and, for the same action, his
non-commissioned officers received Military Medals. Describes an unsuccessful gas attack as a
preliminary to Vimy. After the failure the Germans allowed an unofficial cease-fire while the
Canadians collected their dead and wounded. (45:00) Morale suffered in the two battalions
involved. (48:00)

(Side 2 - audio not well-defined at the beginning). Discusses the effect of machine-gun fire.
Passchendaele, Ypres salient. (13:00) Interview ends. Gen. Sir Arthur Currie, George Pearkes,
various staff officers. (25:00) Became a "staff learner" and acted as liaison officer between
forward battalions and brigade headquarters. Offers wide-ranging comments on general military
conditions. (35:00) Returned to Canada in 1919. Stationed at St. John as an engineer officer.
Occasional problems as postwar army short of logistic troops. (45:00) Posted to the School of
Military Engineering, Chatham, England for eighteen months. Returned to Halifax. On duty
during the miners' strike at Glace Bay. Worked in the Survey Department in Ottawa. (15:00) In
1924 appointed as an instructor at R.M.C. in field engineering. Mentions Guy Simonds as a
cadet. Staff College in Quetta, India. (2:00) Returned to Canada in 1930 to Quebec.
Lt.-Col. John Francis Burton
Lord Strathcona's Horse (Royal Canadians)

(2nd Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000010
Burton, John Francis, Lt.-Col., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Francis Burton ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
1 sound cassette (ca. 94 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 94 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Jan. 12, 1984 (side 1 and side 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Apr. 24, 1920 in Winnipeg, Man. Educated at high school in Vancouver, B.C. Experienced prewar militia service in the Royal Canadian Army Service Corps (R.C.A.S.C.) and in the Seaforth Highlanders of Canada (S.H.C.) where he was commissioned in 1938 as a second lieutenant. Mobilized with the S.H.C. in 1939. Trained in Canada until he was twenty years of age when he went overseas as a reinforcement officer. (15:00) Recounts lack of uniforms and equipment, comments on recruiting. Passing through a reinforcement unit near Aldershot, he rejoined the S.H.C. in Sept. 1940 at a camp east of Reigate. Tells of the Battle of Britain, improved infantry weapons, many night exercises, coastal defence near Brighton. (30:00) As a rap on the knuckles from higher authority (details not provided) Burton was transferred to the R.C.A.S.C., first to a petrol company, then to an ammunition company. An unhappy experience which, when the opportunity arose, led him to apply for a transfer to the Armoured Corps. (35:00) In June 1942 he joined Lord Strathcona's Horse (L.S.H.). Shortage of tanks: only four or five Lee or Grant tanks per squadron. They were later issued with Canadian Ram tanks which eventually became armoured personnel carriers: Ram Kangaroos (as distinct from Priest Kangaroos). In the fall of 1943 the regiment moved to Italy where it acquired the well-used Sherman tanks and other vehicles of the 7th Armoured Division (the British "Desert Rats"). (45:00) Expresses his feelings on first going into action in support of a brigade of the 4th Indian Division near Ortona. Comments that Indian officers lived and dined well even in a war zone. Outstanding rapport between Indian troops and British officers (one per company). (15:00) Here he experienced his first independent command as a troop commander. March 1944, discusses training and preparation for battle in the Liri Valley, Hitler Line. They discovered how dangerous it was to carry extra ammunition and also how to evacuate a tank very smartly. Feelings and conditions when in action in a tank: one became careful. He admired the great efficiency of the German troops. They tended not to fire on dismounted tank crews -- a nice touch. (30:00) Discusses tank losses, leave centres, Italian civilians. In Oct. 1944 he became Commanding Officer of a training squadron at Perugia. Returned to the regiment when they moved to France. In action again in early Apr. 1945 in Holland. Comments on the German fighting spirit which they retained right to the end. Dutch collaborators treated roughly by their
peers. (45:00) Occupied Frisian Islands. Sent on course to the Armoured School at Bovington to qualify for promotion. Returned to Holland in July 1945. Some problems with dissatisfied troops anxious to return to Canada. Classroom education was a partial answer. Joined Occupation Force. Returned to Canada in Feb. 1946.

(Side 2) Describes regimental peacetime duties. Attended Staff College in 1953. As a staff officer he served in the Arctic and in Norway. In 1961 commanded a squadron of the L.S.H. in Egypt (United Nations forces). In 1967 he was a member of the United Nations Observer Group in Kashmir. Served at National Defence Headquarters in Ottawa. Retired in 1971. (02:00)

Col. Ernest M. Butcher

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000005
Butcher, Ernest M., Col., 1921-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Ernest M. Butcher; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
2 sound cassettes (ca. 190 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 190 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 20 (side 1) and 27 (side 2), 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Jan. 23, 1921 in Vancouver and educated at Magee High School (senior matriculation). Accepted for aircrew in 1941. Early training undertaken at the Manning Depot, Brandon, Man., and a number of basic aircrew instructional schools. (30:00) Upon being commissioned as a pilot officer he acquired specialized training at No. 1 General Reconnaissance School at Summerside, P.E.I. (45:00) Overseas in Sept. 1942 to Britain where he attended a Coastal Command operational training unit in Northern Ireland and was posted to No. 202 Squadron, Royal Air Force (R.A.F.), at Gibraltar. He flew in Catalinas on eighteen-hour patrols every four days, covering the Atlantic Ocean or the Mediterranean Sea. The long patrols were wearying, but living conditions at Gibraltar were good. Promoted to flying officer. After completing one "tour" (eight hundred hours or more of flying time) he returned to the United Kingdom in July 1944 as an instructor in navigation at a ferry training unit in Scotland where aircrew trained for long distance flying. Returned to Canada to the Air Operations Branch, Western Command. (45:00) Promoted to flight lieutenant. Released in Nov. 1945.
(Side 2) Joined the Interim Air Force in Feb. 1946, and was posted to No. 123 (Search and Rescue) Squadron, Sea Island, Vancouver. After courses in radio navigation and armament he became involved with equipment testing at Edmonton. Describes his work with the United States Air Force, including testing of the Loran low-frequency navigation system and work with the R.A.F. testing aircraft and parts in very low temperatures. (19:00) Gives an account of his involvement in the crash of an aircraft at Cambridge Bay in the Arctic in Aug. 1947. (30:00) Training and operational concerns with the Joint Staff in Washington, D.C. are examined.
(40:00) In late 1954 Butcher began his appointment at National Defence Headquarters, Postings and Careers. Describes selection process. (45:00) Posted himself to staff college, Toronto in 1958. (10:00) Gives an account of the course work and frequent practice in decision-making. Promoted to wing commander in 1959. (19:00) Appointed personnel officer for Air Transport Command, Trenton, Ont. Comments on Canadian Yukon and North Star aircraft. In 1963 promoted to group captain and station commander at Trenton. (31:00) In his view integration was a good idea, but unification of the forces was not. A subsequent posting to the Directorate of Service Conditions and Welfare at National Defence Headquarters was not a happy one. His posting to NATO Headquarters in Brussels under Rear-Admiral R.W. Murdoch was very much better. Discusses the contribution and waning influence of Canadians in NATO. (45:00) Returned from Europe to the Directorate of Military Plans, Ottawa, and was later appointed Director of CANEX. Retired in 1972.

Capt. Thomas William Lowell Butters

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000011
Butters, Thomas William Lowell, Capt., 1918-1990
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Thomas William Lowell Butters ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives. Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews. One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 19, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Jan. 1, 1918 in Epsom, Eng. (d. Feb. 22, 1990, North Vancouver, B.C.). Involved with the Canadian Officers Training Corps at the University of British Columbia in 1937. In Aug. 1939 joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment ("C" Company) (C.S.R.), Courtenay, B.C. as a private. Unit posted to Debert, N.S. 1940/1941. Poor living conditions caused considerable sickness at the camp. Went overseas as a lance-sergeant. Describes English quarters and training conditions. (10:00) Returned to Canada in 1942 to the Officer Training Unit at Gordon Head Camp, Victoria. Was retained at Gordon Head for an additional six months as a weapons instructor. Upon his return to England as a lieutenant, he was appointed a platoon commander in the C.S.R. Heavy training schedule with considerable use of bicycles. As D-Day approached units became very selective as to complement. A man could be removed, no reason, no questions. The team was everything. Seasickness was a problem on D-Day. Mentions "Element C", triangular mined beach obstructions. Reality struck when a friend in the next landing craft was killed as he stepped ashore. Troops were inclined to hang back a bit before crossing the beach, but they were well led by the company commander. (20:00) Butters and his platoon of "D" Company were at the "point" of the invasion, advancing eight miles inland. They were recalled three miles as they were too far ahead of the unit. Describes heavy fighting during the first few days; thirty casualties out of thirty-seven men. Occasionally had to use captured German weapons. Night patrols were very tense. Appointed second-in-command of "C"
Company. Undertook a personal reconnaissance into Caen. He and his platoon occupied an island in the Orne River at Caen. There he injured his knee; out of the line for the first time in fifty-three days. (33:00) Returned from hospital in time for the battle for Falaise, during which he suffered battle shock. Felt very badly about this. He was able to rejoin the C.S.R. in Sept. 1944 for the capture of Calais. In Oct. they attacked across the Leopold Canal. Butters in command of the company during this action. Wounded in the neck by a grenade fragment just after crossing. The wound was serious enough to cause him to be invalided out of the army.

Personal comments: much horror in war. Somewhat traumatic even to speak of it in 1987. Too many thoughts renewed. One has to try to be pragmatic or cannot survive. (43:00)

Lt. Ian Wallace Campbell
Royal Canadian Artillery
The Loyal Edmonton Regiment
2nd Canadian Special Infantry Battalion

Record ID: 00000023
+ Campbell, Ian Wallace, Lt. 1923-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ian Wallace Campbell ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 10, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 27, 1923 in Winnipeg. Joined the 112th Field Battery (militia) in Lethbridge in 1939. Trained at Shilo and Sarcee. Mobilized in 1941 as the 112th Light Anti-Aircraft (L.A.A.) Battery (6th L.A.A. Regiment). Regiment assembled at Petawawa in 1942. Sent to Prince Rupert and Annette Island to organize the anti-aircraft defences. Returned to Petawawa, then overseas in Oct. 1942 to Colchester, England. Describes training in England. Officer training course, food services, army routine. Boredom caused him to volunteer for the infantry. Sent to Italy about Oct. 1944. Joined the Loyal Edmonton Regiment just before Christmas. Impressions of Italy, troopship, etc. (25:00) In action at Granarolo in Jan. 1945. Confusion of battle; an exciting time. Comments on German troops, many of whom were quite young. Wounded by a grenade at the Senio River. (35:00) Describes aggressive Canadian action against the enemy. Evacuated to the hospital. (45:00) Lived in a Red Cross convalescent hotel for a time. Sat on a court martial board in Rome. Returned to England in May 1945. Joined the 2nd Canadian Special Infantry Battalion at Camberley. This unit was formed in response to the Aldershot riots which had been Canadian in origin. In the event, they were not required in their policing role. Uniform distinctions: green patch on the sleeve, maple leaf cap badge, and high-top boots as worn by the 3rd Canadian Division. Heavy regime of parade ground drill in the style of the Scots Guards. They were put to
use on ceremonial occasions. The riots had been largely caused by boredom and misunderstanding of the reasons for lack of transport to Canada. (12:00)

Capt. Felix Carriere

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000024
Carriere, Felix, Capt., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Felix Carriere; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 4, 1987, Victoria B.C.

Born on Dec. 6, 1920 in a farming community south of Winnipeg, Man. Joined Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry (P.P.C.L.I.) on Oct. 16, 1939. Had virtually no training in Canada, no uniforms until the end of Nov. Left Winnipeg on Dec. 17 for Greenoch, Scotland. Then to Aldershot where they lived in "spider" barracks. Remembers the food as being of good quality. Training began in earnest. Originally issued with Short Lee Enfield rifles and Lewis machine guns. Learned how to signal by heliograph, but with limited effect because of a general lack of sunshine! (10:00) Discusses problems encountered due to a French-speaking youth. Believes that a lack of ability to express himself cost him promotion. For two and one-half years he was paid $1.30 per day as a private, raised to $1.50 at the end of 1943. As a sergeant the rate was $2.20 per day. Comments on good officer/man relationship in the unit. Regular army officers very good. Issued weapons and clothing for the Norwegian Campaign in 1940. They moved to Scotland, but luckily did not embark. A personal disappointment at the time, but later he was relieved. Feels that the training in England was very valuable, even though it was sometimes difficult for the troops to understand what was going on. One learned to keep going and later, in action, even when afraid. Sicily invasion. Beaches were quiet, like an exciting exercise. Describes how to cope with a lack of sleep in action. Could go for days, if necessary, with only five or ten minutes sleep at a time. Leonforte was the first hard battle against Germans ("fine tough soldiers"). (40:00) Battle psychology was usually sorted out by the troops after two or three days of fighting which was then recognized by them as a very serious business. End of fighting in Sicily. (45:00) Invasion of Italy not difficult. Ortona very tough. Wounded at the Gothic Line and again in Oct. 1944 at the Naviglio Canal. Evacuated, the only one of his platoon not captured during a German counterattack, he returned to the unit two months later. Promoted to sergeant. Describes his involvement with stretcher-bearer duties. Officers and corporals who led in action had the highest likelihood of being casualties. Sergeants push from the rear! Returned to Canada on leave, discharged on June 4, 1945. Worked for the Canadian National Railway for a few months as a switchman. Eight months later he rejoined the Army after two weeks of hounding the authorities who were reluctant to accept him because of his early military record (a list of charges relating to his lack of military appearance). Finally accepted and posted
to 1st Battalion, P.P.C.L.I. as a private. The battalion was commanded by Lt.-Col. C.B. Ware, a
former commanding officer in Italy, and, in Carriere's opinion, a great officer, dedicated,
completely understanding, and completely fearless. (16:00) On parade for his first commanding
officer's inspection, Carriere was promoted to sergeant immediately upon being recognized by
Col. Ware. They took great pride in the P.P.C.L.I. becoming the first airborne regular infantry
battalion. Served as a warrant officer at the Parachute School in Rivers, Man. During the Korean
War was the battalion supply staff sergeant for a year. Promoted to warrant officer, class II, and
then warrant officer, class I, and served for fourteen years in these two ranks. Accepted a
commission as a captain, although little difference in pay. Retired in 1975 after thirty-five years
of service. Comments that he found out the lack of power enjoyed by a captain as compared to a
warrant officer, class I! Near the end of his career Carriere was the recruiting officer for
Vancouver Island. Enjoyed the Army and would not have changed one thing in his life. (42:00)

Col. Robert John Carson

The Corps of Royal Canadian Engineers

Record ID: 00000026
Carson, Robert John, Col., 1914-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Robert John Carson; interviewed by Chris Bell
6 sound cassettes (ca. 505 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 505 min.): 1 7/8, 3 3/4 ips (Reel 3, side
2 for 32 min., then 1 7/8 ips), 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 24 (tape 1, Side 1), June 1 (tape 1, Side 2), 8 (tape 2,
Side 1), 15 (tape 2, Side 2) and 22, 1984 (tape 3, Side 1, 105 min., and side 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Sept. 13, 1914 in India where his father, a graduate of Royal Military
College (R.M.C.), was serving with the Royal Engineers. Some aspects of daily life in India. His
father was a railway engineer, the general manager of a railway in the Punjab and a brigadier by
the beginning of World War II. Attended R.M.C. and, in a final year, graduated from Queens
University with an engineering degree. Describes academics at R.M.C. (30:00) Subjected to a
certain amount of hazing which, if done properly, encourages team solidarity, but must be
controlled. (45:00) In Aug. 1937 sent to Victoria where he was involved in maintenance and
construction of armouries and military camps. Posted to Prince Rupert in Jan. 1939 to supervise
the construction of coast defences at Yorke Island (in the south) and Annette Island. Describes
Prince Rupert, prewar. Married there in Nov. 1939. Describes the prewar "marriage roll": young
officers could not marry, since it would tend to draw their attention away from the welfare and
knowledge of their troops, and for lack of financial resources. Promoted to captain, sent to Ottawa
in May 1940 on coast defence planning. Obtained guns from United States armament depots.
Main enemy threat to Canada was thought to be German armed merchantmen. (31:00)
Comments on Prince Rupert. Directorate of Engineering Services in Ottawa. Discusses use of coast defence and railway guns. Involved in the development of "plastic armour", asphalt and rock-filled squares fastened to a framework. Problems siting coast defence guns, directors, etc. (30:00) Joined 4th Battalion, Royal Canadian Engineers in Sept. 1941 as a company commander (major) and went overseas. Later became part of the 2nd Canadian Corps Troops. Describes usual organization for engineers: one field company or squadron per brigade, under control of the Commander, Royal Engineers, at divisional headquarters. Mrs. Carson interjects with remarks on wartime Ottawa, service life, and the wives' part. (45:00) Mrs. Carson's impressions continue. (20:00) Col. Carson: tactical use of engineers; compares British, American, and German organization. Construction projects in England. (30:00) Discusses man management, tradesmen, etc. In July 1943 commanded 14th Field Company as 1st Canadian Corps Troops. (40:00) Involved with mine-lifting on English beaches. (50:00)

General military topics, veterans, pensions. Maj.-Gen. Pearkes well thought of. Military politics, postwar patronage very common in defence construction projects. Comments on the sons of Gen. A.G.L. McNaughton. Returns to 14th Field Company. Home Guard took their work very seriously. (30:00) Corps engineers played a very flexible role, often concentrating on bridging. Always necessary to schedule movement of heavy equipment. In battle, get it forward on time. Comments on Major-Generals Worthington, Kitching, Rockingham, and Lieutenant-Generals Simonds and Walsh. (45:00) Returned to Canada to the Staff College, Kingston. Overseas again in Nov. 1943. Staff Officer, 2nd Canadian Corps Headquarters. Planned exercises, obtained intelligence reports, equipment requirements. Personal experiences in Holland. (30:00) In May 1944 joined 1st Canadian Army Group Royal Engineers, a planning and command structure. (40:00)

Sent to Normandy about one month after D-Day. Mentions river crossings, assault boats, bridging equipment. Commanded 31st Field Company in Sept. 1944. Fifty British Pioneers attached to provide extra manpower. Mine lifting: small mines hard to detect: searching very hard on the nerves. Walcheren, Antwerp. (35:00) Vast quantities of equipment needed because of large numbers of rivers and canals. Nijmegen. Navy, Army and Air Force Institute anecdote. (45:00) Comments on the engineering qualifications of his officers and men. (10:00) Education level required to be somewhat higher than that of the infantry. Disciplinary role of the commanding officer. Work load increase as war progressed. During advance into Germany houses were blown up to provide rubble for road repairs. Reported gravel pits, lumberyards to higher authority. Several anecdotes re civilians encountered. Joined Occupation Force. (40:00)

Recounts experiences with "Zombies", by no means all bad. Finds fault with preference for civil service jobs given after the war to overseas veterans. Some unfairness evident. Army educational services very useful and important. Served as Deputy to Lt.-Col. R.E. Wilkins in Germany, where he stayed for about eleven months. Used prisoners of war as labour; occasionally a complete battalion of German engineers. Had a good relationship with them. Anecdotes. (25:00) Requisitioned all German municipal engineering equipment. Discusses peacetime engineering in the army and the qualities needed by an army engineer. (45:00) In June 1946 returned to Canada. Stationed in Regina as commanding officer of 12 Works Company. Comments on the Interim Force and priorities as to rank. Was responsible for maintenance of
bases and armouries throughout Saskatchewan with about 120 military and three hundred to four hundred civilian employees. (35:00) Peacetime soldiering. Engineer officers: few do "real" engineering. (45:00) Sometimes hard to employ all the good engineers who are available. Both peacetime projects and battlefield administration should include engineers in the early planning stages. (07:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Posted to Halifax as command engineer, responsible for the three maritime provinces. Later, a similar job in the Northwest Territories, British Columbia, and Alberta, stationed in Edmonton. Banff Cadet Camp. Considerable barrack construction in Edmonton, Calgary, and Chilliwack. Construction inspection. Before Edmonton served in Ottawa as a general staff officer, grade 1 in 1949-1950. Mentions Korea. (32:00) Experiences in Ottawa, problems in Petawawa (horses on payroll) and elsewhere. (20:00) Army accounting unwieldy and far more complicated than it needed to be. (34:00)

**Lt.-Col. John Clifford Cave**

**Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry**

**The Sherbrooke Fusiliers Regiment (27th Armoured Regiment)**

Record ID: 00000027
Cave, John Clifford, Lt.-Col., 1907-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Clifford Cave ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 14, 24, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Dec. 24, 1907 in Birkenhead, Cheshire, England. Parents emigrated to Ontario, then Winnipeg. As a boy, saw the rioting in the Winnipeg General Strike of 1919. After serving in a cadet corps and the militia for a number of years, Cave joined Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry (P.P.C.L.I.) in Jan. 1925. Explains recruit standards of that time. Modest provision of equipment, uniforms, and food were the norm. Marriage for a soldier was difficult, since the payment of the marriage allowance was restricted to about ten percent of the nominal roll of the battalion. The alternative was a fifteen dollar per month ration allowance. Gives the organization of the P.P.C.L.I. in the 1920's. Details of training on the Vickers machine-gun. (20:00) Gun drill explained. Battalion still provided with some horse-drawn equipment. In 1938 posted as a sergeant-instructor to the First Canadian Army Tank School in London, Ont. Later moved to Camp Borden. Mentions original P.P.C.L.I. officers, great "family" orientation. Shorty Colquhoun, etc. The price of food, social life, much sports and physical training. (45:00) Promotion depended upon educational attainment which was provided to interested troops. Extra pay was available to those who improved themselves. Peacetime discipline was stern; single men
coped best. By 1939 somewhat better equipment was becoming available. Company sergeant-major instructor by now. In 1940 commissioned into the P.P.C.L.I. (10:00) Comments on various armoured vehicles, American Renaults, early Rams. Promoted to major in 1941. (30:00) Trained in tanks at Fort Knox in the United States, after travelling there as civilians. Wanting to go overseas, he eventually obtained a posting to the Sherbrooke Fusiliers Regiment (S.F.R.). The account jumps ahead to overseas training, battle casualty in France, Armoured School. (45:00) Discusses conscription. (48:00)

(Side 2) Returns to thoughts on training in Canada. French Canadian troops could be better than average if handled properly. Recruiting difficulties in Quebec. In the S.F.R. the working language was English. French Canadians gradually reduced to about forty percent of strength. Some problems of education: Quebec schools could be deficient in mathematics and science. Most effective tank operators were prairie farmers and northern miners. As acting commanding officer of the regiment, had some administrative problems. Intensive training required, as they were less well trained than the other regiments in their brigade. Weeded out some two hundred men. (12:00) Took the regiment overseas, then posted to a senior officers school. Returned to the S.F.R. as second-in-command. Comments on pre-invasion duties. (25:00) D-Day assault and preparations. Fighting in Normandy. Carpiquet. Describes loading tanks on landing craft, tanks on June 5, 1944. (45:00) D-Day casualties not as high as expected. Effectiveness of tanks and guns. Explains the phrase "infantry cum tanks". Originally applied to infantry tanks such as the Churchill which were designed to support infantry attacks. Heavy fighting: only nineteen tanks operational in the regiment on the night of D+1. Many quickly repaired or replaced. (20:00) Describes his tank being hit by artillery. After thirteen days, exhausted by lack of sleep and strain, he was evacuated to hospital in England. Staff College in the spring of 1945. Comments on Maj.-Gen. Worthington. Returned to Canada. General staff officer, grade 2 in Regina, later as a lieutenant-colonel was general staff officer, grade 1 in Ottawa. Last posting in Victoria. Retired. (43:00)

Rear-Admiral John A. Charles, C.M.M.

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000206
Charles, John A., R.-Adm., C.M.M., 1919-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by John A Charles ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
11 sound cassettes (ca. 960 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Six original sound tape reels (ca. 960 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 2, 19, 26, July 3, 17, Aug. 7, 14, 21, 27, and Sept. 4, 1980, Victoria, B.C.
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born in 1919 in Saskatchewan. First applied to the Royal Military College of Canada (R.M.C.) in 1934, but was deemed to be too young. Completed a year at Notre Dame University (Sask.) and was enrolled at R.M.C. in 1935. Discusses the drastic change of routine required of recruits at R.M.C. Elected to take summer training (ashore) with the Navy at Halifax. Toward the end of the second year at R.M.C. he made the decision to make the Royal Canadian Navy his career. As one of three military college cadets in a group of ten was sent to England for training. Uniformed at Gieves, the naval tailors, and reported to H.M.S. Erebus (monitor) at Portsmouth. Instructed in naval drill, customs, seamanship, and after three months joined the training cruiser, H.M.S. Vindictive in which the cadets acted as crew. Three cruises per year: winter, West Indies; summer, the Baltic; fall, the Mediterranean. Much boat work and a certain amount of pleasant social life. Promoted to midshipman and appointed to H.M.S. Royal Sovereign (battleship) where he was given command of a picket boat and acted as captain of a fifteen-inch gun turret. After a few months joined H.M.S. Berwick (cruiser). "Showed the flag" in the West Indies; World's Fair, 1939 in New York, then the Maritime Provinces. Considerable practice for war that they felt was coming and at Bar Harbor, Maine on Sept. 1, 1939 were officially ordered to prepare for war. Attempted to intercept the German liner, Bremen off New York and conducted searches for other enemy ships. On patrol near Iceland intercepted two German ships, captured crews, ships sunk. H.M.S. Berwick was cold and uncomfortable since she had been built for tropical service. In 1940 the ship participated in the Norwegian campaign. Air attack showed the inadequacies of their anti-aircraft protection, partially due to insufficient ammunition capacity. At the time felt that British efforts in Norway were not very effective. Promoted to acting sub-lieutenant, courses at Portsmouth. (48:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Gunnery, navigation and signals taught to a class of sixty. Particular emphasis on anti-aircraft gunnery control. Still required to dress for dinner in the wardroom. As part of the anti invasion preparations was sent with a party of fifty men to mount old six-inch naval guns at several waterfront locations in southern England. Poured concrete, requisitioned civilian houses. Prepared twenty two gun sites. Participated at 4:00 A.M. in the disarming of French naval vessels in British ports. Most French seamen elected to return to France. Completed the course in Sept. 1940 and returned to Canada. (45:00) Appointed to H.M.C.S. Restigouche (destroyer). Describes officers, watchkeeping, communications department. Convoy duty. Explains codes and ciphers and how used. Clyde escort force, Jan. 1941. Lieutenant, March 1941. Operations south of Iceland. Met H.M.S. Prince of Wales (battleship). Carried an American film crew to the meeting of Churchill and Roosevelt at Placentia Bay, Nfld. Appointed first lieutenant at the signal school at Saint-Hyacinthe, Que. (50:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Relations with the civilian population at Saint-Hyacinthe. Long signals course in England at H.M.S. Mercury, the Royal Navy (R.N.) signal school. Upon completion was appointed to H.M.S. Laforey (destroyer) in the Mediterranean, operating from Bone, Algeria. (45:00) They were required to interrupt German seaborne supplies to North Africa. Sank German E-boat. Often under air attack. Shortage of spare parts resulted in much scavenging of damaged ships. First engagement in Jan. 1943. Partially as protection against air attack, many operations carried out in early morning darkness, usually from 2:00 A.M. Discusses Canadians serving in that theatre. Canadian corvettes did so for a time, but lacked adequate anti-aircraft protection. Air Force had considerable problem in supplying sufficient air cover. For easier recognition by friendly aircraft the upper surface of the ship was eventually painted with red lead. Experiences
off Tunis. Capture of Pantelleria. Preparations for the invasion of Sicily, 1943. Landing craft, approaches, artillery support of the landing. Invasion of Italy, sinking of an Italian submarine, Salerno where the ship was hit by enemy artillery. First encounter with German wireless controlled glider bombs. Repairs at Malta. Bombed, again returned to Malta. Anecdotes, Christmas, 1943. Sardinia, Corsica. Supported Anzio landing which went well despite several ships being sunk. Remarks on the crew of the Laforey. Sent back to Canada and en route learned that the Laforey had been sunk with heavy loss of life. Appointed to the signal school at Saint-Hyacinthe as an instructor. (48:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) In Apr. 1944 was second-in-command of the wireless section of the school. Describes the various branches of the school: wireless, visual, radar, merchant navy signals, technical training. Appointed to command the wireless section. Began to have problems with the French-speaking population, but through co-operation with the civilian authorities an ugly situation was averted. Attended the United States Navy signal school at Annapolis. Began to introduce American signal procedures to Canadians in preparation for the war in the Pacific. Objected to the requirement that Canadian servicemen had to volunteer specifically for the Pacific theatre. Married in March 1945. At the end of the war was promoted to lieutenant-commander and appointed signal officer to the flag officer, Pacific Coast. By the summer of 1946 there were few ships in commission. Anecdotes of Rear-Admiral Victor Brodeur whom he admired. Common Canadian/British/American signal doctrine began to emerge. Posted to Ottawa, then to the operational research branch of the U.S. Navy. In Jan. 1947 appointed to the Joint Staff in Washington, D.C. where standardization of equipment and methods were under study. Appointed to command H.M.C.S. Crescent (destroyer), excellent crew, cruise to the Caribbean for exercises. (45:00) Uncrowded Hawaii in 1948. For the first time Canadians placed a wreath at the monument to Capt. Cook. Posted to Ottawa, then the R.N. staff course at Greenwich (1949). Living conditions for civilians not very attractive. Signal Division at the Admiralty, promoted to commander, then to the Joint Services Staff College. Appointed staff officer to R.-Adm. E.R. (Rollo) Mainguy aboard H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier). Cruise to Europe, a long social event. Commands communication school. Director of Naval Communications in Ottawa, 1952-1953, an interesting period. New ships and equipment. Admired Brooke Claxton, the Minister. First exposure to the political process. (45:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Appointed to command H.M.C.S. Haida (destroyer) and to sail for Korea as senior officer, destroyers (1953). Carried a number of specialist officers and extra crew. Ship was beginning to show her age and carried a mixture of British, Canadian, and American equipment which was later to cause problems. Worked-up ship with heavy emphasis on gunnery and communications. Voyage from Halifax, Christmas in Mexico, training at Pearl Harbor. Took southerly course across the Pacific due to the need to refuel frequently. Korean armistice in effect, but required to undertake seventeen-day patrols off the Korean coast. Difficulty in deciding the loyalties of the Korean coastal traffic. Based in Sasebo, Japan the Canadian ships had to be maintained in operational readiness. In a surprisingly simple, effective, and economical system the government directly provided ships' captains with money to pay for repairs and necessities. Very inexpensive refits were available at the efficient Japanese shipyards. High morale in the ship's company. Japanese conditions and culture. Hong Kong, 1954. Cleaned and painted ship with a Hong Kong female "junk" crew who insisted that they take the destroyer's garbage in payment! Canada Day in Tokyo. When relieved, the ship carried on around the world
to Halifax, but Charles flew home to take command of Royal Roads Military College (R.R.M.C.). Far East comments, including carrying, under contract, of five Chinese laundrymen who were very useful and convenient. (45:00) (Reel 4, Side 1) Appointed to Royal Roads for three years. Impressions, staff, civilian academics (among whom he felt that bickering was surprisingly commonplace!) Responsible to the Personnel Directorate in Ottawa. Royal Roads cadets entered with a nominal senior matriculation, but in reality with a large mix of qualifications -- and from all walks of social life. Of new cadets about eighty percent had not made up their minds about a career, about five percent attended exclusively for a degree, and fifteen percent had decided to join one of the services. Some cadets left for medical reasons, some were homesick, and others lacked officer- like qualities or suitable academic results. Found it very difficult to let go a cadet who wanted to stay. Sports activities applied to all. Modest military instruction with the exception of parade ground drill. Military training took place for two months in the summer. Commandant's parade on Sunday followed by compulsory church parade. As Commandant, invited six or eight cadets to dinner every week with an equal number of young ladies from Victoria. Entertained the staff. Many social engagements in Victoria. This left few free nights for Capt. and Mrs. Charles. Some details of the military college system and advisory board. Naval reserve cadets attended the college in the summer. At that time the services experienced a problem in retaining sufficient officers and consideration had to be given to lowering academic requirements. Spent considerable time on public relations. Red tunics reintroduced in 1956, regulations somewhat relaxed. Some effort was made to introduce cadets into the social graces. The demise of the calling card. Appointed Director of Plans and Naval Operations. Returning to Royal Roads, he offers the opinion that civilian acceptance of cadets somewhat less as a tri-service college than it had been as a naval college. (47:00)

(Reel 4, Side 2) In Ottawa, Aug. 1957, concerned with long-range planning as well as day-to-day operations, preparation of naval estimates. These were often very difficult: obvious when too much was being spent on services and administration rather than hardware. Ship requirements were set at two new ones per year which was deemed necessary for Canada's NATO commitment. The Department of External Affairs had a real influence on these deliberations. Naval air and the Air Force required close co-operation, with the result that airmen became deputy commanders on both coasts. Had considerable difficulty manning our forty-two-ship fleet. Became necessary to replace the frigates and thus began the planning for the new general purpose frigates designed to carry missiles. A change in the office of Chief of Naval Staff held up the program and a change in government caused cancellation. Bought British O class submarines. Comments on the beginning of the Canadian Coast Guard. (45:00) This Department of Transport branch had been a patronage organization and required some changes. Under early integration the medical and chaplain services were brought under a single directorate. Refers to Pearkes, Harkness, and Lambert as ministers of national defence. Further introduction to politics. Comments on V.-Adm. Raynor as Chief of Naval Staff. Appointed to command Second Escort Squadron of seven ships and also Captain of H.M.C.S. Assiniboine II (destroyer escort). For the first time directed a ship from an operations room. Joined the Americans in a hunter/killer group consisting of an aircraft carrier and eight destroyers. Carried Lt.-Gov. G.R. Pearkes on a tour of remote Indian villages, some quite impressive. (45:00)
(Reel 5, Side 1) Commodore, Naden Barracks. Personnel, administration, discipline and training of the Esquimalt Port Division (about 5800 men). Attrition was a problem and reengagements low in number. Extended seetime caused personal difficulties, especially in the engineer trades. Value of sail training. Maritime Museum moved to Bastion Square, Victoria. Attended the National Defence College (N.D.C.); integration and unification a great puzzle to many students. Trip to Africa very educational, then on to Europe. Feels that the N.D.C. is a valuable institution offering complete freedom of opinion to both staff and students. Posted to Ottawa as Assistant Chief of Air and Naval Warfare. After about one month in this new position integration was proclaimed in naval headquarters and thus became Director-General of Force Development where, with the staff, planned for the integrated forces and for new equipment. Refits of ships, new helicopters, aircraft, and tanks were presented to the Minister and to the parliamentary defence committee. Certain officers ordered to take early retirement. Much secrecy about unification. NATO analysis group examined Canada's contribution. NORAD commitment bothered the Air Force: Bomarc and fighter aircraft (CF-5), the latter as a tactical ground support aircraft did not fulfill any already in-place Air Force roles. (45:00)

(Reel 5, Side 2) Difficult to obtain approval for long-term programs. The government thought in terms of a year or two. A problem in obtaining equipment for all roles: NATO, NORAD, and peacekeeping. Discusses unification, parliamentary defence committee. When a gloomy picture was to be presented by Rear-Admiral W.M. Landymore he was ordered by the Minister to present a more attractive picture of the state of the Navy. Political and public support for the armed forces was not great, thus senior officers could be removed fairly easily. Rear-Admiral J.C. O'Brien was offered the Atlantic Command and Charles, the Pacific. Remembers that there were fears that the Navy might disappear and the influence of Navy supporters was small. Believes that the Minister, Paul Hellyer sincerely felt that the support services required reorganization. Opposition to his ideas may have hardened the Minister's stance to a point of no return. Economies could have been achieved solely with integration. Explains the position of the Commander, British Columbia area. Training relied heavily on American co-operation. In 1967, Expo year, very many V.I.P. visitors. Had to hire Cadillacs from funeral homes to provide adequate transportation. First visit to Canada by a Japanese training squadron. Green uniforms brought out in 1968 on a trial basis: they were not very practical as they were hot to wear and wrinkled badly. The year 1969 was a bad one: Bonaventure scandal, reduction of forces personnel, constant economies. (45:00)

(Reel 6, Side 1) Cancelled the naval rum ration, bars established for petty officers and beer ration provided for the men. Heavy social schedule: dinner parties twice a week, all officers and wives were entertained. Did not receive an entertainment allowance except for foreign visitors. Appointed Deputy Chief of Plans in Ottawa which required a certain liaison with the Department of External Affairs. Law of the Sea Conference. Armed forces brought into fisheries and maritime surveillance which required extra funding. Reduction of NATO commitment probably politically acceptable, but militarily, not so. Much discussion with NATO partners regarding standardization. Nuclear weapons always contentious; Canadian defence policy quite adequate, but financially always short of requirements. The Treasury Board felt that the defence of Canada was the first priority and, as a result, there was theoretically insufficient funding for peacekeeping. Difficult to understand the defence role, blown by the winds of political change, day-to-day. The "FLQ" (Front de Liberation du Quebec) crisis showed the value of the armed
forces. The Canadian hydrofoil Bras d'Or. The concept of numbers of small ships was a good one, but the weapons and detection system that would fit into a small ship posed a major problem. Final product was excellent, but helicopters could perform the same task as long as a platform was provided for them. Politics again dictated increased responsibilities for the armed forces, but with reduced financing. Travelled to Sweden, Australia, and the United States to examine new equipment. Appointed Chief of Maritime Operations. Francophone proportion of the Canadian armed forces set at twenty-eight percent. This caused problems with promotion of senior officers. Many felt that the merit system was being set aside for political reasons. Some francophone officers agreed that this was a danger. Despite English being the operational language, the requirement for French language translation grew. Instruction in both languages was a troublesome fact. Mentions Vietnam truce observers. Retired Sept. 1973. (40:00)

Cdr. Russell Frederick Chat, O.M.M.
Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000162
Chat, Russell Frederick, Cdr., O.M.M., 1924-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Russell Frederick Chat ; interviewed by James Murphy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 135 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 27, July 5 and 11, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on June 30, 1924 in Maple Bay, Vancouver Island. Returned to England in 1935 and attempted to return to Canada in 1940, travelling in the City of Benares which was torpedoed with heavy loss of life. At the age of seventeen and one-half he joined the Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve as an ordinary seaman. After nine months selected for officer training, H.M.S. King Alfred. Greenwich Naval College for three weeks instruction in Royal Navy officer department. First served in the sloop H.M.S. Stork in the Atlantic, south of England. In mid-April 1944 posted to the assault landing ship, H.M.S. Llandovery Castle. Continuous practice with landing craft, assault (L.C.A.) and the troops which would use them. (30:00) Navigator and boats officer for a flotilla of eighteen craft. Landed the Royal Winnipeg Rifles at Courseulles-sur-Mer on D-Day. Describes beaches and seaward situation. Chat's boat hit by a small-calibre shell causing it to sink some thirty yards off the beach. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returns to a discussion of his appointment as the only naval officer in a Royal Marine L.C.A. flotilla. Much time spent in boat-handling and the difficult task of recovering the L.C.A.'s. During and after the D-Day assault the flotilla was reduced from eighteen boats to four. Discusses the twenty-four-hour postponement of D-Day. Comments on the charts issued to
navigators. After his L.C.A. sank he was recovered from the beach and taken to his ship before returning to England for an additional cargo of troops and replacement L.C.A.'s. (30:00) The landing. Storm damage to beach facilities. General comments on the invasion, satisfaction with his own role; good training paid off. (47:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) In July 1944 the flotilla was disbanded and he was posted to one of four North Sea trawlers on anti-submarine patrol off Horta in the Azores. For months American ships were off-loading construction materials there. The crew were largely ex-fishermen; as navigator he was one of four officers. The trawlers spent twenty-one days on a very constricted patrol followed by one week in harbour; an extremely boring duty. In Dec. 1944, after escorting a merchant ship to Plymouth, he was able to arrange an appointment to H.M.S. Riou, a modern diesel-electric frigate. Together with six motor torpedo boats they carried out offensive patrols off the coast of Belgium and Holland, attempting to bring German E-boats to battle. Heavy schedule, watch on watch for five days, then five days in Harwich. Describes a night action. First experience where the Captain fought his vessel from an operations room. First ship into Hamburg two days after the war ended. Inspected by Field Marshal Montgomery. Later escorted captured submarines to Loch Ewe, Scotland. Able to arrange transfer to the Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve in Sept. 1945. Joined H.M.C.S. Crusader, building on the Clyde. To Esquimalt in early 1946. Returns to a description of the remains of Hamburg, other German ports, effect of the bombing campaign, etc. (45:00)

Col. Beverley Evans Christmas

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000028
Christmas, Beverley Evans, Col., 1919-1988
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Beverley Evans Christmas ; interviewed by Cameron Falconer
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 12, 1983, [Victoria B.C.]

Born in 1919 in St. Hilaire, Que. (d. May 17, 1988). In answer to a newspaper advertisement in 1937, Christmas applied to join the Royal Air Force (R.A.F.) as a pilot. Appointed a pilot officer (provisional) in 1938, he reported to Royal Canadian Air Force (R.C.A.F.) Trenton where he was to undergo pilot training for the R.A.F. Transferred to Camp Borden, he received his wings in Sept. 1939. He was appointed to the R.C.A.F. and joined No. 1 Squadron. They went overseas to Britain in 1940. He flew Hurricanes and later, with No. 403 Squadron, Spitfires. Sent to the Middle East, in the summer of 1941, to a South African squadron. In England, during the Battle of Britain, the days alternated between long periods of boredom on the ground and periods of intense excitement during dog-fights in the air. Comments that fire was a great danger in
Hurricanes, since the gas tank was mounted in front of the pilot and was easily punctured by enemy machine-gun fire. Discusses flying tactics and German bombing efforts (15:00), and some qualities of the Hurricane fighter. Living conditions at Northolt air station were very satisfactory. (25:00) Comments on daily routine. Christmas was later stationed in coastal British Columbia and, before that, in South Africa for a very short time. General remarks on air fighting and personnel in No. 1 Squadron in England. Mentions George Burling. (45:00) In North Africa Christmas was shot down in the desert by a German while he was protecting two Hurricane photo-reconnaissance aircraft. He was fortunate to be picked up by the British. He mentions that Italian pilots were good, but were inclined not to press home their attacks. Living conditions were uncomfortable; water shortages, sand everywhere, even inside aircraft engines, and visibility often very bad due to blowing sand. (20:00) Anecdotes about the desert and Cairo. After leave in South Africa he returned to Canada in the Aquitania which was carrying German prisoners of war to Boston, Mass. In command of a fighter squadron at Victoria, B.C. Staff College. Overseas again as a staff officer in Belgium and Germany at the end of the war. (35:00) Staff training officer in Canada (several postings). Bagotville, Que., as commanding officer. NATO Defence College. Station commanding officer in Germany. Winnipeg and elsewhere. Appointment as a staff officer at Supreme Headquarters Allied Powers Europe. Staff officer in Victoria, B.C. 1971-1972. Retired.

Captain Bernard Clarke

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000029
Clarke, Bernard, Capt., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Bernard Clarke ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 18, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 4, 1915 in Victoria, B.C. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment brass band in 1930. As a private went "active" with the unit in 1939. Lived for three or four months in the Bay Street Armouries, then moved to the former Relief Camp at Otter Point. Training was elementary, discipline tough. The unit then moved to the unfinished camp at Debert, N.S. Transport Sgt. Clarke stopped off at the General Motors plant in Oshawa, Ont. to pick up the unit's vehicles. While at Debert an attempt was made to train the unit as ski troops, but wiser heads prevailed. After a rough crossing to Britain, they arrived at Aldershot. Clarke explains living conditions, training, equipment, exercise Pirate, etc. Exercises were absolutely essential to the success of D-Day. Selected for officers' training. Returned to Gordon Head Camp in Victoria. As an experienced soldier he found the course fairly easy and a bit out-of-date. While there he helped to bring the training somewhat closer to overseas standards. (16:00) Returned to Britain in the fall of 1943. D-Day, landed in Normandy with the regiment. (25:00) Discusses some
photographs with the interviewer. (35:00) Some discussion of battle and pre-battle experiences. In July wounded in the shoulder and arm. Repatriated to Canada. Nearly six months in Shaughnessy Hospital, Vancouver. Recounts his return to Canada with many German prisoners of war in the Queen Elizabeth. (47:00)

Pte. Frederick Claydon, M.M.

43rd Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

(The Cameron Highlanders of Ottawa)

Record ID: 00000163
Claydon, Frederick, Pte., M.M., 1898-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Frederick Claydon ; interviewed by Chris Bell
6 sound cassettes (ca. 405 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 405 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 23, Aug. 1, 5 and 7, 1982, Sidney, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Oct. 29, 1898 in London, England (d. 198-). At the age of three or four years he emigrated to Canada with his older brother to live with his grandparents on a farm near Elkhorn, Man. Speaks of prairie conditions, lack of formal education. Personal views of military. As a teenager joined the 12th Manitoba Dragoons (miltia) at Virden, Man. Opinion of the Ross rifle under service conditions. Manitoba Dragoons' equipment. (45:00) Attempted to join the army in 1914, but found to be too young, however in 1915 was able to join the 79th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (C.E.F). in Brandon, Man. (20:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) In Jan. 1916 he was in England for only four days before proceeding to France as a reinforcement for the 43rd Battalion, C.E.F. Anecdotes. Trench warfare experiences. Ypres, Somme. Discusses the first model tanks, weapons, crew, protected only against small arms fire. (45:00) Wounded on the Somme. Battle of Courcelette, 1916, heavy casualties. Experiences with Australians. (30:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) After the Somme and the fight for Regina Trench the battalion was reduced to sixty-three men. Comments on trench life, Vimy Ridge, etc. Rations somewhat short except for cheese! Became one of the company scouts. (30:00) Explains the making of their own "jam tin" grenades before the advent of the Mills bomb. Attitude of non-commissioned officers in and out of the trenches. Winter warfare a cold and muddy existence. (45:00) Additional trench anecdotes. (20:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Participated in a trench raid five days before the battle for Vimy Ridge. The 43rd Battalion was in reserve during the battle itself, moving forward later in the morning to relieve a forward battalion. Scouted for a fighting patrol. Later on involved in the periphery of the battle
for Hill 70. In Oct. 1917 he was granted leave and visited his parents in London. (45:00) Good times in London. Returned to the battalion at Passchendaele just in time to "go over the top" the next morning. Searched for a lost platoon. Conditions of extreme desolation, mud, etc., no trenches, only shell holes, nothing but the slowest movement possible. Comments on the award of the Victoria Cross to Lt. R. Shankland. (28:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Returns to an account of Passchendaele. German pillboxes on the Bellevue spur. Heavy casualties. (25:00) (With the aid of a map, Claydon describes his movements.) Withdrawn from the line for a short time to receive reinforcements, they were soon back. (45:00) Sixty years later Claydon was able to point out to the War Graves Commission the place where a member of the 43rd Battalion was buried in 1917. Explains that he won the Military Medal at Vimy Ridge while acting as company scout. In the Lens area for Christmas, 1917. Draws attention to the long scar on his arm caused by a bayonet wound.

(Reel 3, Side 2) (28:00) Amiens area. Slated for court martial for being in the company of a drunken friend who assaulted the commanding officer of the battalion. Friend killed shortly thereafter, commanding officer wounded, so the matter was dropped. Considered a "lucky" leader by patrol members. Stumbled into a German dugout where he suffered the bayonet wound in the arm, but was able to capture a number of the enemy. Seriously wounded in the knee shortly thereafter. He was eventually picked up; dressing station, Australian field hospital where his leg was amputated, hospital ship, months in hospital in England. Sailed for Canada in July 1919. Toronto hospital where he was fitted with an artificial leg. (45:00) Discharged from hospital and the army in Dec. 1919. Received a disability pension of thirty dollars per month. (48:00)

Pte. Alfred Joseph Cleton

7th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Record ID: 00000030
Cleton, Alfred Joseph, Pte., 1892-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Alfred Joseph Cleton ; interviewed by James L. Cross
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 11, 1981 (side 1), Victoria, B.C.

Born on Aug. 17, 1892. Cleton left school at age fourteen, but after working in a men's clothing store and for a railway, returned to school for a year before emigrating to Canada in 1913. He joined his father in Rossland, B.C. Obtained a job with the Canadian Pacific Railway (C.P.R.) at a wage of sixty dollars per month, twelve hours a day, 365 days per year. In Aug. 1914 he joined the army and, with 160 other men from the West Kootenays, moved to Valcartier Camp where
he later joined the 12th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (C.E.F.). Overseas to Salisbury Plain where he eventually became a member of the 7th Battalion, C.E.F. In 1915 landed at Saint-Nazaire, France. Describes soldier's kit, including the infamous Ross rifle. Near Ypres on Apr. 22, 1915 Cleeton saw the greenish-yellow cloud of the first chlorine gas attack approaching, but was able to take shelter. To hold the line the Canadians dug shallow trenches so that the heavier-than-air chlorine gas would not affect their respiratory tract. During a German attack two days later he was wounded in the leg and captured by the Germans. (20:00) He lay in a large wooden shed with minimal medical attention for two or three days, and with only one blanket over him. Later at a German hospital he was completely and painfully immersed in a very hot bath to soak off his encrusted bandage and to render him somewhat cleaner. Sent to the prison camp at Sennelager in Westphalia. Describes hard conditions at the camp. Prisoners banded together in small groups called "schools". Rations consisted of a small piece of black bread for breakfast, hot soup for lunch, and a piece of sausage and a piece of black bread in the evening. Comments on friends made in the camp. (30:00) In Dec. 1915 he believed that he was to be sent to work on a farm (a desirable situation), but after two days travel in a freight car, he arrived at Hoerde near Dortmund where he and the others were expected to work in a German munitions factory. (45:00) As such work was contrary to international law, the prisoners of war refused to work and were beaten daily (kicked, hit with rifle butts, etc.) The group was made to stand at attention from 5:00 a.m. until 10:00 p.m., by which time they had all collapsed. Returned to Sennelager after this ordeal. Spent the next five months in the prison hospital without any medication. Finally food parcels began arriving from Canada and he was able to keep a record of all he received. Prisoners were allowed to write one letter home per month and to send two printed postcards. (10:00) In the camp they attempted to keep up their morale through songs, poems, sketches, a newsletter, etc. A neutral Medical Commission inspected the camp in 1916. Cleeton believes that, because of this, in Aug. 1918 he was among a group of wounded and sick prisoners repatriated to England. Obtained sixty days leave after a short stay in hospital (weighed only eighty-nine pounds). He married his fiance in Oct. 1918. Returned to Canada in a hospital ship in Dec. Spent several months in Shaughnessy Hospital in Vancouver. Discharged in June 1919. Rejoined the C.P.R. He notes that he was the subject of a story in the Vancouver Sun newspaper during the last half of June 1919. (26:00)

Capt. C. Harold Clerkson, M.C.

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000031
Clerkson, C. Harold, Capt., M.C., 1921-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by C. Harold Clerkson ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 19, 1980, Victoria, B.C.
Born in 1921 in Broadview, Sask. Joined a militia unit as a young man; summer training at Camp Shilo. Did not experience any shortage of World War I equipment and other supplies. Joined the Canadian Officers Training Corps at the University of Saskatchewan. At the end of his second year (1941) he was accepted into the active force. Commissioned in June 1941. Rejoined his former militia field battery (110th) at Broadview, now mobilized. Debert, N.S. in Aug. 1942 where the 15th Field Regiment was formed. Later in 1942 they went overseas as part of the 4th Canadian Armoured Division, taking their new Canadian made twenty-five-pounder guns with them. Aldershot, heavy training schedule. He felt that British rations were good, but better when supplemented by Canadian items, especially on festive occasions. The only heavy equipment required to be issued to the regiment in England were converted Ram tanks for use as armoured observation posts ("O-Pips"). Discusses artillery tactics, emphasizes mobility. (20:00) Comments on lack of 4th Division exercises, although he feels that this had a minimal effect on the artillery. Explains duties of the Gun Position Officer, the Troop Commander, and Forward Observation Officer. (30:00) Details of his landing in Normandy in July. O-Pips explained. Appointed troop commander, engaged as forward observation officer. Experiences during forward movements by infantry and armour. Saw the accidental bombing of our own troops by the Air Force. Describes units supported by the 15th Field Regt. (45:00) Comments on the use of smoke shells, both as cover and for locating positions. During the attack on Falaise he and his wireless operator were in support of the Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders of Canada (in a jeep or on foot) and the armour (in a Ram O-Pip). Considered the twenty-five-pounder gun a very efficient weapon. (10:00) Falaise was an astonishing fight. Clerkson established his observation post on a hill overlooking the German retreat where he was under heavy attack for two days. The targets before him represented an artilleryman's dream, but he has some reservations about the terrible waste that was the result of his directed shellfire. Fought day and night. Supported Maj. Currie (South Alberta Regiment) in the action in which Currie won the Victoria Cross. (20:00) Some weeks later, near the Leopold Canal while on reconnaissance, his jeep was destroyed and he was badly wounded by a German 88-mm. shell. (30:00) Underwent quick medical evacuation through the system to a large hospital in Dieppe. Canadian medical services were, in his opinion, first class. Evacuated via hospital ship to England at the end of Sept. Shrapnel in the lungs prevented final operations until Jan. 1945 at the Canadian Hospital at Horley, England. Nearly recovered, he spent a week convalescing at Vincent Massey's home in Derbyshire which accommodated about twenty-five officers at a time. Returned to his regiment in June 1945. Enjoyed Holland after the war and returned to England in Jan. 1946. Gives some details of the disbanding of the regiment. Returned to Vancouver. Discharged. (40:00)

Lt.-Col. Clifford David Clive

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000032
Clive, Clifford David, Lt.-Col., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Clifford David Clive ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) ; 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 17, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 14, 1915 in Neepawa, Man. Worked for a radio manufacturer before the war and in 1939 joined the army as a signalman. Gives his reactions to initial conditions of Army life. Had his first experience with a security clearance, due to the nature of his work. Describes pre-war uniforms and equipment. Arrived overseas after a rough passage in the Aquitania. Comments on his early days in England and the threat of a German invasion. Slated for the abortive invasion of Norway. (10:00) Wireless training at Aldershot; minimum of fifteen words per minute on the Morse key were required. Studied captured German wireless equipment which, in the early days of war, was superior to ours. In Jan. 1941, as a sergeant, was involved in innovative ground-to-air wireless training with the Royal Canadian Air Force. Selected for officer training in Oct. 1941. Sent to a British signals officer cadet training unit and graduated as a lieutenant. Married; describes married life overseas. (25:00) D-Day, feelings of great relief that they were at last going to war. After the capture of Cherbourg he was sent to help the Americans put the French telephone system back in operation. Recalls German sympathizers in Ghent, Belgium when the advance reached that city. (35:00) Describes conditions during the Battle of the Bulge. In Apr. 1945 he escorted the Czech Armoured Brigade to Klatovy in Czechoslovakia. Met members of the Russian Army there. Many groups of Germans wished to surrender to them, including an armoured regiment, as well as a few who had to be persuaded! (45:00) Arrived back in Canada in July 1945. Civilian life seemed quiet and adjustment was difficult. In 1949 he joined the Scots Fusiliers of Canada, a militia infantry unit converted to artillery. Attended the militia command and staff course. Promoted to lieutenant-colonel. Retired in 1957. (50:00)

Warrant Officer (W.O. I) Lestock Peter Cockburn

Royal Canadian Horse Artillery

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000033
Cockburn, Lestock Peter, W.O. I, 1917-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Lestock Peter Cockburn ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.) ; 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 30 (side 1) and June 6 (side 2), 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Aug. 22, 1917 in Victoria, B.C. Joined the Army as a boy soldier, age seventeen, on Apr. 1, 1935 (pay was sixty cents per day). As the only boy soldier at Work Point
Barracks he spent the first few months as a messman in the kitchen, eventually taking basic training in a recruit class of half a dozen. In 1937 he was sent to Macaulay Point for care and maintenance duties with two others, under the command of a bombardier. Their charges included two old six-inch guns (ex H.M.C.S. Rainbow), two twelve-pounders and a thirteen-pounder anti-aircraft gun. Designated a "district gunner", one who looked after the guns, the emplacements, grounds, etc. Volunteered for the same job at Yorke Island in Johnstone Strait where he, another gunner, and one signaller looked after the two 4.7 in. guns there. A pleasant life with little work and much time for hunting and fishing. In Feb. 1940 returned to Victoria where he remained until early in 1942 when he volunteered to fill a vacancy as a bombardier with 1st Field Regiment, Royal Canadian Horse Artillery (1 R.C.H.A.) in England. Left Halifax in the S.S. Nerissa which, travelling alone, was torpedoed south of Iceland one night. He and thirteen others were picked up after about twelve hours in a flooded lifeboat. A total of only thirty one survived the sinking. Spent two weeks in hospital in Londonderry before he finally joined 1 R.C.H.A. at Bromley. They were billeted in suburban houses with their eighteen/twenty-five pounders stored in the garage behind. Slept on the floor with four blankets and a pillow until they were able to loot some bombed houses for mattresses. Heavy training schedule. (30:00) Moved to Scotland, new equipment, then embarked for Sicily where they landed as part of a reinforcement group. First in action at Leonforte. A short campaign full of movement. (46:00) Among the first ashore in Italy. Serious fighting at Ortona. Considerable German shelling: preferred medium artillery shellfire for they could hear the shells approaching, but not the 88-mm. shells which left them feeling very exposed. Monte Cassino, heavily engaged. (10:00) Hitler Line. Promoted to sergeant. First attack of malaria, followed by jaundice which resulted in hospital stay in Rome. Additional illnesses caused him to be repatriated to England where he remained hospitalized until after V-E Day. Returned to the coast artillery in Victoria, but soon obtained a transfer to 1 R.C.H.A. at Petawawa. (25:00) Regiment moved to Camp Shilo where the married troops were given apartments with communal washing facilities in old "H" huts. Winter training at Churchill, Man. (30:00) Early survival equipment. Discusses rations. (40:00)

(Side 2) Returned to Shilo where, as a sergeant, he was largely concerned with basic gunnery training. On a gunnery course was promoted, halfway through to warrant officer, class II and posted to 2 R.C.H.A. Moved to Fort Lewis, Wash. in training for Korea. Discusses Fort Lewis interlude. (10:00) In Korea, artillery operations, mostly in support of the infantry, were relatively quiet compared to Italy. Snipers were the chief danger. (20:00) Comments on general conditions. American rations were tiresome. Returned to Canada on course. Posted to the School of Artillery as an assistant instructor in gunnery. On exchange to an American guided missile battalion in El Paso, Tex. for one year. Assisted in training some British Army troops on the Corporal missile and was invited to join them in England. As a result he was later posted to a missile regiment in the United Kingdom for two years, extended to three. (38:00) In July 1960 returned to Canada. Posted to Picton, Ont. as battery sergeant-major of 2nd Missile Battery. Promoted to warrant officer, class I in the Survey Section of the School of Artillery at Shilo. Achieved his ambition and was appointed Sergeant-Major Instructor in Gunnery (the highest non commissioned instructor rank) of the school. Retired in 1967. Worked at Fort Rodd Hill in the administration wing for fifteen years. (45:00) Comments on the position of sergeant-major instructor in gunnery: great power, inside man to the Colonel. Direct access at any time to the Chief Instructor. Authority even in regard to officers in training. Responsible for conduct and
instructor capabilities of all the other ranks at the school. Offered a captaincy, but, as it meant an Ottawa posting, he refused. (8:00)

Col. Robert Oliver Conover

Lord Strathcona’s Horse (Royal Canadians)

Record ID: 00000164
Conover, Robert Oliver, Col., 1927-
My Army recollections [sound recording] by Robert Oliver Conover ; interviewed by Chris Bell
4 sound cassettes (ca. 360 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 360 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 25, June 4, 12 and 19, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1 side, 1) Born on Apr. 27, 1927 in Montreal. His father, who was a medical doctor, served in both World Wars. Joined the Royal Canadian Dragoons as a trooper in July 1946. Under a scheme for educational upgrading he attended McGill University for one year. Posted to the intelligence unit of Quebec Command where he worked primarily on security investigations. Attended the counter intelligence school in Maryland, in the United States (1949). Sent to Camp Borden for officer training and was commissioned into Lord Strathcona’s Horse. Instructor in tactics at Meaford, Ont. Comments on promotion prospects; good annual reports and exams required, but still might be twenty years before attaining the rank of major. (45:00) "Working conditions" in the services. Recruit training officer in Calgary (1952). Explains duties of "battle captain" in a tank squadron. Exercises at Camp Wainwright. Neglect of safety precautions when handling explosives caused an accident which occurred due, in part, to a desire to simulate battle conditions. Army more or less a separate society where the role of the military wife is very important, especially as one advances in rank; much social awareness is required. Wives must support husbands’ career; a wrong attitude can slow it down significantly. Posted as recruiting officer in Three Rivers, Que. Anecdotes. Influence of local priest. (48:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Quality of recruits from Quebec declined after a quota was established for French-speaking members of the armed forces. Education level was a problem. Many thought of the Army as a means of escape from their narrow, provincial life. Next became involved with recruiting plans connected with the universities. Had to weed out the academics versus the leaders. Ideally young officers should have both attributes. At Army Headquarters during the next posting he found it to be virtually a "civilian" nine-to-five occupation. (45:00) Three-month posting as a transport officer in Athens, Greece broke the "civilian" spell. Promoted to captain and posted to the regiment. Gunnery course at Wainwright in very cold operating conditions. Characteristics of the Centurion tank. Tank development; some foreign models too small for the average Canadian soldier! Tank tactics. Russian methods and design. (35:00)
(Reel 2, Side 1) Gunnery practice; miniature ranges described. Versatility required in tank crews. Appointed adjutant and operations officer in the regiment. After preparation attended staff college. Explains student body and methods of instruction. Posted as operational staff officer (general staff officer, grade 3) at Brigade Headquarters in Calgary. (45:00) In 1965 he went to Germany as a squadron commander (major). Describes move, quarters, etc. Composition of the brigade as part of the British Army of the Rhine (B.A.O.R.). Centurions versus Russian tanks. Russians closely monitored Canadian training exercises. (48:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) A political decision was made to move the brigade to southern Germany. This was of little practical value and they now only occupy a reserve position. The terrain in southern Germany is unsuitable for the form in which the brigade is constituted. Upon leaving the B.A.O.R. the Canadians lost the opportunity to train staff officers at the divisional and corps levels. The Centurions were upgraded at this time. Brigade became fully mechanized with the advent of armoured personnel carriers. Tactics discussed. New tanks considered. (45:00) Maintenance of their British-made tanks considerably more difficult in southern Germany due to the lack of higher echelon facilities. The new German Leopard tank made much more sense from a repair and maintenance point of view. In 1967 posted to the British Ministry of Defence as a general staff officer, grade 2 (operational requirements). Coordinated the efforts of many in the production of the new Chieftain tank. Family transition to England not easy. Promoted to lieutenant-colonel and commanding officer of the Fort Garry Horse (F.G.H.) in Calgary (June 1969). At about that time the government decided to raise a French Canadian armoured regiment while reducing the size of the forces. For a number of reasons this was not entirely successful. The F.G.H. was disbanded and the unit rebadged as Lord Strathcona's Horse amid considerable dissatisfaction. (40:00)

Lt. Stephen J. Coppinger

The British Columbia Dragoons (9th Armoured Regiment)

The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000034
Coppinger, Stephen J., Lt., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Stephen J. Coppinger ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 11, 1987, Victoria, B.C

Born on March 13, 1920 in Winnipeg, Man. Early in the war he began an unsuccessful attempt to join the navy as an officer candidate while still serving in the 96th Field Battery, Royal Canadian Artillery of Edmonton. In the winter of 1942 he joined an armoured regiment as a trooper. Underwent officer training at Camp Borden. He considers that to have been a very good,
effective course with much emphasis on mechanics and mathematics. Practical aspects included learning the jobs of all those "other ranks" likely to be under his command: radio, driver, gunner, as well as general military training. Discusses high reliability of the Sherman tank, but also the deficiencies in armour and armament. Later on the Shermans were armed with the seventeen-pounder gun which helped to redress the balance somewhat. (20:00) While engaged in a staff job at Camp Borden he managed to post himself overseas. Queen Elizabeth; Aldershot. Later was part of an advance party of the 5th Canadian Armoured Division to North Africa. After two months the regiment (British Columbia Dragoons, 9th Armoured Regiment) went to Italy and shortly thereafter went into action at the Hitler Line. Supporting the infantry at the Melfa River, the last major water barrier before Rome, all the tanks of Coppinger's troop were knocked out (two killed, eleven wounded, of fifteen men). The tanks burned easily, the ammunition quickly catching fire. His clothes on fire, he received serious burns to hands, face, and legs. (35:00) In hospital he was treated by a new "wet dressing" method favoured by the burns surgeon, a Maj. Moore from Montreal, which markedly reduced scar tissue. In hospital for six weeks, and another month convalescing before he was sent to a reinforcement unit. Posted to the Calgary Regiment of the 1st Army Tank Brigade, south of Florence. As an acting captain he commanded the reconnaissance troop of eleven tanks and forty-four men. (45:00) Their lighter tanks had the turrets removed and were armed with machine guns only. In early 1945 transferred to France. A rough voyage caused the reconnaissance troop to miss the regimental train. He had to scrounge flat cars in Marseilles for the trip to Belgium. Took an anti-mine course. Fought in Holland until the end of the war. Left Holland in Sept. 1945. Comments that a good side of war was the provision to many young men of man management skills, responsibilities, and a maturity beyond their years. The army wanted Coppinger to continue in the postwar military, but decided to take his discharge (not without difficulty!) in 1946. (12:00)

Pte. Arthur Donovan Corker, M.M.

7th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Record ID: 00000035
Corker, Arthur Donovan, Pte., M.M., 1894-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Arthur Donovan Corker ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
1 original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 29, 1983 (side 1) and Aug. 31, 1983 (side 2), Victoria B.C.

Born on Feb. 26, 1894 in Victoria, B.C. His father was an Anglican missionary at Alert Bay and Comox, B.C. Educated in England. Returned to Alert Bay, taking a temporary job in a sawmill; ten hours a day, six days a week, ten cents an hour. Moved to Victoria where he was employed by the Bank of Nova Scotia. Joined the 5th Regiment, Canadian Garrison Artillery. Describes
militia activities, summer camp at Sooke, all pay to the regimental fund. When war was declared in 1914 he was working in Nanaimo as Assistant Manager for a milling company. Immediately joining up, sent to the 88th Victoria Fusiliers, then to Valcartier Camp where he was posted to the 7th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force. Sailed for England on Sept. 26, 1914 in the Virginian. Describes living and training conditions on Salisbury Plain. (35:00) Trained with the machine-gun section of his unit. Remarks that later at the Battle of Ypres three out of four of their machine guns were out of action. The Colt machine guns were not very reliable. In France the battalion underwent three days familiarization in the trenches before taking over from a British unit. They occupied the trench in about half-company strength so that effective rotation was possible. He thought that the trenches were in pretty good shape. (45:00) Mentions sanitary arrangements, rations, sleeping areas, etc. Initially held in reserve at the Battle of Ypres. They were armed with the Ross rifle; he partially blames its unreliability for his capture by the Germans during a heavy attack at St. Julien on Apr. 24, 1915. Corker was employed as a range finder operator for the machine guns, but, during a general retirement, they could not hold the Germans off, and a number had to surrender. He considers that in the war zone he received reasonable treatment by the Germans. Transported in freight cars to a camp at Giissen where the accommodation was good, even with 250 men in a building. (20:00) The rations were low, consisting of soup and one loaf of bread per day for five men. Prisoners combined into messes so that the food could be better cooked. After six months they began to think of escape. He was sent a compass from England, hidden in a jar of strawberry jam; the compass served him well during four attempts to escape. The "you know what society" was the name for their escape committee. (30:00) States (surprisingly) that in Germany he was introduced to the coffee break. The best work detail that he had was in a vineyard near Mainz. In industrial settings he was able to perform small acts of sabotage. Anecdote. (40:00)

(Side 2) Additional escape tales. Discourse returns to trench warfare, Ross rifle, leather Oliver-pattern equipment, etc. (10:00) Instrumental in formulating instructions for escapees, what to do and where to head. To his surprise in Apr. 1920 he learned that he had been awarded the Military Medal for his constant (six) attempts to escape from prison camp, his organizing and helping others, and his final success on the seventh personal attempt. (20:00) In 1917 he worked at Hoerde at the iron foundry. In 1918 he made his successful escape. He and another spent twenty- one days getting to the Dutch border which they crossed by crawling through a field of turnips. Reported to the Dutch Police, fourteen days in quarantine, then England. Extensively interrogated in London; a copy of one is held in the University of Victoria archives. (Public Archives of Canada record group 9, III, volume 4739, folder 155, file 16, no. 2287). (40:00) In England he was given two or three weeks leave, extra rations, three years back pay. (45:00) Sent back to Canada (Sept. 1918) on the same ship (Virginian) that he arrived in. Received medical treatment for a wartime hearing disability. Discharged. Farmed and taught school in the Vanderhoof area of British Columbia. Married. Joined the Canadian National Railways as a bridgeman. Tough times in the Depression. Moved to a job in Victoria. (11:00)

Lt.-Col. Geoffrey D. Corry

The Canadian Scottish Regiment
Corry, Geoffrey D., Lt.-Col., 1923-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Geoffrey D. Corry ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 50 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 50 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 12, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 11, 1923 in Eastend, Sask. Enlisted as a private in the Canadian Scottish Regiment and, after basic and advance training, went to the officer cadet training unit at Gordon Head, Victoria, in Dec. 1942 with a later two months in Calgary. Posted for a short time to the 2nd Battalion on Vancouver Island. Overseas in June 1943 to the 1st Battalion, followed by six weeks of battle training. Participated in amphibious landings in Exercises Prank and Pirate. Returned to a training role with the 3rd Canadian Division holding unit. On D-Day he landed in Normandy some hours behind the 1st Battalion. (Corry reads a graphic account of his invasion experiences). (10:00) Impressions of the scene at sea and of the men of the 3rd Division reinforcement unit. Disembarking. Describes Courseulles beach and the area immediately behind. Moves up to join "C" Company as a platoon commander. Living in slit trenches somewhat trying. Heavy fighting the following day. (20:00) Issues orders and describes in some detail an infantry attack as the platoon commander. Germans mounted a major counterattack on June 9, resulting in forty-five dead and eighty wounded in the battalion. Leads a successful night patrol to capture prisoners. (30:00) On June 15 they entered a period of very active patrolling. First memorable church service. Another night patrol on a road toward Carpiquet did not establish close contact with the Germans. On July 7 moved toward Caen and observed the bombing of that city. On the approach was hit on the helmet by sniper fire and knocked down. Subsequently flushed thirty Germans out of the adjacent wheat fields. (40:00) The advance began behind an artillery barrage. Wounded in the leg during close combat. Rescued by his platoon sergeant. (45:00) Evacuated to a hospital on the beach. Flown to England after thirty-five days in Normandy. After the war he rejoined the army; never regretted the experience. (3:00)

Section Officer (Mrs.) Betty Costeloe
Women's Auxiliary Air Force

Costeloe, Betty, Mrs., Sect. Off., 1915-
My Women's Auxiliary Air Force recollections [sound recording]/ by Betty Costeloe ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
1 sound cassette (ca. 30 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 30 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Interview with husband Maj. James Geoffrey Costeloe follows on original recording. Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 6, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on March 4, 1915 in Yorkshire, England. Joined the Women's Transport Service in Sept. 1939 and was told to report immediately to the local Air Force station. Soon transferred to the operational station at Waddington, Lincolnshire which held two operational squadrons, No. 44 and a New Zealand squadron (217 Squadron). Commissioned into the Women's Auxiliary Air Force in June 1941. Served with both Fighter and Coastal Commands at Hull, Chatham, Plymouth, Liverpool, Northern Ireland. Comments that before commissioning the transport personnel had to work very hard in order to prove themselves to the aircrew. She drove aircrew to their aircraft dispersed around the airfield and found it particularly disturbing that often her former passengers did not return from operations. Waiting was hard. (10:00) As an officer she worked in underground operations rooms. Participated in briefings, distributed "escape boxes" for use in enemy territory. Suffered from stress brought about by the knowledge of frequent operational casualties and the proximity to, or life in, cities such Hull, Plymouth, Liverpool. Coastal Command somewhat less stressful. Stationed in Scotland when war ended. (21:00) Received discharge, but wanted to get away from England, so joined the Women's Voluntary Services organization and went to Malaya. Again found herself a transport driver for the Royal Air Force. Transferred to the Malayan Police as a secretary. Many experiences with those involved with Chinese bandits and/or Communists from Kuala Lumpur to the Thai border. A very tense life. Met her husband there. Emigrated to Canada. General comments on the life of a British citizen or official in Malaya during the "emergency". (31:00) Interview with Maj. Geoffrey Costeloe begins.

Maj. James Geoffrey Costeloe

Border Regiment

1st Airborne Division

Record ID: 00000041
Costeloe, James Geoffrey, Maj., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by James Geoffrey Costeloe ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Interview begins approx. 30 min. into the original recording, after wife, Sect. Off. Betty Costeloe.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 6, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born the son of a parish vicar on Dec. 4, 1920 in Nottingham, Eng. Joined The Border Regiment as a Private in May 1939 with the object, after eighteen months, of going to Sandhurst. The war
intervened and he was commissioned into the regiment in March 1940 after a short course at an O.C.T.U. in Aldershot. He later instructed at the same unit before being posted to the 1st Battalion, The Border Regiment in South Wales. In 1942 The Border Regiment was chosen to form part of the 1st Airlanding Brigade (glider-borne troops) of the 1st Airborne Division. Sent to North Africa in 1943, they formed part of the invasion forces for Sicily. Describes training, including two glider crashes which he survived. The most common glider was the "Horsa" which was able to carry thirty troops, or one jeep and trailer, or a six-pounder anti-tank gun. In the attack on Sicily a considerable proportion of the battalion landed in the sea (but not eighty percent as quoted), including Maj. Costeloe, but after several hours they were picked up by a troopship. The battalion was reformed in North Africa prior to the next operation at Taranto, It. After a high speed trip aboard a Royal Navy cruiser, during which they saw the Italian fleet sailing to Malta to surrender, they disembarked at Taranto and dug in about five miles beyond the city. Next they secured the airfield at Foggia for the R.A.F. During this time they only encountered light German opposition. Contracted jaundice and spent some time in hospital. After recovery, he was able to rejoin the unit on its return to England to prepare for the invasion of France. Transferred to the 1st Airborne Division Reconnaissance Squadron as adjutant. Describes the equipment and complement of the squadron. Later they were to be the only mobile troops at Arnhem. (30:00) On D Day (June 1944) the 1st Airborne Division was held in reserve. Considerable frustration: briefed for a dozen operations, actually airborne for one before it was cancelled; they did not get into action until Arnhem. Great confidence in success going into Arnhem, but actually landed too far from the target. Strong German opposition almost immediately. After heavy fighting they found themselves effectively boxed into a defensive perimeter. After nine or ten days those that remained were able to reach the Rhine and withdraw across the river. (45:00) Comments on severe radio communication problems. Back in England applied for a staff position, was accepted and, after staff college, was sent to the 14th Army in India and Burma. A few months later he was seconded to the Burma Police where he formed a 750-man Frontier Battalion. Lost his police position when the British withdrew from Burma. Managed a rubber plantation for a period, but corruption was so rife in the Burmese administration that he felt it necessary to move on to Malaya where he was assistant manager on a very large plantation. Married in Singapore. With the "Emergency" he felt that living in the country was consistently dangerous and resolved to move to Canada in 1951. A few months after arriving he joined the Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry, commanding "C' Company in Korea. (13:00)

Although the interviewer indicates that more was to come, nothing is available on the recording.

Note: Maj. Costeloe referred to John Fairley, Remember Arnhem, a history of the 1st Airborne Reconnaissance Squadron, for which he was extensively interviewed.

Lieut.-Cdr. Frank William Costin

Royal Canadian Navy
Record ID: 00000165
Costin, Frank William, Lieut.-Cdr., 1928-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Frank William Costin ; interviewed by Shawn Cafferky
3 sound cassettes (ca. 255 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 255 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reels Nov. 29, Dec. 9 and 23, 1985 and Jan. 27, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on June 17, 1928 in Duncan, B.C. Lived in Westholme, educated in Duncan. At the age of fourteen and one-half he joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment (militia). Training schedule consisted of as many as three nights per week; weekend exercises every three weeks. Armed with the Enfield 30.06 American-manufactured rifle. Conditions of service. (20:00) Completed high school in 1945. Joined the Royal Canadian Naval College at Royal Roads in Sept. 1946 in a class of fifty cadets of whom thirty-five graduated. (32:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) The early days at naval college were a shock: heavy schedule of academics, naval training, and sports. Promoted to midshipman upon graduation and posted to H.M.S. Triumph (light fleet carrier) to learn the "naval trade". Explains the choice of naval branches available to midshipmen. (30:00)

(Reel 1, Side 1, channel 2) Transferred to H.M.S. Newcastle (cruiser) commanded by Lord Louis Mountbatten. Both Newcastle and Triumph were engaged in patrols to attempt to prevent Jewish immigration to Israel. Promoted to acting sub-lieutenant and sent to the naval college at Greenwich. For a short time posted to H.M.S. Finisterre (destroyer) used as a gunnery training ship. Lieutenants' qualifying course. Returned to appointment in Canada in H.M.C.S. Antigonish (frigate) where he obtained his watchkeeping ticket. (30:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Exercises with the United States Navy. Mainguy Report. Decision made to train junior officers in Canada. Selected to go to Britain in 1953 as part of the marching component of the Coronation parade. Appointed to H.M.C.S. Athabaskan in the Far East. Made one patrol off the Korean coast before the war ended. Navigation course in England. In 1956 joined H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier). (35:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Recaps boat-running experiences as a midshipman. Explains tasks. As a divisional officer in Magnificent he acquired eighteen months of valuable man-management experience. Discusses configuration of Magnificent, training role, NATO responsibilities. As the new Canadian destroyers were commissioned the Navy had difficulty training junior officers in the only ships available, the operational ones. Comments on the anti-submarine role of the Royal Canadian Navy and the difficulty in attempting to keep up with submarine development. Engaged, as part of the Flag Officer's staff, in sea trials of the new destroyers. Explains civilian control and post-acceptance trials. Much effort required to get the sophisticated equipment to work properly. (32:00)
(Reel 2, Side 1, channel 2) Appointed to H.M.C.S. Algonquin (a former Fleet class destroyer). Discusses modernization, armament, early aluminium superstructure. Together with H.M.C.S. Crescent she formed the basis for future ship improvement. Squadron navigator. Explains problems, particularly in far northern waters. Favourable comment on the unflappable Capt. Tony Pickard. (45:00) New and sophisticated equipment brought forward many unfamiliar problems. High requirement for intensive training and frequent maintenance. Training and maintenance schedules cut into time allocated for operational exercises. Refers to naval wives and their necessary attitude toward the absence of their husbands. Captains' wives were always concerned with family problems that might occur. Describes severe weather conditions in the Atlantic. (27:00)

Cdr. James R.B. Coulter

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000042
Coulter, James R.B., Cdr., 1920?-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by James R.B. Coulter ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 14, 1980 (sides 1 and 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on May 16, ca. 1920. Brought up in Montreal, attended McGill University, joined the Canadian Officers Training Corps and the 17th Duke of York's Royal Canadian Hussars. Spent much time during 1939-1940 grooming horses. Friends promoted the attractiveness of the Navy, so he transferred to the naval reserve. Appointed to the second class (1941) at Royal Roads for officer training. (10:00) Accommodated in a large room in the "Castle" with about forty other acting temporary probationary sub-lieutenants where he graduated, after sixteen weeks, as a full-fledged sub-lieutenant and appointed to Windsor, Ont. as training officer in H.M.C.S. Hunter. Posted to H.M.C.S. Algoma (corvette) on the east coast in 1942. (20:00) As gunnery officer and part of a very green crew he sailed on the Halifax, Boston, Newfoundland run. Discusses corvettes, crew, sea-keeping qualities, etc. Sailed for Londonderry in late 1942 as part of the ill-fated convoy SC.107. (30:00) Describes some convoy conditions. They were then especially equipped for the Murmansk run, but instead found themselves part of Operation Torch in North Africa. (40:00) Comments on Gibraltar and watchkeeping in the Mediterranean. (45:00) Returned to the North Atlantic, then to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, Quebec City to Goose Bay. Much experience with fog and icebergs. On course at Halifax in torpedo and anti-submarine warfare (T.A.S.), then to that directorate in Ottawa. In 1944 appointed to be term lieutenant to the junior class at Royal Roads. Transferred to the R.C.N. (30:00) In 1945 to England on course
and finally a year and a half on a T.A.S. long course. Appointed to the Naval Staff in London. Very hard living conditions in England in the winter of 1947. Returned to Halifax as a T.A.S. training officer. (45:00)

(Side 2) Anecdote re depth charge exercise with United States submarine. Heavy Canadian explosions unexpected. Appointed to H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser) in 1949. Comments on several cruises. Posted to command H.M.C.S. Swansea (frigate), despite never actually handling a ship in harbour! In 1951 appointed to captain of H.M.C.S. Crescent ("C" Class destroyer) as a lieutenant-commander. T.A.S. Warfare Directorate in Ottawa for two years. Greenwich, England on course. Promoted in 1955 to commander. (20:00) Captain of the T.A.S. School, Halifax. In command, H.M.C.S. Assiniboine II in 1958. Anecdote re high speed docking in Quebec. Comments on navigation on the St. Lawrence River. (30:00) Commanded the 3rd Escort Squadron off Newfoundland and Labrador coasts. Encounters with Russian trawlers (spy ships). Commanded 7th Escort Squadron of six frigates. (45:00) Appointed to Defence Research Establishment. Commanded Maritime Warfare School. In 1964 he felt that integration of the forces was not to his liking, so he requested his release, which was granted after a posting as naval attaché in Washington, D.C. Some comments on the political overtones involved in equipment purchases. The Navy, as he knew it, seemed to be disappearing. Worked as a civil servant for fifteen years, including four for the United Nations which entailed considerable travelling. (14:00)

Maj. Kenneth S. Crabtree

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000043
Crabtree, Kenneth S., Maj., 1909-1985?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Kenneth S. Crabtree ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 24, 1982 (sides 1 and 2), Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born the son of a professional soldier on March 30, 1909 in Oldham, Lancashire (d. 1985?) The family emigrated to Victoria in 1913. Recounts early family life, schooling, etc. (10:00) Left school at an early age to work at the Union Club as a bellboy for a period of three or four years. Considers this to have been a social education in itself. Became a draftsman for Sam Maclure, the well-known architect. Later employed by the provincial civil service as a craftsman-technician in the Highways Department. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment (C.S.R.) in 1929, rising to the rank of sergeant in four years. Commissioned as a second lieutenant in 1935. Qualified as a lieutenant after six weeks summer training with Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry. Discusses customs, uniforms (the cost of which was entirely his responsibility), the considerable demarcation between officers and men, etc. (30:00) Battalion
personnel were all very keen: a point of pride that they always turned out a one hundred man Guard of Honour in full dress at the opening of the provincial legislature. On Aug. 26, 1939 three platoons, including himself, were called out for duty. (40:00) Took over the guard at the Joint Services Magazine in Colwood. At the time an exciting, but basically routine operation. Comments on mess conventions, feelings toward the war. Despite being totally deaf in one ear he had no trouble carrying out his duties. Sent to Bamfield Cable Station, on guard for three months. Rejoined the battalion at Otter Point Camp. Appointed mortar officer, but no mortars, so made their own for training. Then to Debert, N.S., and overseas. Immediately sent on mortar course. (20:00) Afraid of being left behind in Victoria, he had earlier conned his way past a medical board with a certificate stating that he did not have any infection in his ear! In England the mortar platoon was brought up to equipment strength. Attended both a British and a Canadian battle school, becoming a mortar instructor in the latter. (30:00)

(Side 2) Promoted to captain. Eventually returned to the C.S.R. as second-in-command of a company. Assault training on the Isle of Wight, 1943. (11:00) Appointed to command infantry reinforcements for the 7th Brigade during the Normandy landings. Sailed from London, landing almost dry-footed on D+1. Posted to the North Nova Scotia Highlanders for two or three weeks, took over the mortar platoon, but eventually returned to the C.S.R. Lost his hearing in his one good ear due to the close explosion of an enemy shell. Returned to England. Hearing recovered, but not allowed to return to action as complete lack of hearing discovered in the other ear. Promoted to major and company commander in a training battalion. Returned to Canada in March 1946. (39:00) Rejoined the C.S.R. (militia) in the same year as a company commander. Comments on postwar militia life (45:00) and on the current (1982) situation which, he acknowledged, is quite different from his day, but still as effective. Employed by the provincial Department of Mines, staying until retirement. (05:00)

** Commodore James Malcolm Cumming **

** Royal Canadian Navy **

Record ID: 00000044  
Cumming, James Malcolm, Cmdre., 1930-  
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by James Malcolm Cumming ; interviewed by Rick Aylward  
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.  
Summary of tape also in archives.  
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.  
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.  
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 3, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on May 28, 1930 in Calgary, Alta. A member of the Sea Cadets from age twelve, it seemed natural to attend Royal Roads which had just become (1948) a tri-service college. In 1950 posted to H.M.C.S. Ontario as a midshipman in the first graduating class not to be sent to the Royal Navy for training. Mentions the Mainguy Report and the Canadian and British
attitudes toward man management. Describes a midshipman's life, including study, sports, the famous journal for marking by the "snotties nurse", etc. (15:00) Seamanship Board exams. Comments on francophone members of an English-speaking Navy. French, as a language, not required at Royal Roads; Spanish was the "in" discipline. (25:00) Sub-lieutenant courses at Royal Naval College, Greenwich. A further nine months at Portsmouth. Returned to Canada and in 1953 joined H.M.C.S. Sioux (destroyer). (30:00) To Korea in 1954 after the truce, the only Canadian ship there. A quiet time on patrol. (35:00) Served as navigating officer in the Far East, then sent on the long navigation course in England. Twelve Commonwealth officers attended; comments on subjects taken, including radar and action information. Appointed navigating officer for the 1st Canadian Escort Squadron (all wartime destroyers). Returned to England for additional training. (45:00) Posted to H.M.C.S. Annapolis II during the earliest helicopter operations. Remarks on his feelings for the change from the white ensign to the maple leaf. Promoted to commander, naval intelligence, in an integrated headquarters. Feels that integration had few adverse effects and some advantages. Unification was a different matter. Appointed to command H.M.C.S. St. Croix II (destroyer) for an extended period of thirty-nine months: considered it a real "plus". Then to Training Command in Winnipeg. Conditions were such that it was an unproductive one year period. National Defence College, Kingston. (15:00) Worked on defence programs which provided exposure to civil service managers, which in turn offered a better understanding of management problems. Promoted to captain and sent to a NATO appointment at Supreme Allied Command, Atlantic in Norfolk, Va. A tremendous experience. (25:00) No doubt that Canadian professionalism was respected by both United States and British commands. Feels that Canadians more than carry their weight in staff and the NATO organization. In command of H.M.C.S. Preserver II (support ship), almost constantly at sea. Another plum, although some of the ship's equipment was not up to standard - a situation which he blames partly on the fixed tender construction method used in acquiring the ship. Gives his thoughts on marriage for a career naval officer. Should be extremely careful in the choice of a wife because of the frequent strain of absences and of moving. Calls it the "Ruth syndrome: whither thou goest, I will go". (30:00) Considers himself very fortunate in this regard. Choosing a wife from a naval family may be a good idea. Thinks that the current situation, in which young wives often have a career ambition, is particularly difficult. Promoted to commodore, the first flag officer level. As chief of staff in Halifax it was his duty, through several deputies, to run the day-to-day operations in accordance with the wishes of his admiral. Next, naval attaché in Washington: much liaison with the United States Navy on training and equipment. A Canadian officer on diplomatic appointment, working for the Ambassador on the one hand and the Chief of Defence Staff on the other. A public relations and social experience. (40:00) Comments on the Canadian public attitude toward the armed forces and particularly the Navy. Recognizes that the Navy, for many years, neglected to cover themselves adequately in the corridors of power, being somewhat blinded by the overriding desire to get their officers to sea. Understanding of the system is vital. Sees great improvement in the last ten years. Prospects good for new equipment, the design of which has been a Canadian strength. (47:00)

Maj. A.E. Cunningham

Royal Canadian Artillery
Record ID: 00000037
Cunningham, A.E., Maj., 1906-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by A.E. Cunningham ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 17, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1906 in Sydney, N.S. of an old (1701) Nova Scotia family who were early settlers in
Antigonish. As a young man he went to work in the coal mines of Glace Bay where he studied
electricity and became a mine electrician, leaving in 1937 to become an electrical contractor in
Sydney. Joined the 9th (Cape Breton) Searchlight Battery as a provisional second lieutenant in
Sept. 1939. The Signal Corps, with whom he often worked, requested that he organize the laying
of a telephone cable across Sydney harbour which they accomplished very inexpensively by first
laying it over the frozen harbour, then cutting through the ice. Much work on coast defence guns
which he describes. (15:00) Installed the then new mag-slip gunnery control system and
comments on the fire-direction table, a mechanical "computer". (25:00) Posted to Newfoundland
to construct telephone facilities. Promoted to lieutenant. (35:00) Returned to Sydney due to his
low physical category. Transferred to Matane, Que. for communications work on the Gaspe
peninsula. (45:00) This was important due to the submarine threat in the Gulf of St. Lawrence.
Posted to Ottawa to the Directorate of Artillery (1944) as a captain. Travelled to both coasts
inspecting electrical and mechanical installations. (10:00) Comments on the improvements made
and the purpose of coast defence. In Oct. 1945 he received his discharge in Victoria, B.C.
Employed by the British Columbia Power Commission. Joined the 66th Light Anti Aircraft
Battery in Nanaimo, B.C. (formerly part of the Canadian Scottish Regiment) in 1946. Promoted
to major when he later took command of a battery in Duncan, B.C. (22:00)

Cdr. Francis James Dayton

Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve (Fleet Air Arm)

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000166
Dayton, Francis James, Cdr., 1924-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Francis James Dayton ; interviewed by Graham
Arts
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 28, 1987, Victoria, B.C.
(Side 1) Born in Nov. 1924 in Portage la Prairie, Man. Brought up in Vancouver, he attended the University of British Columbia for one year and was a member of the University Naval Training Division. In 1941 he resolved to join the Royal Naval Air Service which he was able to do in 1942. Preliminary selection board in Kingston, Ont. Taken in as a naval airman, second class, although under contract to become a pilot. If this failed he could ask to be released. (10:00) Basic and initial flying training took place at Gosport, near Portsmouth, England. In March 1943 he was sent to St. Louis, Mo. for elementary flying training at a United States Navy school. Service flying training school at Kingston, Ont. Awarded wings, returned to England. Discusses ranks held in which flying pay made a considerable difference. Appointed petty officer-pilot upon graduation. Shortly thereafter he was commissioned. Pay was about one pound per day. Posted to No. 1837 Squadron, Fleet Air Arm where he underwent additional operational training. (45:00) Much practice in tactics and low-flying in training for operations in the Pacific. Flew United States-made Vought Corsair fighter aircraft. Undertook modest operational sorties in the North Sea, but much hindered by the weather. Comments on shipboard tactics, flying in general. (13:00)

(Side 2) Air attacks on shipping. On V-E Day he found out the war had ended when he made a forced landing at a small United States base in Northern Ireland. The squadron was ready to join the aircraft carrier H.M.S. Illustrious (fleet carrier) in the Far East when that war ended. Squadron disbanded almost immediately and he was sent on an indefinite period of leave. Obtained early release from the Navy because of impending return to university. Graduated from the University of British Columbia with an engineering degree in 1950. Joined the Royal Canadian Navy as an engineer officer. Later served as Chief Engineer aboard H.M.C.S. Bonaventure (light fleet carrier). Retired in 1975. (30:00)

Col. Thomas de Faye

The Saskatoon Light Infantry (Machine Gun)

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000167

de Faye, Thomas, Col., 1917-1999
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Thomas de Faye ; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
5 sound cassettes (ca. 360 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Verbal release, April 18, 1996.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 360 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 3, 17, 24 and July 2, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Cassette 1, Side 1) Born on Nov. 17, 1917 in Winnipeg. Brought up in Saskatoon where he attended university and, through the Canadian Officers Training Corps, was commissioned into the Saskatoon Light Infantry (S.L.I.). Mobilized at the outbreak of war in 1939, he discusses
many aspects of the military at that time: mobilization plan, equipment, training, duties. Overseas to Greenock.

(Cassette 1, Side 2) Convoy impressions. At Aldershot warmly received by the British. Training under Maj.-Gen. Pearkes, new equipment, relations with civilians, the Canadian soldier, impressions of Britain during the "phony war" period and subsequent years. Promoted to major. Trained in Scotland for the invasion of Sicily. Landed in July 1943 with the 2nd Brigade, commanded by Brig. Chris Vokes. Impressions of the invasion, Italian opposition, civilians, etc. Malaria and hepatitis were problems, the latter more serious.


(Cassette 2, Side 2) Crossed the Strait of Messina. Italians surrendered. Action near Campobasso. The Adriatic, Moro River, San Leonardo; moved toward Ortona. Very hard fight for Ortona requiring "mouse-holing", house to house, although the S.L.I. support equipment was not really suitable for close-range fighting. Heavy casualties resulted in the 1st Canadian Infantry Division being relieved for a time. Move toward the Liri Valley.

(Cassette 3, Side 1) General comments on the preceding material. S.L.I. reorganized after Ortona. De Faye then commanded the divisional machine guns and later the divisional mortars. Comparative remarks, some drawbacks to the Vickers machine-gun in the offensive role. Capabilities of the mortars. Florence, where an attempt was made to preserve the city from damage. Supported the Greek Brigade at Rimini. Lamone River action, with the Royal Canadian Regiment. Operation Anvil, the move to northwest Europe. A quiet time until they reached Germany and Holland.

(Cassette 3, Side 2) Considerable sums of Dutch guilders were captured from the Germans, but not much could be purchased. Noticed that the troops tended to be more cautious as the war drew to a close. Some Canadians involved in the black market. Appointed second-in-command of the 4th Battalion, The Royal Winnipeg Rifles, which was part of the Occupation Force in Germany. No fraternization rule. Problem of containing German prisoners of war. Guarded Russian slave labour camp. In Nov. 1945 became Commanding Officer of the regiment. Guarded the former S.S. General, Kurt Meyer prior to, and after, his court-martial. Details of guarding, exercise periods, attitude of officer guards. Meyer's family. (Refers to W.A. Stutt of Edmonton, one of Meyer's officer guards). Details of trial and Meyer's attitude. Feels that Canadian government insisted on a guilty finding. Sentenced to be shot. Sentence commuted to life imprisonment. De Faye feels that direct evidence against Meyer was a little sketchy.

(Cassette 4, Side 1) In 1955, as Commanding Officer of 1st Battalion, Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry (1 P.P.C.L.I.), in Germany, he met Meyer again. He had been giving lectures on tactics and military history in the officers' mess. Orders received that Meyer was politically unacceptable and could no longer be entertained. Account of plot to release Meyer in 1945. Anecdote. Posted to England for a few months, then repatriated to Canada. Impressions of

(Cassette 4, Side 2) Commanding officer of 1 P.P.C.L.I. in 1955. Moved to Germany as part of the NATO brigade. Impressions of the German Army; a good professional relationship. Returned to Work Point Barracks, then posted on course to the Joint Services Staff College, Norfolk, Va. Comments on the Canadian Military Tattoo at the Seattle World's Fair. Integration and unification, green uniforms. United Nations observer team in India in 1963/1964. Returned to Kingston, staff position in Ottawa, Germany, Brussels, to the NATO Military Committee. Retired in 1972. Considers career to have been enjoyable and well worthwhile.

(Cassette 5, Side 1) Importance of good officers. Impression of the 1985 Army is of a high degree of expertise in their calling. Certainly better educated now.


Royal Flying Corps

Record ID: 00000039
Dickins, Clennell H., Lt., O.C., O.B.E., D.F.C., 1899-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clennell H. Dickins ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 29, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 12, 1899 in Portage la Prairie, Man. where his father was a bank manager. Schooled in Edmonton where, after completing second year university (Alberta), he enlisted, at eighteen years of age, in the 196th (Western Universities) Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (C.E.F.), which he thought was to provide reinforcements for the Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry. At university he completed the officer requirement in the Canadian Officers Training Corps, but joined up as a private to be with friends. (15:00) At that time an older brother in the Royal Flying Corps caused him to consider that corps first. The decision was postponed while he underwent serious training in Canada. By troop train to Halifax, which took six days interspersed with exercise stops and two route marches. Overseas in the Mauretania, sailing alone, with about eight thousand others, packed like sardines. In England joined a reinforcement battalion, the 21st Battalion, C.E.F. Rigorous training. A few days leave with his brother tipped the scales in favour of the Royal Flying Corps (R.F.C). In London he was discharged from the Canadian Army and joined the British. Two weeks of indoctrination followed (mostly drill), then posted to the aviation ground school at Christ Church College, Oxford. (30:00) In Jan. 1918 he was sent to the 25th Training Squadron, R.F.C. as a provisional second lieutenant. Bought R.F.C. officer's uniform, but wore a white flash in cap to indicate that he was a student. Began flying in a Maurice Farman pusher aircraft, then a de Havilland 6, B.E.
2C, R.E. 8, and others. Describes some air tactics and manoeuvres. A further two weeks were spent at aerial gunnery school, including air photography with single frame cameras. (45:00) In those days the minimum flying time required to be awarded wings was twenty hours. Dickins had twenty-four to twenty-five hours before being sent to France. Posted to 211 Squadron near the English Channel, equipped with DH9 bombers with a load capacity of four 112-lb. bombs. Discusses machine-gun armament, Vickers and Lewis guns, interrupter gear for firing through the propeller, etc. (10:00) Spent much time bombing the submarine pens at Bruges from a height of about twelve thousand feet. Heavy anti-aircraft fire, some enemy fighter aircraft. Essential for safety to maintain formation against the latter. Later on they moved south to support the British First Army. By the end of the war casualties and a few transfers had left Dickins as the most senior pilot in the squadron in terms of service. Promoted to lieutenant. Awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross after he returned to Canada. Mailed to him by the Deputy Minister of National Defence, but he has never received his citation! Returns to a discussion of aerial warfare. Mentions his friend "Wop" May from Edmonton, another postwar bush pilot. (30:00) Stayed on with the R.F.C., and then the Royal Air Force for a short while, but finally repatriated to Canada in May 1919. After a short time with the Royal Canadian Air Force he became a bush pilot in the Canadian north. Comments that he made the first long-distance commercially experimental flight in the Canadian "barrens" fifty years earlier in a Fokker aircraft. (40:00) Thoughts on flying, Western Canada Airways, and establishing a practical winter flying service. During World War II he joined Canadian Pacific Railway as "Assistant to the President" and formed the Air Services Department. Organized the Atlantic Ferry Organization to fly military aircraft from North America to England. In 1942 was heavily involved as vice-president and general manager in the formation of Canadian Pacific Airlines. In 1947 he joined de Havilland of Canada, retiring in 1966 as executive vice-president. (50:00)

Rear-Admiral Charles J. Dillon

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000190
Dillon, Charles J., R.-Adm., 1912-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Charles J. Dillon ; interviewed by Mark C. Hill3 sound cassettes (ca. 285 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 285 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 3, Aug. 9, and Dec. 2, 1985, Victoria, B.C.
Archives hold additional interviews with R.-Adm. Dillon. Reel and cassette include a 75-min (Cass) interviews conducted by Shawn Cafferky, Dec. 2 and 9, 1985 and Jan. 27, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000191
Dillon, Charles J., R.-Adm., 1912-
My Navy recollections [sound recordings] / by Charles J. Dillon; interviewed by Shawn Cafferky
2 sound cassette (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 70 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono.
One original sound cassette (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono. also in archives. Partial duplication of reel.
Archives holds additional interviews with R.-Adm. Dillon. Reels include 285 min. of interviews conducted by Mark C. Hill, July 3, Aug. 9, and 1985, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reels and sound cassette Dec 29 1986 and Jan. 27, 1986, Victoria B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Apr. 27, 1912 in Montreal. His family moved to Ottawa in 1916 and there, in 1930, he joined the R.C.N.V.R. Describes training. At sea, for two weeks in the summer, training was entirely for fleet actions. Appointed to H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer) in 1934 for the annual winter cruise. Explains some of the exercises, but none were to do with convoys. Transferred to the paymaster branch due to his poor eyesight. In 1938 he obtained his watchkeeping ticket in H.M.C.S. Venture. Comments on the pleasant naval social life. (45:00) Royal visit in 1939, dedication of the National War Memorial. Mobilized on Sept. 2, 1939. Organized shipping control at Quebec City. Mistakenly detained an Italian vessel. (42:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Much effort expended to scrape together facilities, port protection, examination battery, etc. In July 1940 became Secretary to the Chief of Naval Personnel. Much "crisis management" in evidence. Worked six days a week and often on Sunday morning. Among his responsibilities was that of sending casualty telegrams. In Apr. 1942 was appointed supply officer in H.M.C.S. Prince Henry (armed merchant cruiser) on the west coast. Describes armament, radar, weather in the Pacific, American forces. Appointed to H.M.C.S. Givency (naval barracks). As a lieutenant commander served in H.M.C.S. Nabob (escort carrier). Sailed to San Francisco in 1944 where they took on twelve Grumman Avenger aircraft. Some problems between Royal Navy personnel and the Canadians. Some unrest due to poor (British) rations. Transported fighter aircraft to Britain. Dockyard in Liverpool: theft and trouble with civilian workers. Training exercises, anti-submarine role. Ship torpedoed, managed to make Rosyth, Scotland where ship eventually repaired. Returned to Canada. (37:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Applied to join the R.C.N. and was accepted. Posted to St. John's, Newfoundland as a senior supply officer. Convoy escorts continued to operate for two weeks after the end of the war, then the base began to wind down. Appointed Director of Naval Air Supply in Ottawa. Sent to study the U.S. Navy replenishment at sea operations. Laid foundation for Canadian supply ships. Appointed Naval Secretary. (45:00) Experiences during 1947-1950 with Brooke Claxton, Minister of National Defence. Began to replace naval stores personnel with civilian employees. In 1954 initiated a system of sending Canadian officers to study the U.S. naval supply system. Describes the Imperial Defence College in England where he was a student in 1961. (45:00)
(Reel 3, Side 1) Experiences in England. Senior naval officer in Montreal. Appointed Naval Comptroller (as a rear-admiral). (30:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Crisis in preparing naval estimates. Feels that the navy may have commissioned too many ships in the 1950's and 1960's. Difficulty in providing crews; upset the ship/shore ratio with the result that insufficient time was made available for shore duty.

(Cassette, Side B) Integration, 1964. The Navy did not grasp the implications of unification. Felt that the Naval Board could not understand how their careers might be affected. Comments on Rear Admirals Jeffrey Brock and William Landymore. New organization for the armed forces; appointed Deputy Comptroller-General under Lt.-Gen. Moncel. A very unfortunate period with many "let go" and numbers of resignations. Paul Hellyer was successful partly because he was able to impress officers in the second level of command. Further comments on reorganization of the command structure and of Rear Admiral Landymore's efforts to retain the separate identity of the Navy.

(Reel 4) Landymore's loss was a serious one brought in part by personal animosity between himself and the Minister. Many senior officers remained because of their sense of responsibility, but conditions were hard to accept. (11:00)

Ft. Lt. (Rev.) William Dobson

Royal Air Force

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000048
Dobson, William, F/L, Rev., 1914-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by William Dobson
2 sound cassettes (ca. 55 min.) : standard mono.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 55 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Side 1 of original tape has interview with R.-Adm. Edward William Finch-Noyes.
Recorded on original sound cassette June 21, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Oct. 8, 1914 in Duncan, B.C. Worked and saved for five years to put himself through the University of Edinburgh (1936-1939). Returned to Canada upon the outbreak of war. Travelled to Britain on a Greek freighter and joined the Royal Air Force (R.A.F.). Trained as a wireless operator, air gunner. (10:00) Rose to sergeant, commissioned as a pilot officer in 1942. Describes training. On his second tour over Germany he was a flight lieutenant in a Canadian Squadron, Royal Canadian Air Force (R.C.A.F.), responsible for all wireless operators.
Comments on the use of "tinsel" and "fish pond". Not too much heavy work involved. Good ground crew relations. (20:00) Flying anecdote, operational comments. Longest operation: ten hours to Czechoslovakia. Describes role of pathfinders. He served first with 4 Group, R.A.F. which had a high rate of loss (about five per cent per raid), then 6 Group, R.C.A.F. where it was lower. British airfields internally well spread out, thus much use of bicycles was necessary. Buildings kept small, no permanent hangers. (40:00) Comments on mess life which promoted unity. Discusses permanent force aircrew and personal hostilities. (51:00)

(Side 2) Young people today must understand the world in a realistic way. Understand human nature. Consider patriotism. Must not rule out all physical, mental, and spiritual abilities. (03:15)

Maj. John Alpine Dougan, M.C. and Bar

The Loyal Edmonton Regiment

Record ID: 00000058
Dougan, John Alpine, Maj, M.C. and Bar, 1921-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Alpine Dougan ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 27, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Apr. 7, 1921 in Lethbridge, Alta. Attended the University of Alberta in 1939 where he was a member of the Canadian Officers Training Corps. In March 1942 he joined the Loyal Edmonton Regiment as a private and was later posted to the Officer Cadet Training Unit at Gordon Head, Victoria. Graduated in July 1942 as a second lieutenant. Comments on training and conditions. (10:00) Currie Barracks for advanced training. Overseas as a reinforcement officer (lieutenant). After posting to the 48th Highlanders as an exchange officer for three months he returned to the Loyal Edmonton Regiment and trained in Scotland prior to the invasion of Sicily in July 1943. Commanded 16 Platoon in D Company near Leonforte (35:00). First action was the establishment of a successful roadblock well forward of the main Canadian positions. Destroyed vehicles, captured prisoners, and withdrew. (45:00) At Hill 736, near the Salso River, terrain was extremely rough and thus exhausting. Wounded, but able to continue until the objective was taken. Evacuated to North Africa. Awarded the Military Cross. Rejoined "D" Company near Campobasso. General comments regarding the attitude of reinforcements compared to the original members of the unit, many of whom were toughened and skilled in the outdoor life of Alberta; they were survivors. As the war progressed a somewhat different condition prevailed. Vino Ridge, a sharp action before Ortona. (30:00) The company was reduced to eighteen effectives. Heavy casualties in Ortona; describes house-to-house fighting.
(35:00) Wounded in the knee on Dec. 24, 1943, but, before being evacuated, insisted on staying with the unit for Christmas. Promoted to captain. For a time was chief instructor at a street-fighting school in Ortona. Made second-in-command of "C" Company early in 1944. Liri Valley/Hitler Line. (40:00) On patrol saw evidence of heavy Canadian casualties. (45:00) Describes very strong defences many tank casualties, recent visit to the same area. Battle at the Gothic/Rimini Line, considered a major opportunity to break through the German defences on the Adriatic. (10:00) Commanded "C" Company, Aug. 1944. In Sept. attacked Monte Lupo which was captured without too much trouble. (20:00) Fought in the villages of San Martino and San Fortunato near Rimini. Heavy fighting at the latter ended in a withdrawal by the Canadians. Wounded again, but not evacuated. Personal view of fighting. "C" Company attacked again and captured a position from which they could direct artillery fire on the enemy. Rubicon River. (40:00)

(Side 2) Promoted to major, officer commanding "A" Company. Began the advance across diked rivers. Fairly standard operations. Senio River. In March 1945 moved to northwest Europe. Leave in London. First action in Holland near Arnhem. Semi-official truce in order to supply food to the Dutch population. Regiment chosen to take part in the Victory parade in Berlin. Worked hard to change a fighting unit into a "parade unit". In the event only "A" Company was chosen to go, but, as Maj. Dougan was ill, he could not take part. Married in Aug. (10:00) Anecdote re non-commissioned officers who were absent without leave at his wedding. Comments on the distinguished record of the Loyal Edmonton Regiment. Left the Army in Nov. 1945. After Oxford he joined the Department of External Affairs. Describes some activities of the Loyal Edmonton Regiment Association. (27:00)

Lt. Marguerite Downes (now Gierman)

Canadian Women's Army Corps

Record ID: 00000045
Downes, Marguerite, Lt., 19--?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Marguerite Downes ; interviewed by Shawn Cafferky
1 sound cassette (ca. 55 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 27, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born and educated in Victoria. Moved to England as a girl and in 1934 completed a business course. The family moved to Denmark and, because of the war, returned to Canada in March 1940. Joined the Canadian Women's Army Corps (C.W.A.C.) in Victoria in early 1942. Recruits had to be at least twenty-one years of age and provide references. In the beginning she lived at home, wore civilian clothes and a C.W.A.C. armband when on duty at Signal Hill. In June 1942 was issued a uniform and sent to Ste. Anne de Bellevue (Macdonald College) near Montreal where they underwent basic training, largely drill and first aid. Returned to the
ordnance depot in Victoria, then to LaPointe Pier in Vancouver. Very cold, damp working conditions caused considerable sickness. Lived out on one dollar per day living-out allowance, on top of the ninety cents per day regular pay. In the summer of 1943 was transferred to Kamloops where she boarded in what seemed the lap of luxury: plenty of food, generous landlady. After a while she felt too remote from the war and applied for a transfer to C.W.A.C. Administration in Vancouver. From Vancouver, posted to Officer Training School at Ste Anne de Bellevue where great emphasis was placed on women management. (20:00) Posted to the Royal Canadian Electrical and Mechanical Engineers, Wellington Barracks, Halifax. Did not enjoy living in "H" huts. Some disciplinary problems, many of the younger girls could not cope with military life. She feels that many recruits were not properly selected. Usual method of release was as a result of psychological and medical problems. Deliberate pregnancy one of the latter. The discipline and homesickness seemed to affect the Newfoundland girls and in many cases they were inclined to go absent without leave. "Good" C.W.A.C.'s were worth their weight in gold, but unfortunately often had to carry part of the work of others. (32:00)

(Side 2) Mess food quite satisfactory, few complaints. Describes impressions of V-E Day in Halifax. All shops closed, including liquor stores. Too many armed forces personnel on leave. Organized the rescue, by truck, of many frightened C.W.A.C. personnel caught in the rioting. In July 1945 an ammunition dump caught fire and concussion from the resulting explosions caused their "H" huts to shift on their foundations. They all spent the night on the parade square. Discharged in 1946. Feels that army life was an unnatural one for a woman. Personally felt that the army benefitted her, but saw many emotional and jealous attitudes displayed which had a harmful effect on the military job to be done. Unusual medical problems not uncommon. (23:00)

Capt. Robert Woodhouse Dudley

The Seaforth Highlanders of Canada

The Lovat Scouts

The Loyal Edmonton Regiment

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000049
Dudley, Robert Woodhouse, Capt., 1924-1986?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Woodhouse Dudley ; interviewed by Cameron Falconer
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 16, 1983, Victoria, B.C.
(Side 1) Born on Nov. 23, 1924 in Vernon, B.C. Grew up and was attended school in Vancouver, B.C. Joined the Seaforth Highlanders of Canada cadets in 1937 and was a boy soldier in 1939. Unable to go overseas (underage), he reverted to the cadets and in 1941, on the day when he wrote his last high school exam, he signed up as a reinforcement for the Seaforths. He passed quickly through the system and, when a sergeant, in the spring of 1942 he returned from overseas and was posted to Gordon Head for officer training. After passing the advanced course at Camp Borden he was promoted to lieutenant. (Interview returns to the militia.) He was a keen cadet: two or three nights per week on training; in 1939 was the youngest soldier on parade in the guard of honour for King George VI who spoke to him. First experience in a beer parlour at summer camp (Sidney, B.C. in 1938) earned him a public spanking from his platoon sergeant. The Seaforths were a real family unit: much interest in one's civilian life. Excellent non-commissioned officers. (25:00) A great social life for the cadets and the battalion, highland games, regimental "holidays", dances, etc. (35:00) Returns to overseas experience: in 1941 he and a friend were informed by the Regimental Sergeant-Major that, because of their ages, their prospects for promotion as non-commissioned officers were very limited and that they should apply as officer candidates! Only seventeen at his Officer Selection Board, but that was no problem, since he had earlier lied about his age. Anecdotes. (45:00) Some repetitive remarks. When he returned as an officer to England he attended a beachmasters course at the Combined Operations School in Scotland. Seconded to the Lovat Scouts (4 Commando) for several months. Broke his back in a training accident and, after three months recuperation, he volunteered to join the Loyal Edmonton Regiment. At least satisfied that he had been with the Commandos on raids to Norway and France. To Italy: landed in Naples in 1944. Hitler Line in May. Very heavy fighting: his platoon suffered twenty casualties out of twenty-eight personnel. Heavy tank casualties. Great admiration for the North Irish Horse who were in support. (30:00) Battle anecdote. Gothic Line. Speaks well of German troops. The war in Italy was an infantry war, perhaps more than in northwest Europe. Comments on the family spirit of the Edmonton Regiment which still carries on. (45:00)

(Side 2) Good times and grim times. One of his corporals always wore a top hat when going into action. Naviglio Canal anecdote. Wounded in the arm. Moves to northwest Europe. In Holland on Apr. 24, 1945, led an attack on two farm buildings. Threw a grenade through an upstairs window, entered the front hall to find his grenade bouncing down the stairs toward him. Twenty-three wounds. To him, a slow-motion affair. After morphine and a shot of rum, was carried out by German prisoners. Battalion medical officer poured more rum, then by stretcher jeep to field hospital where he passed out. After V E Day, in a British hospital, in plaster, flat on his back, he volunteered to join the Pacific Force. Joined the postwar army: administrative jobs, School of Infantry. Airborne School in 1948. Joined 1st Battalion, Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry. Took a platoon of picked troops to the United States Marine Corps Amphibious Warfare School in North Carolina. The best soldiers they had ever seen! Comments on new battalions formed for Korea. In Korea Sept. 1951 as adjutant of the 1st Battalion, then commanded D Company. Much patrol activity. Compared to Europe fairly quiet, but interesting. "One was grateful to be able to take part in a war, however mundane". (37:00) The unit spent 287 days in the line without a break (a record). Quite comfortable in Korea; American supplies, good food, good cooks. Personal reaction to Korea: very relaxed, and realized then that he was a professional. After the war he took a contingent of the 1st Battalion to the Coronation in 1953. Korean medical problems often Far Eastern diseases. In his opinion American Mobile Army
Surgical Hospital units not as good as Canadian medical units. Returned to Canada to regimental duties. Medical category lowered, offered promotion and a transfer to the Service Corps. Refused and asked to be retired after twenty years service. (47:00)

Wing Commander Lancelot de Saumarez Duke

Royal Flying Corps

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000047
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Lancelot de Saumarez Duke ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 24, 28, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Oct. 3, 1896 in Ceylon (d. 1980). His father was a doctor and an early rubber plantation owner. Moved to England in 1906, then to Victoria in 1912. Brief comment on Victoria at that time, especially on a single man, working for the Merchants Bank at a salary of twenty-five dollars per month. On the outbreak of the Great War he joined the Victoria Fusiliers (88th Battalion), Canadian Expeditionary Force commanded by Lt.-Col. Cullen. Commissioned as a lieutenant. The unit was stationed at the Willows exhibition grounds. Training consisted largely of drill, route marches, and target practice at the Clover Point Range, which extended westward to Cook Street. The battalion went overseas in May 1916 via the Princess Charlotte, the train, and the White Star liner, Olympic. Shortly after his arrival he applied to the Royal Flying Corps and, after an interview board and a medical, was sent to Oxford to learn the theory of flying. After about one month he volunteered to go to France as an aerial gunner. At the gunnery school in Kent he became familiar with both the Vickers machine-gun and the Lewis gun. One month later he joined No. 35 Squadron and was sent to France in Feb. 1917. Flew in Armstrong-Whitworth aircraft, the carburetors of which had an alarming tendency to catch fire. Describes the interrupter gear for firing the Vickers through the propeller. The Lewis gun was fired from his position in the rear seat. These guns were equipped with extra large magazines holding ninety rounds together with four spare magazines. Served with No. 35 Squadron for about nine months, then took pilot training. His air experience was an advantage, particularly in identifying enemy aircraft. Points out that flying, without parachutes and with fire a constant threat, was a dangerous business. Many instructions on engines, both radial and rotary types, the
latter being much more compact. Trained at Northolt air station on Maurice Farman aircraft, then Avro two-seaters, and finally the Sopwith Pup. The Sopwith was an unreliable aircraft and one had to be constantly on the lookout for a field in which a landing was possible. In France joined No. 84 Squadron, flew SE 5 single-seater fighters with twin Vickers machine guns and a Lewis gun mounted on the upper wing. (50:00)

(Interview 2) Repeats some details of pilot training. Solo flight after twenty-nine hours of dual flying instruction. Given a booklet on aerial tactics, but no practice! By 1918 fighting in the air was much more intense. Fought against Richthofen Circus almost daily. A tiring life: two or sometimes three two-hour patrols a day. (16:00) As a novice pilot he was taught to avoid fights if possible. Mentions Canadian "Wop" May, the last pilot to escape an attack by Richthofen. During the 1918 German retreat he engaged in much ground strafing. Anecdote regarding the British retreat in March 1918. Squadron equipped with Leyland trucks and thus could move fairly rapidly. There were about twenty-five pilots and 125 ground crew to a squadron. Toward the end of the war he encountered many "green" German pilots. Comments favourably on the Wolseley Viper engine. In Apr. 1918, the day after Richthofen was killed, five British fighters attacked nine German. During the "dogfight" he was seriously wounded in the arm, but managed to fly fifteen miles to his aerodrome. (38:00)

(Side 2) Describes casualty clearing station, hospital care. After three months leave he was posted to a training squadron, but soon returned to No. 84 Squadron (Sept. 1918). After the war ended he was demobilized and farmed at Courtenay for a few years. Prior to World War II he owned the Ford motor car agency in Victoria. Joined the Royal Canadian Air Force; administrative job in Ferry Command (wing commander). Returned to Victoria car dealership. Sold it in 1950. (11:00)

Air Marshal Clarence R. Dunlap, C.B.E.

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000248
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
5 sound cassettes (ca. 470 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Air Marshal Dunlap's further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre (France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 470 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 1-3) also in archives.
Archives hold additional interviews with Air Marshal Dunlap. Reels include 745 min. of interviews conducted by D. Ganzer, Dec. 6, 1979, Jan. 10, 17, 24, Feb. 7, 14, Mar. 24, Apr. 22, 1980, Victoria, B.C., 1125 min. of interviews conducted by William S. Thackray, May 6, 13,

Record ID: 00000249
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap ; interviewed by David Ganzer
12 sound cassettes (ca. 745 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono. (nos. 6-17)
Air Marshal Dunlap's further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre (France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Six original sound tape reels (ca. 745 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 3-8) also in archives.

Record ID: 00000250
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
12 sound cassettes (ca. 1125 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono. (nos. 18-29)
Air Marshal Dunlap’s further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre (France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Seven original sound tape reels (ca. 1125 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 8-14) also in archives.
Record ID: 00000251
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap; interviewed by Dr. R.H. Roy
6 sound cassettes (ca. 515 min.): standard, 2 track, mono. (nos. 30-35)
Air Marshal Dunlap's further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre (France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 515 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 15-18) also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 2, 8, 16, 23, 30, Aug. 20, Sept. 3, 1981.

Record ID: 00000252
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap; interviewed by J.L. Cross
4 sound cassettes (ca. 250 min.): standard, 2 track, mono. (nos. 36-39)
Air Marshal Dunlap's further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre (France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 250 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 19-20) also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Dec. 1, 10, 1981.

Record ID: 00000253
Dunlap, Clarence R., Air Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence R. Dunlap; interviewed by Chris Bell
4 sound cassettes (ca. 365 min.): standard, 2 track, mono. (nos. 40-43)
Air Marshal Dunlap's further distinctions include the Silver Star (U.S.A.) and Croix de Guerre
(France).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 365 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. (nos. 21-22) also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Mar. 1, 10, 17, Apr. 21, 1983.

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by Chris D. Main) Air Marshal Dunlap was born in Cape Breton, N.S., on January 1, 1908. A tenth generation Canadian whose forebears came from the United States as early as 1761. Family and schooling. Electrical engineering degree. Some comment on early aviation in the Maritimes, and his subsequent interest. Canadian Air Board, beginning of the Canadian Air Force, early trans-Atlantic flight. (95:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Formation of the Royal Canadian Flying Clubs, the government supplying some aircraft. Joined the Royal Canadian Air Force in response to visit by recruiters to the university (1928). Describes Camp Borden, flying training, purchasing uniforms, customs of the service, pay, mess life, etc. (80:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Posted to Jericho Beach, Vancouver in 1929. Qualified on "sea-planes". Impressions of Vancouver, air station, old aircraft. Vickers Vidette flying boats and the de Haviland Gypsy Moth (on floats) coming into service. After five weeks of training, posted to Ottawa for general delivery and photographic missions. Delivered Vidette from Montreal to Manitoba. RCAF employed in crop and forest dusting. (95:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Dusting operations, photo detachment in Nova Scotia, search and rescue missions in Quebec. Took advanced photographic course preparatory to four year's work in that field. (35:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Comments on the Avro 504N aircraft used in flying training at Camp Borden in 1928. Awarded his Wings in April, 1929. Comments on the very limited finances available to the RCAF. Montreal airport. The Depression, and the reduction in RCAF personnel in 1932. Photo survey of the Queen Charlotte Islands and Northern Vancouver Island. (90:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2, interviewed by David Ganzer) Coastal population of Japanese, in particular Queen Charlotte City in 1932. Social contacts. Photo survey, equipment, methods, etc. Became chief photo instructor at Ottawa in 1934. Comments on search and rescue, parachutes, survival equipment, emergency procedures. (90:00)
(Reel 4, Side 1) Search for downed aircraft on the Pacific Coast. Camp Borden, 1934: history, plan, wartime buildings, married quarters, some flyers. Armament officer's course. Aircraft as trainers. (90:00)

(Reel 4, Side 2) Some N.C.O. characters. Bomber training. Reserve Air Force. Social life and mess activities very important. Describes the original officers' mess at Camp Borden. Formal mess dinners, service customs, subjects for discussion, games, singing. (90:00)

(Reel 5, Side 1) Social activities. Controlled card games. Social graces considered part of training. Use of calling cards - to all married officers, neighbouring messes. Trades training at Camp Borden. Automobile trip to Vancouver. Selected to attend an armament course in England. Describes. (95:00)

(Reel 5, Side 2) Digresses to discuss Dunlap "family tree", had an ancestor who graduated from Harvard in the 1660's. Eastchurch Air Station (England) in 1935. Comments on aircraft, including the Westland Wapiti, Hawker bi-planes. The RCAF considers buying second-hand RAF aircraft. Voiced an unpopular opinion on the Wapiti, not knowing that the RCAF had just purchased several. Describes training, armament development, ballistics, bombing patterns. Mess life at Eastchurch, commanders, buildings, and other features. (90:00)

(Reel 6, Side 1) Continues with Eastchurch, the officer's quarters, batmen, "dining-in" nights in the mess, uniforms, games, food quality. Considerable hospitality by the senior officers. Married fiance from Vancouver and honeymooned in Italy. Describes the quarters of the Air Officer Commanding, an ex-royal palace. (90:00)

(Reel 6, Side 2) Social events. Considers courses in Great Britain to be valuable educational and social events. Ceremonials during the Silver Jubilee of King George V, Spithead Review, Aldershot Tattoo, Funeral of George V. Visits the Woolwich Arsenal, armoured plate manufacturing in Sheffield using antiquated machinery. Some new armament manufacturing equipment purchased in Germany. Air defence of Great Britain, 1935/36. Back to Canada, appointed to the Long Armament Course (2 years) in 1937/38. (90:00)

(Reel 7, Side 1) Digresses to read a letter from a relative in Rhodesia at the time of independence. Posted again to Eastchurch for the Long Armament Course. Acquired further knowledge of ballistics, armament engineering, design, internal/external forces affecting bombs, shells, and bullets. Much pure mathematics. Armament school moves to Lincolnshire. Attended first New Years levee by George VI, in full dress uniform. The course indicated to him just how unprepared for war Britain really was. Describes the married quarters at Eastchurch - central heating only in rooms without fireplaces! (90:00) (Note - No Side 2)

(Reel 8, Side 1, interviewed by W. S. Thackray) Attended an anti-gas course, visiting munitions factories. New, automated armament machinery purchased in Germany. Helped develop new practice bomb for the RCAF. Shortage of funds in the RCAF, some aircraft had to be grounded. Comments on various aircraft including a few modern machines - Hawker Hurricane for one. Canadian air defences in 1939; both West and East Coast air bases. Returns to account of marriage in England, which he did without Air Force permission, being only an acting flight
lieutenant. Penalized with the loss of one year's seniority. Upon return to Canada joined headquarters staff as an armament advisor to the Air Staff. Commanded the guard at Rideau Hall during the visit of the King and Queen in 1939. (90:00)

(Reel 8, Side 2) Social life at the RCAF Mess, Rockcliffe. Vigorous efforts by the RCAF were required in order to prepare for war. Warning orders sent to bases in late August, 1939. Aircraft moved from Central Canada to both coasts. Auxiliary squadrons. Flying clubs did much elementary flying training. Early plans for the British Commonwealth Air Training Plan (BCATP). At air force headquarters at the outbreak of war. Comments on aircraft procurement from the United States. (90:00)

(Reel 9, Side 1) Armament Officers in relatively short supply but was able to expand his staff to some degree. Besides the requirement for new equipment, bombing and gunnery ranges had to be established. Comments on Americans enlisting in the RCAF. Armament equipment sometimes difficult to obtain, sometimes due to an aversion to spend large amounts of money! Describes some weird war-time inventions offered to the government. Problems reaching final agreement on the BCATP, division of costs, etc. (95:00)

(Reel 9, Side 2) Canadians insisted that Canadian units be formed overseas. BCATP agreement finally approved. Pressure had to be brought to bear to improve "Canadianization" overseas. Comments on senior officers and the work of the Armament Directorate. Left Air Force headquarters in January, 1942. (90:00)

(Reel 10, Side 1) Defence of the aluminum plant at Arvida, Quebec - a priority, thus the air base at Bagotville. Describes new bomb-sights; the Sperry Gyroscope and the Norden model. These effectively incorporated such variables as wind, air and ground speeds, distance (through triangulation). Commands the Air Armament School and the Bombing and Gunnery School at Mountain View, Ont. Aircraft maintenance and support services required "around the clock". Camera gun training. (95:00)

(Reel 10, Side 2) Anecdotes. British prizes for early flights. Comments on Mountain View, defence of the West Coast, Wings parades, inspections. Complimentary about the Women's Division (RCAF(WD)), a very useful addition. Cases of lack of air discipline. In August, 1942, was posted overseas - Ferry Command to England. (95:00)

(Reel 11, Side 1) Speech to the Convention of Aviation Museum Curators in Ottawa, June, 1980. First flights, early history, Canadian Air Force. (95:00)

(Reel 11, Side 2) Atlantic flights, Snyder races, development of the Supermarine Spitfire. Arrived overseas at Prestwick, Scotland, reported to RCAF headquarters in London. Makes the point that RCAF squadrons overseas had a large component of RAF ground-crew. Eventually the Canadians were able to provide nearly all ground/station personnel. Early days of the formation of No. 6 Bomber Group. Comments on equipment, some officers. Appointed commanding officer of the base at Leamington. (90:00)
(Reel 12, Side 1) On Jan. 1, 1943, No. 6 Bomber Group came into being. Much training still required. Relations with Bomber Command. The base at Leeming had a satellite station at Skipton. Originally Leeming had one squadron of Handley Page Halifaxes (No. 408) and a heavy conversion unit. Duties at an operational station, attitude of air-crew and of senior officers. Believes that the latter should have operational experience. Flew as a co-pilot on an operation. Station routine, bombing-up, briefing air-crew, mining operations, station defences. Discusses operations, visitors to the station. (95:00)

(Reel 12, Side 2) Operational air-crews, 1943. The initiation of the "Window" anti-radar system, pieces of aluminum dropped to confuse the enemy radar. In 1943 appointed to command the new 331 Wing RCAF (Vickers Wellington Mk. X bombers) in North Africa, the first truly all-Canadian Wing. Issued new, desert-modified aircraft. Despite the careful selection of personnel, morale tended to suffer because of the heat (110 degrees F), poor food, illness, flies, etc. Discusses the role of the padre. Hepatitis broke out among the air-crew. Explains difficulties in establishing air fields in Tunisia. Finally built for them by the U.S. Army Engineers after the Wing staff had laid out the runways, roads, building sites. (95:00)

(Reel 13, Side 1) Recap. of the posting of 331 Wing to North Africa. Air Field "built" in the desert in 48 hours. Ready for operations June 24, 1943. Undertook continuous bombing of Sicily. High temperatures had a poor effect on both men and machines. Food and quarters poor, sickness. (95:00)
(Reel 13, Side 2) Navigational problems, targets, aircraft maintenance difficult. Virtually continuous operational flying, therefore air-crew tours rapidly expired. As C.O., Dunlap was required to keep "Canadianization" in mind but had to use British and Commonwealth air-crews due to casualties and expired tours. Thus was not popular at RCAF headquarters. Water supply a problem, both short and very poor quality. Comments on Mediterranean Air Force headquarters. Some problems with the satellite airfield. Extreme heat in petrol and bomb dumps. (95:00)

(Reel 14, Side 1) No. 331 Wing operations. Comments on Maj-Gen. James Doolittle, U.S. Army Air Corps. Acquired early model Hawker Hurricane as personal aircraft. Wing disbanded and ordered to England, via Algiers. Appointed to command No. 139 Wing RAF at Dunsfold, Surrey, part of No. 2 Group, 2nd Tactical Air Force. Equipped with North American Mitchell bombers (B-24's). Immediately flew operational flights. Heavy flak caused many casualties. Made accurate attacks on flying bomb sites. Some special equipment provided so night bombing could be undertaken. Describes Dutch squadron in 139 Wing. (95:00) (Note: No Side 2)

(Reel 15, Side 1) (First interview, July 2, 1981 - Dr. R.H. Roy) Refers again to attack on a rocket site near Cherbourg. Composition of No. 2 Group, RAF. Ground and air communications. Location of and avoidance of flak batteries. The GEE navigation system. Americans bomb Canadian army in Normandy, then the RAF does the same. Points out the great difficulty in controlling Bomber Command from the ground. Describes precision bombing by 139 Wing. (Second interview, July 8, 1981) Comments on Wing Commander Rod Bell-Irving, killed in action. Many keen officers, one Norwegian insisted on flying continuously, 100 sorties. Recalls that one officer accumulated 198 sorties. Wing moved to Belgium in October 1944. Returns to account of D-Day operations. The Wing operated in Europe largely in support of the army. (95:00) (Note: No Side 2)
(Reel 16, Side 1) Unusable as recorded at 15/16 IPS.

(Reel 16, Side 2) Same interview at 1 7/8 IPS (Dr. R.H. Roy). This interview is in answer to questions posed by Dr. W.A.B. Douglas, Director of History, Dept. of National Defence. Comments on early aircraft. Many good types especially the Hawker biplanes of the 1930's, but deplores the use of the Westland Wapiti. Beginning of modern armament. Purchase of Curtis P-40 fighter for home defence service. Hawker Hurricanes became common in Canada. Mentions several other good aircraft. Constantly pressing the Air Ministry for latest aircraft for the RCAF, overseas. Post-war, at air force headquarters he soon found that budget restraints precluded the "military" aspects of the RCAF. Emphasis was placed on transport and communications. Discusses post-war aircraft. American sources of supply seemed better than the British. Advantages of North American integration. (95:00)

(Reel 17, Side 1) Refers to Dunsfold air field construction. Canadians in 139 Wing RAF. Anecdotes. Operations in Belgium (at Melsbroek) near Brussels, an ex-German air field damaged, but of high quality. Discusses "Fido", fog dispersal system. In January, 1945, was promoted to air commodore and posted to No. 6 Bomber Group at Middleton St. George. (80:00)

(Reel 17, Side 2) Remarks about 139 Wing. Numbering of Canadian squadrons. Reads an account of flying daylight operation into the Continent. A Mitchell is shot down by friendly aircraft. Briefing for D-Day. Attacked Normandy just after midnight 5/6 June, 1944. Attacked rail yards in Normandy. Headquarters of 21 Panzer Division destroyed at LaCaine on June 10, 1944. Comments on the frequent changes in squadron commanders as they became "tour expired". Some experience in night bombing. Flew to France to a conference and to reconnoitre for a suitable air field for the Mitchells. Eventually found Melsbroek. Landed first Allied aircraft at Antwerp. (95:00)

(Reel 18, Side 1) Leaves Brussels on Jan. 22, 1945, to return to Bomber Command. Notes the changes compared to 1943, including the expansion to 13 operational squadrons and 4 heavy conversion units to accommodate the constant training of new air-crew. All Canadian-built Lancaster X's a great change in tactics and equipment. Discusses the German defensive radar. RAF/RCAF evasion tactics. The German radar-controlled flak caused heavy losses, which were somewhat reduced by the use of "Window". German counter measures. The special No. 10 Group with 50% fighters, later de Havilland Mosquito carrying Serrate radar which was effective against night fighters. "Corona", a powerful radar-jamming device carried in airborne radar stations. Rate of loss reduced and morale climbed. Senior officers, operational and administrative "types". (80:00)

(Reel 18, Side 2) The occupation of Europe meant less enemy territory to overfly. Bomber Command returned to day-bombing. Structure of command system, staff positions, etc. Heavy raids undertaken in March, 1945. Considerable number of mining operations. Some shortage of targets noted due to widespread destruction. Ordered back to Canada as Deputy Air Member for Air Staff, Plans and Operations. Arrived the day the war ended. Comments on the effectiveness of Bomber Command. As accuracy improved, fewer aircraft could produce the same damage as a much larger force. Tiger Force: the Group formed to go to the Far East. Emphasizes the importance of operational experience in staff appointments. (70:00)
(Reel 19, Side 1) Deputy Member for Air Staff. Leave in Vancouver. Familiarization flights through B.C. and to the Northwest Staging Route (Edmonton). Formation of the peace-time air force. A heavy bomber force deemed to be too expensive. Emphasis placed on transport, photographic and survey work with the Auxiliary Air Force to be more "military". Selection of officers. The North West Staging Route. (95:00)

(Reel 19, Side 2, interviewed by J. L. Cross) Observes the atomic tests at Bikini Atoll. Describes this in some detail. (30:00)

(Reel 20, Side 1) Immediate post-war period. Senior Air Force officers and service chiefs. Canada/U.S. joint defence, planning, intelligence, etc. In September 1947, posted for one year to the National War College in Washington D.C. A semi-civilian status as a foreign student. Describes living conditions in Washington. Staff of the war college, guest speakers, etc. (95:00)

(Reel 20, Side 2) National War College. Appointed commandant of the National Defence College at Kingston, Ont. Anecdote. (30:00)

(Reel 21, Side 1) (Interviews by Chris Bell - not part of this series. Some duplication of material in earlier interviews.) Pre-war social life. Establishment of the RCAF. Photographic detachments. Service in the Queen Charlotte Islands. Marriage. Ground rules for officer's promotion. (95:00)

(Reel 21, Side 2, interviewed by Chris Bell) The air force in the 1920/1930's, junior officer's quarters, social life centred in the mess, games and dinners. Married quarters. Mess customs, attendance required at functions, food and drink. Sports considered an important activity. (95:00)

(Reel 22, Side 1) Social aspects; some characters. The officer's mess at Rockcliffe. The general lack of funds for the forces. In the 1950's considers that the cancellation of the Avro Arrow fighter aircraft was a "disaster". Chaplain services. Customs of the mess for officers and their wives, considered to be part of their social education. It was important to have a career asset in one's wife. (95:00)

(Reel 22, Side 2) Uniform requirements, including full dress. A walking stick was required uniform in the pre-war era. Mess kit. Batmen. In those days, worked closely with the army. Side arms for officers: only carried one in North Africa, not because of the enemy, but because of the "friendly" natives! General remarks. (80:00)

Chief Petty Officer (C.P.O.) (Mrs.) Meriel Joyce Dunn

Women's Royal Naval Service

Record ID: 00000046
Dunn, Meriel Joyce, Mrs., C.P.O., 1922-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Meriel Joyce Dunn ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 31, 1979,

Born in 1922 in Leicestershire, England. Joined the Wrens in Feb. 1941 and took her basic training at the Royal Naval College, Greenwich. Recruited for some secretive job, the location of which (Bletchley Park) was not revealed until she and others were on a train leaving London. Everybody was so security conscious that this seemed normal. They were part of the first, and experimental, group of Wrens at Bletchley. Billeted in private homes outside the park. They found the staff to be a strange and cosmopolitan group. From all services and backgrounds, people obviously "all brains", some so brilliant that they seemed to be "on the [mental] border". (11:00) "Bombe" was the general name for the code breaking machines, although each had a specific name: hers was "Agnes". A "bombe" received a menu or list taken from the wireless coded message which indicated how the "bombe" rotors should be adjusted. This method set up a pattern or possible combination of code letters. Much enemy information was strictly routine, but all had to be decoded. The German codes were changed every twenty-four hours, therefore speed was essential. The work went on day and night. (20:00) Eventually several out-stations were built as facilities expanded. The Wrens worked eight-hour shifts under a controller, which Mrs. Dunn eventually became. Later health problems caused her to be assigned to day shift only. In time the staff outgrew private homes and were housed in large converted homes nearby. Security strict, but low-key: nobody talked about their work. (30:00) Mentions several prominent chess players who worked there. Found that weekly shift changes caused physical problems. Longer shift periods would have been better. No promotion to officer level among the Wrens at Bletchley. By the end of the war she was a chief petty officer at an annual salary of 110 pounds sterling. They worked in a windowless brick and concrete building. The machines made a fairly loud "clicking" noise, but not enough to be a problem. General discussion of life and work. After about three years she moved (in 1944) to a small out-station where she was in charge of about a dozen "bombe"s. (46:00) The operation stopped the day the war ended. Sometimes security was so great at Bletchley that the services could not be persuaded that the information received was correct. (10:00) Describes the small out-station with direct teleprinter link with Bletchley. At the end of the war went to Stanmore, a larger station beginning to shut down. (13:00) Discharged in Sept. 1945 with the admonition that the Official Secrets Act was still in force. Comments on mixed feelings as, in later years, security matters became public. (20:00)

Capt. George V. Eckenfelder

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals.

Record ID: 00000066
Eckenfelder, George V., Capt., 1910-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by George V. Eckenfelder ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
Born in Alberta on May 22, 1910. Graduated from university in 1933 with a degree in civil engineering. Employed in a junior supervisory position in the unemployment camps. Later joined Calgary Power as an engineer. Enlisted in the 13th District Signals (militia) in 1938 and went "active" as a second lieutenant with the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division signals unit in May 1940. Gives a description of the divisional signals establishment. Trained at Barriefield Camp, Kingston, Ont. Remembers there was considerable telephone equipment, but wireless equipment in very short supply. Moved to Debert, N.S. after six months. Posted to 14th Field Regiment, Royal Canadian Artillery where the importance of field signals training was emphasized. Overseas in July 1941. (30:00) Describes the inadequate barrack facilities at Aldershot. Much telephone training as wireless equipment still not adequate. Great improvement when No. 11 sets were issued, a stable, robust wireless set. In Feb. 1943 was sent to North Africa for battle experience with the British 1st Army, although too late to take part in any fighting. Comments on British technical officers who, he considers, were better trained than Canadian ones. On course the instructors were the best; not always so in the Canadian Army. Comments on discipline. (45:00) Due to the heat training started at 5:00 a.m. and lasted until 1:00 p.m. when the afternoons became free. Returned to England in Aug. 1943. Posted to the 7th Infantry Brigade as a captain. Comments on Brig. Churchill Mann and Brig. Harry Foster, both of whom he held in high regard. Spent three months training on the Isle of Wight, then to a concentration area north of Southampton where, with a minimum of confusion, they moved directly to their ships for the invasion. (10:00) Describes the trip to France and D-Day as part of the Brigade Headquarters. (20:00) Comments on the progress of the advance in Normandy. Recalls his experience of being captured by a group of by-passed Germans who, despite occupying a large cave and strong defensive position, after a day, surrendered to him as senior officer prisoner. After Falaise the 3rd Division moved on to Boulogne and Calais. (31:00) Captured coast defence guns during which attack "flail" tanks were used to open the minefields. Describes a major German underground telephone exchange. (35:00) Was present at interesting interrogations of prisoners accused of "war crimes". Moved to the Scheldt Estuary, remaining there until Nov. 1944. Comments on Belgium; the entire division were guests of the citizens of Ghent for two days. Nijmegen. (45:00) Transferred to Army Troops Headquarters. Work not as interesting, but more comfortable. Describes the sight of starving people in Amsterdam. Returned to Aldershot. Mentions Canadians rioting over delays in repatriation. Returned to Canada in Sept. 1945. Rehired by Calgary Power as an engineer. Expresses admiration for the British civilian population during air attacks. (12:00)

Lt.-Col. John S. Edmondson

The South Saskatchewan Regiment
Record ID: 00000168
Edmondson, John S., Lt.-Col., 1919-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John S. Edmondson ; interviewed by Chris Bell
5 sound cassettes (ca. 345 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 345 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 6, Aug. 4 and 12, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Aug. 17, 1919 at Estevan, Sask. Joined the South Saskatchewan Regiment (militia) at the age of fifteen. In Jan. 1938 enlisted in Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry as a private. Took basic training with the unit. Compared peacetime and wartime service. When the regiment was sent overseas in 1939 he, and others, were posted to Calgary as instructors. In Jan. 1941 he was commissioned as a second lieutenant in the South Saskatchewan Regiment and given seventy-two hours notice for overseas. In England comments on short rations during the winter of 1941/1942 and general difficulties in shaping the unit into an effective one. (45:00) Lt.-Col. C.C.I. Merritt was commanding officer. Combined operations training before the raid on Dieppe. Pre-raid intelligence not as good as it might have been. Second-in-command of his company during the attack. (22:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) The objective of "D" Company was a farm about four miles inland, near Pourville. Explains specific duties as second-in-command, including that of last man off the beach upon withdrawal. The attack: blown off the road, probably by a mortar bomb, when he was about to charge across the bridge over the Scie River. (20:00) Evacuated to Newhaven by landing craft, tank, one of only eight members of "D" Company to return to England. (35:00) Discusses weapons, including a method of firing the two-inch mortar from the hip. (45:00) Promoted to captain and, in early 1944, to major. General discussion on proposals to invade Europe, lessons learned at Dieppe. Communications and leadership battle drill valuable. (31:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Some details of pre-D-Day security measures, training, etc. Landed in Normandy during the first week of July 1944. In reserve, then moved through Caen to participate in their first attack before Verrières Ridge. German tanks attacked through wheat field. Heavy casualties and considerable disorganization. (25:00) Reinforcements. Weapons. Temporary command of somewhat demoralized battalion. (45:00) Fighting at Rocquancourt. Some criticism of senior officers who lacked battlefield experience at the battalion level. Bombed by friendly forces before Falaise. In Falaise his jeep blown up by an anti-tank mine; both eardrums broken as well as one foot. Evacuated to England. (24:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Partially recovered, returned to Canada. Attached to the Canadian Scottish Regiment in 1947, having reverted to captain in the Interim Force. Staff college. Directorate of Military Training. Promoted to major. Discusses the methods of the military bureaucracy. Appointed to the Black Watch as second-in-command upon its reorganization. Very heavy administration and training schedule which may have contributed to an ulcer. Posted as general staff officer, grade 2 (operations and training) in Winnipeg. In 1957 Deputy Adjutant and Quartermaster General with 4th British Division in Germany - a valuable learning experience. As lieutenant-colonel he was made Assistant Adjutant and Quartermaster General (operations and
plans) at the Directorate of Military Training. Staff college in the United States. Comments on integration and unification. (43:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Mobile Command planning staff. Organizing headquarters required long hours and there was considerable dissension. Logistics position in Vancouver. Sent to Pakistan as a United Nations observer in 1970. Mentions involvement in the courts-martial (1946) of Canadian prisoners of war who collaborated with the Japanese during the war. Some jail sentences were handed down. Comments on his army career. (36:00)

Dr. (Lieut.-Col.) K. Edmundson
Royal Army Medical Corps
East Africa Medical Services

Record ID: 00000050
Edmundson, K., Lt.-Col., M.D., 1903-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by K. Edmundson ; interviewed by David Gantzer
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 4 and 11, 1980, Sidney, B.C.

Born on March 17, 1903 in Birkenhead, Eng. Brought up in Liverpool, graduated from Liverpool University in medicine in Dec. 1926. Joined the Sudan Medical Service, transferred to east Africa in 1928. As he had been a reserve Officer in the Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders, he was automatically on active service when war broke out in 1939. Joined 1st Tanganyika Field Ambulance as a surgeon. Sent to Nairobi to train Africans in hospital work and to write a training manual. Next commanded the Uganda Motor Ambulance Convoy and took part in the Ethiopian Campaign. Moved north, 240 miles from Addis Ababa: morale problems, vehicle problems due to heat, excellent Italian-built roads. In March 1942 commanded the East African Medical Depot. Comments on surgical equipment, primitive anesthesia. Medical problems, bullet and knife wounds, intestinal worms from meat, tropical diseases. None of the latter in central Ethiopia due to the high altitude. General comments on transportation.

(2nd interview) At Nairobi had a mixed R.A.M.C./African staff. Eighteen months later given command of a 750-bed mobile hospital. Serious shortage of stores. For example, moved to Burma with only one quarter of their authorized number of beds. Convoy from Mombasa during which everybody was ordered to sunbathe every day in order to become acclimatized. In India managed to achieve fifty percent bed level after much effort. Comments on Assam railway, efficiently run by Americans. Hospital in northeast Assam, near Imphal, where he was stationed for nine months. Returned to east Africa, summer of 1945. Describes trip by air to Mombasa. Demobilized. Additional comments re Assam hospital. Mostly concerned with medical side,
much fever of various kinds, especially river fever. (45:00) Anecdotes. Requests interview with G.O.C. Convoy conditions: shipboard food not very good. Anecdote about Mountbatten and man-management.


Royal Canadian Air Force

Canadian Forces (Air)

Record ID: 00000207
Edwards, Gerald John James, Maj.-Gen., D.F.C., C.D., 1921-1989
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Gerald John James Edwards ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
8 sound cassettes (ca. 690 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 690 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives [fifth original reel has been lost -- no transcript but summary available.]
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 13, 20, July 4, 18, Aug. 1, 17, 22, and 29, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Oct. 4, 1921 in Sudbury, Ont (d. Jan. 1, 1989, Sidney, B.C.). Brought up and educated in Ottawa. There he joined the Royal Canadian Air Force (R.C.A.F.) and, just after his nineteenth birthday, was called up in Oct. 1940. Sent to the Manning Depot at Brandon, Man., followed by initial flying training at Regina and Prince Albert, Sask. in Feb 1941. Describes his personal concerns, training, heavy winter clothing. Service Flying Training School (S.F.T.S.), Dauphin, Man. where the North American Harvard training aircraft severely tested the student's flying skills. Experiences; students taught navigation, air frames, engines, emergency procedures. "Wash-out" rate increased as well as flying deaths. (45:00) Awarded his wings in summer 1941, then, as a sergeant-pilot, was sent to the Central Flying School at Trenton, Ont. to take a flying instructors course. Most of his air crew class became flying instructors due to the considerable demands of the British Commonwealth Air Training Plan. Posted to No. 13 S.F.T.S., Saint-Hubert, Que. as an instructor. Demonstrates the standard, memorized "patter" used by all instructors. In a somewhat dull service instructed for nearly two years, but was buoyed by the knowledge that some regular movement overseas existed. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) In some cases good flying weather in Canada did not prepare trainees for poor European weather. Too many accidental losses overseas caused the hours of training to be extended in Canada. Commissioned in July 1942. Promoted to flying officer in Feb. 1943 and drafted overseas. Describes routine aboard the troop transport, Queen Mary. Assigned to Bomber Command. Trained on twin-engined Armstrong-Whitworth Whitley bombers at Advanced Flying and Operational Training Units. At the latter he experienced his first operational flight against a target near Paris (Dec. 1943). In Jan. 1944 he was posted to a conversion unit (Handley
Page Halifax bombers), then to No. 428 Squadron, R.C.A.F. at Middleton St. George (45:00). Initially targets were rail-yards and coastal mining operations, the latter called "gardening". High morale of the air crew. Comments on the award of the Distinguished Flying Cross and other decorations. By Aug. 1944 promoted to squadron leader and wing commander in October. Describes ground crew, procedures after an operation, debriefing, reaction to casualties. Lack of moral fibre sometimes a problem which might necessitate that certain air crew members be sent to a disciplinary unit where conditions were made sufficiently unpleasant so that the continuance of an operational tour would appear as an attractive option. Remarks on the bravery of some air crew. (40:00)

((Reel 2, Side 1) Comments on No. 6 Bomber Group and the lack of R.C.A.F. officers in high authority. Feels that this gave an impetus in later years to closer association with the United States Air Force (U.S.A.F.). Considerable effort made to enhance air crew morale. Tactics over targets, fuel consumption, landings, brake usage, evasion tactics, escape procedures, etc. Describes amenities and social life at Middleton St. George. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) In spring 1944 the squadron did much bombing of rail-yards and mined coastal waters from Oslo Fiord to northern France. Squadron issued with Avro Lancaster, Mark X bombers, made in Canada. On June 15 made their first daylight raid which was against Boulogne. Comments on fighter escort, wireless, aircraft casualties, flak and flak "belts" on operational maps, night fighters, etc. Describes the flying pattern made by night bombers which was only limited by altitude and timing. Effectiveness of bombing, techniques used, precision required when bombing in occupied countries. (45:00) Participated in a bombing attack during the Canadian Army advance to Falaise on Aug. 14, 1944. Had been instructed that great care must be taken. During the raid he observed that other aircraft were bombing short of the target. Besides causing much damage and casualties to our own troops, those involved were in serious trouble. His aircraft, and all others of 428 Squadron, placed their bombs accurately, and this was confirmed by photographs. Remembers a great feeling of anger against those who had made such a serious mistake. Last operation on Oct. 6, 1944. Appointed to command No. 420 Squadron, part of a six squadron group. Converted to Halifax III's, but not allowed to fly in operations as too many senior flyers had been lost due to enemy action. Given a one-week administrative course and luckily given a very efficient squadron adjutant. (43:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) In command for only a few weeks, then appointed Wing Commander (Operations) at local headquarters. Describes operational briefings, coordination of operational policies and practices. Transferred to No. 6 Bomber Group headquarters as an operational controller. At the end of the war became involved with Tiger Force proposed for bomber operations against Japan. On May 26, 1945 became directly involved in returning squadrons of this force to Canada. (45:00) Tiger Force disbanded, effective on V-J Day. Discussion of Bomber Command in general. Devastating attack on Dresden was deemed to be a very successful operation.

(Reel 3, Side 2) Applied to join the Interim Air Force. In March 1946 attended the R.C.A.F. staff college in Toronto. Reverted to squadron leader, posted to air force headquarters in Ottawa. Constant battle to plan for a reduced, but viable, air force. Seconded to the U.S.A.F. in Washington, D.C. In 1950 became military secretary to the Privy Council Office. Operated as
secretary to a number of committees and assistant secretary to the Chiefs of Staff Committee. Valuable career moves. Promoted again to wing commander.

(Reel 4, Side 1) Additional details of Privy Council position. In part, acted as liaison with the secretariat of the Chiefs of Staff Committee. Dealt with the "War Book", the manual of government action to be taken in the event of war. Another was the Protection of Vital Points Committee, action to be taken, departmental instructions, etc. Korean War period: small air force participation. The 1950's were an expensive period for the Department of National Defence. New equipment, more personnel. Dividing the finances between services was very difficult, but the air force was successful partly due to a unified point of view. The army, in particular, presented a fractured case (too many arms competing for equipment). Only unfortunate air force acquisition was the CF-5 fighter aircraft, the purchase of which was dictated by the Minister of National Defence, Paul Hellyer. Returned to an operational command as commanding officer of No. 435 Squadron (Transport) in Edmonton. Much flying in the North using Douglas C-47 Dakota aircraft. When the Fairchild C-119 Flying Boxcar came into service they became involved with Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry in paratrooper training and air support. Flew large quantities of oil fuel to the Arctic islands. Appointed a senior staff officer in Transport Command. Mentions that No. 408 Squadron completed the Geodetic Survey of Canada which was started by the air force prior to World War II. Appointed to the directing staff of the Royal Air Force Staff College in England. Remembers the great shock upon the collapse of the Avro Arrow project. Discusses the heavy cost of repair and replacement of aircraft.

(Reel 4, Side 2) In 1959 rejoined the Air Transport Command as a group captain and deputy commander. New Canadian Yukon transport aircraft purchased plus five other types. Major additions to ground-handling equipment required. Air Force was, and still is, aware of its incapability to supply and sustain any wartime activity. Attitudes toward operational movement and the current necessity of vastly enlarged peacetime movements -- not the least of which involves movement of dependants. It is a military "catch-twenty-two" situation to some extent. In 1963-1964 attended the National Defence College. Extremely valuable on the political, economic and international levels. Integration of the armed forces was announced at this time and did not cause too much concern. Appointed to R.C.A.F. headquarters in "postings and careers". (45:00) Found it difficult to formulate a single armed forces promotion policy in view of the heavy emphasis by the army and navy on seniority. The air force was least affected by unification due to its traditionally more functional outlook. Appointed to headquarters, Mobile Command as an air commodore. Great state of flux, the army size was shrinking, regiments disbanded, etc. Brought home the "clash of cultures" between the services. A very demanding time with much unrewarding work often due to policy changes emanating from national defence headquarters. Superimposed was the bicultural/bilingual policy which was, and is, not a very successful military requirement.

(Reel 5, Side 1) Experienced what made soldiers "tick": tradition, strong military family relationship, very good leadership, strong non-commissioned officer cadre, high professionalism. Much difficulty occurred because of inter-corps rivalry for a share of the equipment allocation. Harmful to the army as equipment acquisition was slowed. In 1969 posted to the directing staff at the National Defence College. Appointed air attache in Washington, D.C. in summer 1970. Achieved an excellent and friendly relationship with the Americans, although some variance due
to current political atmosphere was occasionally noticeable. There was a special relationship between commonwealth attaches. Felt that sources of information were becoming less generous as the Canadian defence posture and capability grew smaller. Public safety in Washington became a worrying factor. Lived very defensively. "Renegade blacks" were a real problem and the international community required special National Executive Police to patrol the national enclaves. After four years was glad to escape from Washington. Promoted to major general and appointed commandant of the National Defence College. A special ending to a career. Retired in 1976 and moved to Victoria. Interested in charitable and community work. Not particularly proud of the Canadian military stance (1979), but considers it very necessary to keep an interest in it. Mutual and balanced force reductions are the only secure way to a peaceful existence.

(60:00)

Lt.-Col. Eric Henry William Elkington, M.D.

Canadian Army Medical Corps

Royal Army Medical Corps

Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps

Record ID: 00000169
Elkington, Eric Henry William, Lt.-Col., M.D., 1893-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Eric Henry William Elkington;
interviewed by William S. Thackray
3 sound cassettes (ca. 240 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 280 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives hold an additional interview with Lt.-Col. Elkington. Reel includes 60-min. interview conducted by Dr. Reginald H. Roy, Jan. 24, 1986, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 16, 23 and July 2, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000170
Elkington, Eric Henry William, Lt.-Col., M.D., 1893-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Eric Henry William Elkington;
interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with Lt.-Col. Elkington. Reel includes 280 min. of interviews conducted by William S. Thackray, June 16, 23 and July 2, 1980.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Jan. 24, 1986.
(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by William S. Thackray) Born on June 1, 1893 in Duncan, B.C. In 1914 he finished the second year of medical studies at McGill University and joined the 6th Canadian Field Ambulance in Montreal. After a few months he proceeded overseas as part of the 2nd Canadian Division. First in the line in the Ypres salient where he worked as a stretcher-bearer at an advanced dressing station. Trench warfare conditions. In late 1916 the government sent all second and third year medical students back to Canada to finish their medical studies. (20:00) Graduated in 1918, sent to Vancouver for transport to Siberia with a hospital unit. Canadian Siberian Expeditionary Force. Description of Vladivostok, refugees, Allied forces, Bolsheviks. General medical problems were the norm; almost no war casualties. The Canadians were withdrawn in mid-1919. Returned to Montreal for postgraduate work. (45:00) Joined the British army and served for eighteen years. Medical research in England. Posted to Iraq which was climatically very hard on Europeans. Many experiences with the native population. Transferred to Peshawar, India. Points out that medical officers had to be very careful not to impose on the religious convictions of native troops. Expedition against the Kurds. Returned to England for postgraduate work in ophthalmology, promoted to major. (48:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returns to tales of Kurdistan and India. Posted to India, from London, to act as consulting ophthalmologist for south India. Traveled through much rough country. (30:00) Did considerable volunteer eye medicine with the civilian population, many being blinded by cataracts. (45:00) Indian army hospitals very good. Many dangers for the European: climate, disease, snakes, scorpions, etc. Household and social anecdotes. Left India in 1934 for England and retired from the army in 1936 to return to Victoria to practice. Purchased house at the top of Island Road. (45:00) When war was declared in 1939 Elkington joined the Army. Lieutenant-colonel. Reverted to major in order to go overseas with the 16th Canadian General Hospital. (05:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Examines his situation at the beginning of the war. In 1942, in England, the Canadians took over a civilian hospital. Later he became consulting ophthalmologist to the Canadian army as a lieutenant-colonel and was attached to No. 8 Canadian General Hospital. Inspected Canadian hospitals on the continent in 1944/1945. New surgical procedures, penicillin, treatments. Returned to Canada and, after a little difficulty leaving the army, resumed his medical practice in Victoria. Returns to miscellaneous comments, personal experiences, Arab thieves who were extraordinarily dexterous.

(Interview 2, interviewed by R. H Roy) Elkington was educated in Duncan and Victoria, B.C., then at McGill University medical school. In Victoria he was closely associated with the family of Sir Henry Crease whom he remembers as an elderly man. In 1914 he joined a field ambulance, part of the 2nd Canadian Division, in Montreal. In France he was a sergeant in charge of a party of stretcher-bearers. Remembers working with the 29th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force. Trench life. Takes illegal "pot shots" at Germans. Discusses rats and rations in the trenches. In late 1916 was returned to Canada to complete his medical degree. After graduation the army sent him to Vladivostok. Many Russian refugees dying of starvation. A dangerous city with little civilian authority evident. Attached to 16 Canadian General Hospital [sic] (Elkington himself later confirmed that he meant to say "No. 16 Field Ambulance in Siberia in 1919" instead of "16 Canadian General Hospital"). Experiences with Japanese troops. Tale of
Maj. Ragasan, the interpreter. Medical problems were largely of the "civilian" type, not many war casualties. Remarks. (50:00)

Capt. Martin Henry Ellis

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000051
Ellis, Martin Henry, Capt., 1900-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Martin Henry Ellis ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 1 (side 1) and 3 (side 2), 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Oct. 15, 1900 in Exbury, England where his father was rector of the parish church. Went to boarding and public school, then Oxford where he took a history degree and rowed for his college. Taught at Westminster School in London for four years, then in 1926 he emigrated to Canada where, in Alberta, he tried his hand at ranching. To Vancouver Island where he taught at Shawnigan Lake School. Headmaster at Brentwood College from 1932 until the war. Joined the Navy Supplementary Reserve in 1938. (20:00) No pay or uniforms until the war began. First appointed to the examination vessel, H.M.C.S. Malaspina, then to H.M.C.S. Sans Peur (armed yacht). In Apr. 1940 posted as an instructor to H.M.C.S. Stadacona in Halifax. Overseas in Jan. 1941 to the long anti-submarine course in Scotland. In July 1941 joined H.M.C.S. Collingwood (Flower class corvette). (45:00) At Christmas appointed sea-training officer for anti-submarine exercises at Saint Margarets Bay, N.S. In command (as a lieutenant-commander) of a similar organization at Pictou, N.S. Instructor at a command and tactics course in Halifax. Appointed staff officer in H.M.S. Nene (Royal Navy frigate), part of Support Group 5. Support groups were switched from convoy to convoy as enemy action necessitated. Participated in two U-boat sinkings which were blown to the surface and destroyed by gunfire in the first instance and by scuttling in the second. (25:00)

(Side 2) Transferred to H.M.C.S. Waskesiu (frigate). Name changed to Support Group 6. He clarifies reference to attack by "buzz bombs": means glider bombs controlled by aircraft. Small convoy to Murmansk: sixteen escorts to cover three ships. On return trip lost one of six merchant ships. Appointed anti-submarine staff officer in Ottawa. (10:00) Four months later sent to anti-submarine school in H.M.C.S. Cornwallis as a commander. Describes training conditions. After V-E Day applied to be in the instructor branch of the Navy. Two years at Royal Roads. Director of Naval Education, Ottawa, 1947-49. (20:00) Comments on educational requirements for promotion (other ranks). Education officer in H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier) 1949-1951. European cruise. Instructor-captain, Ottawa. Director of Naval Intelligence, 1955-1958.
Supplied with and interpreted intelligence reports, largely from foreign sources. Staff of about ten officers plus civilian clerks. Saw a great deal of the foreign naval attaches. Connected with conferences on disarmament. Eyes opened by diplomatic manoeuvres, not very productive in formal sessions, often better "after hours". In London experiences some awkward moments during the Suez crisis. (45:00) Very general comments of some length on Canadian intelligence services. Retired in 1958. Brief spell with the Defence Research Board. Spent ten years in Spain. (40:00)

Leading E.R.A. (Engine Room Artificer) Floyd A. Fairclough

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Record ID: 00000052
Fairclough, Floyd A., Leading E.R.A., 1924-
My Naval recollections [sound recording] / by Floyd A. Fairclough ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 50 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 50 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 14, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 5, 1924 in Cut Knife, Sask. Discusses early life, jobs, education, both before and after his naval service. Enlisted in the Navy at H.M.C.S. Unicorn in Saskatoon where he underwent basic training. Then to Halifax and H.M.C.S. Cornwallis. Posted to Boston where twice he was a member of a crew delivering lend-lease destroyers to Britain. Appointed to H.M.C.S. Humberstone (Castle class corvette) and served in her from the fall of 1943 [sic] (actually was commissioned in 1944) until the ship was decommissioned in Victoria in 1945. Comments on acoustic torpedoes and defences against them. During this time moved in rank from stoker to leading engine room artificer. Describes tense engine repairs in mid Atlantic. (20:00) Fouled anti-submarine net at Saint John's harbour. Humberstone a happy ship. Did a considerable amount of boxing in the Navy (light heavyweight champion). Toured Britain as a member of the Inter-Allied Boxing Group. Sparred with Joe Lewis on one occasion. Spent four months as a member of the Canadian Shore Patrol in London. Anecdote. Enjoyed Navy social life. Comments on Shore Patrol experiences. This group was composed of eight Canadians. Fairclough, at six feet, two inches and 210 pounds, was the smallest! They were sent to London to control Canadian sailors who seemed to enjoy baiting the British Shore Patrol. (35:00) Many Canadians enjoyed a fight, but no real animosity between members of various Allied forces. Returned to the Humberstone, volunteered for the Pacific, returned to Victoria. Shipboard life, excellent cook, who remained so as long as he was given sufficient rum. Anecdotes. (45:00) Discharged in Jan. 1946 as a leading engine room artificer. Joined the Saskatoon City Police, served for four years. Began the study of law, but in 1951 joined a student recruitment company in New York. (06:00)
Sgt. William Lynn Falconer

Royal Canadian Dragoons

Record ID: 00000053
Falconer, William Lynn, Sgt., 1897-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Lynn Falconer ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Sergeant Falconer's unpublished memoirs are held in the public archives of British Columbia and of Manitoba.
The book mentioned in the interview is believed to be Brereton Greenhous, Dragoon: the
Centennial History of the Royal Canadian Dragoons, 1883-1983. Belleville, Ont.: Guild of the
Royal Canadian Dragoons, 1983.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 22, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

Born on July 14, 1897 in Manitoba. Joined the army on Aug. 6, 1914 at the age of seventeen.
Previously he had been a member of C Squadron, 18th Canadian Mounted Rifles of Morden,
Man. Left for Valcartier Camp on Aug. 20, 1914 to join the 6th Battalion, C.E.F., of which the
majority were members of Fort Garry Horse. Comments on Valcartier and the degree of
animosity that existed between various factions making up the battalion. They went overseas as
cavalry reserves, split mostly between the Strathconas and the Royal Canadian Dragoons. (10:00)
Discusses his wounding in France at the end of March 1918. At the time he was a sergeant, and
with his troop, acting as infantry. One bullet passed laterally through his back and several
through his equipment. During thirty-five months in France he had two seven-day leaves in
London and, before that, one at New Year's 1914/15 at a Scottish village to which he returned in
1964. (35:00) When he first went to France in 1915, the unit acted as infantry, first at Festubert,
and then at Messines. They all had the standard cavalry rifle, (46:00) the Short Lee Enfield.
Comments on the Ross rifle with which most Canadians were equipped. Discusses the incidence
of trench foot: cold and damp caused feet to swell; unable to put on boot if once removed. Other
illnesses, many deaths from influenza after the war. (10:00) After being wounded he was in
Basingstoke Hospital in England, then in a convalescent camp for two months. Anecdotes.
Covered for patients A.W.O.L. in London. (20:00) Early repatriation (Dec.
1918) as he was a member of the first overseas contingent and claimed that he had to return to
Manitoba to help with spring planting! Comments on some of his officers. (30:00) Mentions Pte.
A.D. Crocker of the 7th Battalion. Anecdote. Interview becomes a very general discussion on the
state of the world, religion, etc. (50:00) Studied medicine on his return to Canada.

Mrs. Gwendolen Margaret Fall

Royal Air Force Wife
"Jane" Fall was born on Feb. 16, 1920 in Folkestone, Kent, the daughter of Arthur Coode, the senior partner of a major engineering firm, Coode and Partners. A self-styled 1920s "flapper" by her own admission, a lucky and privileged upper-class life. (11:00) Comments on the circumstances of her marriage and the social customs of the thirties in England. (22:00) Describes life as a service wife in the pre-war Royal Air Force. Posted to Malta where Joe Fall commanded an air station. Moved to Alexandria, Egypt when the war started. (35:00) From there service families were sent to Jerusalem for safety. Later they were moved to South Africa where Mrs. Fall and her children lived in a ramshackle old house with another service family. "Good school, wonderful beach, very little rationing": a much better life than in wartime England, despite the housing inconveniences. (45:00) In Oct. 1943, at G/C Fall's request, they were moved to a Commonwealth Air Training Plan base in Carberry, Man. A full year on the prairies was a shock: poor housing, many unaccustomed household chores due to a general lack of facilities. However, the family took things in stride and had a certain philosophical attitude toward coping. Decided to retire in Canada in 1945. (10:00) Discusses newspaper article about G/C Capt. Fall and his rejuvenation of the family property at Hillbank. Refers to the wartime score of her husband and some personalities. (22:00)

**Group Capt. Joseph Stewart Temple Fall, D.S.C., A.F.C.**

**Royal Naval Air Service**

**Royal Air Force**

Record ID: 00000060
Fall, Joseph Stewart Temple, G/C, D.S.C., and Two Bars, A.F.C., 1895-1988
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Joseph Stewart Temple Fall; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 40 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Interview with wife, Gwendolen Margaret Fall is on same original recording.
As Group Captain Fall suffered a stroke his poor speech is interpreted by Mrs. Fall on the tape.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 10, 1983, Cobble Hill, B.C.
Born on Nov. 17, 1895 near Hillbank, B.C., on Vancouver Island (d. Dec. 1, 1988). At the end of 1915 he paid his own way from Montreal to England to join the Royal Naval Air Service. Flew Maurice Farman aircraft in England; Nieuports and Sopwith Pup single-seater fighter aircraft in France. (10:00) Later Sopwith Camel fighters. Many air battles with No. 3 (N) Squadron and No. 9 (N) Squadron. (20:00) At the end of the war accepted a permanent commission in the Royal Air Force. Operations in the Middle East. (30:00) Retired at the age of fifty. Returned to Cobble Hill and took over the family property, building it into a good size dairy farm (eighty-five head). He retired from dairy farming in 1974. Note: At the time of the interview G/C Fall was seriously incapacitated as a result of a stroke. Note 2: G/C Fall was awarded the D.S.C. and two bars as well as the A.F.C.

Maj. Ronald Fraser Ferrie

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000054
Ferrie, Ronald Fraser, Maj., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ronald Fraser Ferrie ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips., 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 10, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Feb. 10, 1920 in Calgary, Alta. In 1935 he joined the local militia signals unit as a boy soldier. During the following year or so they became equipped with No. 1 wireless set, with a range of about three miles. Drill, courses and Sunday exercises kept the unit busy for two or three occasions per week. Summer camps at Sarcee and Dundurn. At the latter, in 1938, he was first introduced to vehicle-mounted wireless sets. (10:00) Describes uniforms. In 1938 was sent to Vimy Barracks, Kingston to qualify as a militia sergeant. During the 1939 Royal Visit to Calgary militia units were required to line the route in two locations. Fast movement was required after the Royal party had passed the first location. When war broke out they moved to Barriefield, just outside Kingston. A confusing time, during which morale suffered. Transferred to Vimy Barracks where accommodation and training equipment were good. Qualified as a radio operator. Officer training at Brockville, then additional signals training. Overseas in March 1942 to Aldershot. Posted to the Regiment de Maisonneuve. (30:00) A difficult time and a mistake since he had a poor grasp of French. By July 1942 he was transferred to 3rd Infantry Division Signals. Comments on exercises and the necessity, for signals staff, of immediately establishing communications after the exercise was over for the day. Appointed to the artillery signals section of 3rd Division Headquarters. Impressions of England. (40:00) Main Signals problem was usually the breakdown of line communications: passing vehicles often broke wires. Substitute signals officer for the 13th Field Regiment, R.C.A. Then posted to 14th Field Regiment as signals officer. By now had good switchboard equipment, telephones, and the No. 19 wireless set (1943). In July of 1943 was the second-in-command of the operating section of 3rd Division
Signals. Invasion training began in earnest in Scotland. For a short time was adjutant for 3rd Division signal reinforcement unit. Excellent experience, but was glad to return to the field as signals officer for the Cameron Highlanders of Ottawa (M.G.). (15:00) Communications network not as complicated for a machine-gun unit since companies came under tactical control of others. Landed in Normandy on D+12. Beaches very well organized, landed dry-shod. Divisional signals a very interesting position since most information passed through the hands of his unit. Bombed by the U.S. Army Air Force on the way to Falaise. Posted to command the operating section of Division Headquarters as a captain. Comments on the Scheldt Estuary, Ghent, Nijmegen where they spent the winter of 1944-45. During Operation Veritable flooding caused special signals problems. "Friendly" attack on Headquarters by R.A.F. Typhoons; luckily no casualties. Rhine crossed. Near Oldenburg when war ended. (40:00) Returned to Canada in Dec. 1945. Comments on occupation experiences in Holland. Stayed on with Signal Corps after the war. Retired in 1969. (47:00)

Rear-Admiral Edward William Finch-Noyes

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 0000061

Finch-Noyes, Edward William, R.-Adm., 1908?-198-?
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Edward William Finch-Noyes ; interviewed by James Murphy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 125 min.) : standard mono. Rear-Admiral Finch-Noyes served in the Royal Canadian Navy from 1926 to 1962. This recorded account ends in 1943. Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 35 min.) and 1 sound tape reel (ca. 90 min. ) : 3 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Side 2 of original tape has interview with F/L (Rev.) William Dobson.
Recorded on original sound cassette and sound tape reel June 21, 30, and July 4, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Cassette) Born circa 1908/1909 (d. 198-?). Joined the navy as a direct-entry cadet straight from Appleby College in Ontario (the other cadet for that year was Rear-Admiral J. C. Hibbard, also on tape in this collection). In Sept. 1926 to England where he joined the training ship H.M.S. Erobus (monitor). Describes organization, training, studies, sports, including boxing, which was required by all. Comments on his officers: the commissioned gunner was their mentor. Cadets were also taught naval customs and manners. A year later, in Sept. 1927, he joined H.M.S.Emperor of India (Iron Duke class battleship) as a midshipman. Comments on midshipmen as officers. Experienced the exercise of "coaling ship", three thousand tons all brought aboard in sacks. The entire ship's company was involved in a competition, the Royal Marine band played, the sickbay was fully manned. The captain, not being involved, took the day off to play golf! Butter smeared on the eyelids and in the ears made the removal of coal dust easier. (35:00)
(Reel 1, Side 1) Toward the completion of training as midshipmen the class joined H.M.S. Argus (carrier) for a month's flying experience. In 1929 joined H.M.C.S. Champlain (destroyer) as a sub lieutenant, and one of five officers. In June 1931 sailed out of Halifax harbour to meet the two new Canadian destroyers, H.M.C.S. Skeena and H.M.C.S. Saguenay arriving from the builders' yard in England. Great celebrations. The Depression years produced very economical and limited sea time. Trained reservists in the summer. As navigating officer he was given extra pay for navigating in the narrow reaches of the St. Lawrence River. Comments on gunnery and torpedo practice in Bras d'Or Lake. (15:00) First began to take a few cadets to sea from Royal Military College. As the Depression progressed they were asked to take a ten percent pay cut. Halifax routine usually included a cruise to Bermuda to clean ship for two weeks and then on to the West Indies for a period of intensive training. (30:00) Tropic routine was followed: work began at 5:30 A.M., ended at noon. Usually exercised with American ships for three or four days. Returned to Halifax in mid-March. Obtained watchkeeping ticket and promotion to lieutenant. Trained Royal Canadian Naval Reserve personnel, a high proportion of whom were the crews of the "Lady" ships. (Canadian National Steamship Line vessels). (41:00)

(Side 2) In 1937 the navy acquired its first full-time training ship, H.M.C.S. Venture, a schooner with auxiliary power. Designed to give training to ordinary seamen. Comments on customs and routines. "Broadside messing" in effect and described. Food was brought from the galley to individual messes. Comments on officers' messing arrangements. Always dressed for dinner. Formal mess dinner every Thursday. As H.M.C.S. Champlain was such a small ship the Captain dined in the wardroom, but in the new destroyers he was no longer a member of the mess and looked to his own mess. By 1936 Champlain and her sister ship Vancouver were old and were replaced by four "C" class [River class?] destroyers from Britain, H.M.C. ships Fraser, St. Laurent, Ottawa, and Restigouche. Four new minesweepers were laid down in Canada in 1938. (24:00) Mentions one or two lower-deck "characters" in the pre-war Navy. When war broke out in 1939 he was stationed at naval headquarters in Ottawa, where he spent the next two and a half years. Initially the Navy found it difficult to find jobs for all the volunteers who flocked to join up. Much new construction was required. Converted three "Prince" class liners (Canadian National Steamships) on the west coast to fast auxiliary cruisers (armed merchant cruisers). Comments on destroyer losses in the early years, H.M.C. ships Fraser and Margaree. In 1942 was appointed first lieutenant of H.M.C.S. Prince Henry. Patrolled the west coast for about a year; convoy duty to Alaska. In 1943 she was converted to a landing craft ship. Went to sea on the Atlantic in 1943. (48:00)

P/O, (Lt.) William Henry Gaddes, Ph.D.
Royal Canadian Air Force (P/O)
Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps (Lt.)

Record ID: 00000068
Gaddes, William Henry, Ph.D., P/O, Lt., 1912-
My Air Force and Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Henry Gaddes ;
interviewed by Mark C. Hill
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 27 and June 24, 1985.

(Side 1) Born on Oct. 10, 1912 in Kelowna, B.C. His father was a veterinarian/businessman with a number of widespread interests which resulted in Dr. Gaddes being educated in both the U.S. and B.C. He was a member of the Rocky Mountain Rangers (Militia) in 1940. Comments on his attitude towards the war, an attitude both positive and apprehensive. No hesitation in joining the active forces, but waited until the services were ready for him. Some friends who joined early in the war felt that their time was wasted and that they were ill-equipped and casually used as manpower. In 1940/41 was a member of the C.O.T.C. at the University of British Columbia. Shortly after Japan entered the war he volunteered for the R.C.A.F. and in June 1942 was accepted for ground crew. After manning depot, and with the rank of aircraftman second class (A.C. 2), he attended McMaster University for an excellent basic course in physics (20:00) prior to posting to the radar training centre at Clinton, Ont. in Jan. 1943. He became a radar mechanic under British instructors. A high level of knowledge was obtained which he felt was not properly recognized in the rank he held (leading aircraftman, L.A.C.). Graduated in mid-Apr. 1943 and, a month later, went overseas in the Empress of Scotland (Canadian Pacific Steamship liner) which sailing alone over a circuitous route, took eleven days to reach England. Offers impressions of Britain; was almost immediately subjected to a disconcerting air raid in Bournemouth. (35:00) Was posted to No. 10 Squadron, Royal Australian Air Force, part of Coastal Command, based at Plymouth. He was not used as a radar mechanic during the period June 1943 to Jan. 1944, but rather as an aircraft electrician working on "Short Sunderland" flying boats. What he felt was a misuse of his skills caused him to apply for remustering as air crew. (45:00) Comments on anti-submarine patrols, German fighter attacks. Returned to Canada in Jan. 1944 for air crew training. Describes return trip via New York. Reported to the initial training school at Edmonton. (23:00) Second interview begins. Remarks on his training. Navigation school at Portage la Prairie, was awarded navigators wings, commissioned as a pilot Officer. Was sent on leave at the end of 1944. (35:00) Was released shortly thereafter, part of eight thousand air crew who became surplus to requirements (fewer casualties than had been estimated). Transferred to the Royal Canadian Army Medical Corps as a lieutenant and psychologist. Little clinical knowledge, was sent to Sunnyside Hospital in Toronto for a familiarization tour (48:00). In March 1945 reported to Gordon Head Camp, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 2) Clinical psychology was a new field. In the beginning he was one of only two in the Canadian Army. Discusses "zombies" (National Resources Mobilization Act troops). To some the prospect of going overseas (late in the war) was a terrible shock, accompanied by hysteria, disfunctional anxiety. Treated in conjunction with the medical officer. A gentle approach was used, group therapy, basic psychology, much of it a Freudian approach. Treated perhaps three or four hundred "zombies", many of whom were timid or inadequate people, prone to getting into trouble, Army misfits. Comments on the treatment of disfigured patients at Sunnyside Hospital. (20:00) The team at Gordon Head was composed of a psychiatrist, psychologist, education officer, physical education and arts and crafts instructors. After four weeks of treatment, sixty-
five per cent of the N.R.M.A. troops signed up for General Service. In the fall of 1945, about six thousand British and Canadian ex-P.O.W.s of the Japanese passed through Gordon Head in a period of about eight weeks. Most were pleasant, nervous, and grateful for any kindness. No hostility. Gives an account of a visit to his home of four ex-prisoners. The Gordon Head routine started with new uniforms, badges of rank and unit, etc., were sewn on by the camp ladies auxiliary. Major psychiatric problem was the emotional prospect of returning to their homes and families. Some thirty men suffered from pellagra and large doses of vitamin B-12 helped. (35:00) Dr. Gaddes conducted an experimental project which he later used for his M.A. thesis. After his discharge from the army he taught veterans at the Tyee Road School in 1946. Joined Victoria College. (45:00) Continued sporadic studies of former P.O.W.s as a consultant to the Veterans' Hospital in Victoria. General comments on wartime training (06:00).

Pte. Alex Gerrard

100th Battalion (Winnipeg Grenadiers), Canadian Expeditionary Force

1st Battalion, Canadian Mounted Rifles, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Record ID: 00000057
Gerrard, Alex, Pte., 1895-1979
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Alex Gerrard ; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 48 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 48 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Side 2 of original tape has interview with 2Lt. Cecil James.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 11, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1895 in Aberdeenshire (d. 1979) and, as a boy of twelve, came to Canada in 1907. Farmed at Alexander, near Brandon, Man. Enlisted at Winnipeg in the spring of 1916. Recalls that, during basic training, they drilled and shovelled snow and assisted in recruiting drives. Many of the unit were given a month off for spring planting. Reported to Camp Hughes and from there went overseas. About fifty of his battalion were sent to France, through Le Havre, as reinforcements for the 1st C.M.R.s. He recalls moving directly into the front line to guard duty in a "sap-head". These forward positions might be sited as close as twenty yards from the enemy. (15:00) They were thus able to give warning to their unit of any extra activity in the German trenches. The regimen of ten days in the front line, ten in reserve and then out to rest was a job for the younger men. Describes trenches, routine, playing cards off-duty, or a visit to the Y.M.C.A. canteen in the second-line trenches. Slept when and where they could; sometimes there were bunks in the dugouts. Rations fairly good. One round loaf of bread for four men, and always dixies of tea, coffee or stew. They underwent concentrated training for the Battle of Vimy Ridge, during which time he became a Lewis gunner. During the battle the first objective was reached fairly quickly, stopped to clean their gun while others passed through their position. (35:00) The advance was preceded by a tremendous "fireworks" display at 4:25 A.M. Advancing
under artillery-fire some Canadian troops overran the barrage and were killed by our own shells. Did not actually see any of the enemy during the advance except as prisoners of war. Badly wounded in the eye and shoulder. Hospital in Boulogne (45:00), then King George Hospital in London where his injured eye was removed. A special diet, including a bottle of stout each day, helped him to regain his strength. (02:00)

Pilot Officer Gerald H. Gibbens

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000073
Gibbens, Gerald H., P/O, 1916-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Gerald H. Gibbens ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Nov. 8, 1988, Vancouver, B.C.

Born on May 28, 1916 in Vancouver. Friends joining the air force provided him with the motivation to also join in June 1942. Manning depot in Edmonton, then general duties before being accepted for air crew (navigator). Graduated from flying training in March 1943. Overseas in Aug. of that year; navigation school in Scotland, then a month in an operational training unit at Doncaster where he "crewed -up" with a R.A.F. crew. (10:00) At No. 1567 Conversion Unit the crew converted to four-engined Short Stirling (bomber). In 1944 joined No. 214 Squadron, R.A.F. (Flying Fortresses) which were equipped to monitor German ground-to-air radio traffic. First operational flight to the Ruhr in June 1944. As navigator he rarely saw any of the outside world or was aware of any enemy action. Comments on debriefing, navigation, etc. In July 1944 his aircraft was hit by flak over Kiel, Germany and forced to return to England before reaching the target. On the night of Aug. 25/26 they were shot down by a German Junkers Ju 88 night fighter. Aircraft on fire, they bailed out. Six of the crew of ten survived, four did not. Was captured quickly, and, after a night in a local jail, taken to a German air station where his injuries were attended to, and then to Frankfurt for interrogation. Was sent to Stalag Luft 7 which seemed to be a good camp. Red Cross parcels every two weeks at that late date in the war which tended to make the food supply a little short. (25:00) Details of camp life. In Jan. 1945 began a forced march, with little food and water, to avoid the approaching Russian army. Was liberated by the Russians toward the end of April but forced to remain in their camp until V-E Day when they managed to make contact with the American army nearby. Returned to Canada, was discharged in Sept. 1945. No problem rejoining civil life, but still thinks back to the days when hunger was a problem. Even now no longer takes food for granted. (42:00)
Squadron Leader Harold Trevor Giles, D.F.C.

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000078
Giles, Harold Trevor, S/L, D.F.C., 1922-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Harold Trevor Giles; interviewed by Chris Bell
3 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
File contains letter and resume which provide additional detail.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 8 and Aug. 4, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born to a farm family on July 17, 1922 near Gadsby, Alta. Joined the R.C.A.F. in Sept. 1940 although he had been a member of 91st Field Battery (militia) in Calgary. Applied for air crew. Manning depot, Toronto (30:00) followed by three months guard duty in Toronto and the maritimes. Comments on air crew selection, aircraft types. Guard duty: three hours on, four hours off. Anecdote. Initial Flying Training School at Guelph, Ont. (45:00) Advanced training at Brantford, Ont. on the Avro Anson (training aircraft). Was awarded wings, a sergeant-pilot. Attended No. 1 General Reconnaissance School at Charlottetown, P.E.I. (15:00) Became a staff pilot at this R.A.F.-run base. Transferred out as soon as possible as promotion within the R.A.F. organization was slower than in the R.C.A.F. In 1942 was posted to No. 119 Bomber Squadron at Sydney, N.S. which used Bristol Bolingbroke bombers shortly to be replaced by the Lockheed Hudson. Comments on the three-point landing method of the former compared to the two-point method of the latter. Describes crash-landings with a bombload. Was transferred to No. 11 (Bomber) Squadron at Dartmouth, N.S. in March 1944 and commissioned. (50:00)

(Side 2) In mid-1944 converted to Consolidated Liberators (bomber). Describes aerial depth charges and accidents. Comments on tactics used when attacking submarines. (10:00) Air coverage usually thin on convoy patrol. Was ordered not to attack submarines seen on the flight to the convoy patrol area. Second duty to keep submarines under the surface as much as possible. The last year of the war saw early model Sonar buoys in use. Purpose of a bomber-reconnaissance squadron is explained. Was involved in the beginning of Tiger Force against Japan. (2:00) In March 1945 flew numbers of R.C.A.F. personnel from Iceland to Canada. Trained for the transport role. Flew Douglas Dakotas in No. 164 Squadron in the maritimes, then Liberators (No. 168 Squadron), carrying mail from Ottawa to Prestwick, Scotland. Commercial airlines attempted to recruit air force pilots with long-distance experience. Decided to stay in the R.C.A.F. Discusses terms of employment, retirement, promotion, and the service in general. (45:00) In 1946 returned to No. 164 Squadron flying daily from Moncton to Goose Bay. Squadron number changed to No. 426. Beginning of Transport Command. (12:00) Made two flights to Japan during the Korean War, supplies in, wounded out. Personnel Branch in Ottawa. Staff College in Toronto. One year of jet aircraft training. In 1957 was posted to Comox, B.C., where he flew Avro CF-100 fighters. Comments on both the Canadair Sabre and the CF-100 fighters. Radar equipment. Early warning systems; Mid-Canada Line used the Doppler system.
Rotation of personnel at radar stations. Lack of accuracy of early inter continental ballistic missiles (I.C.B.M.). Was posted to defence headquarters about the time of the demise of the Avro Arrow. Dealt with operational requirements for the air force for the balance of his career. Retired in 1969. General discussion including Bomarc missiles, nuclear strike role in Canadair CF-104 squadrons, return to conventional weapons not entirely successful. Considers that unification produced confusion and a lack of efficiency. (48:00)

Maj. Harold Bertrand Gonder

The Cameron Highlanders of Ottawa (M.G.)

Record ID: 00000171
Gonder, Harold Bertrand, Maj., 1909-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Harold Bertrand Gonder ; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
4 sound cassettes (ca. 300 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 300 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
The cassette copies of this interview offer better sound quality than the original 5-in. reels.
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 23, Aug. 7, 8, 9, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Cassette 1, Side 1) "Hal" Gonder was born on May 19, 1909 in China where his parents were missionaries. Educated in an English-style school. Family returned to Ontario where he continued in school for a year, then left home at the age of seventeen; many odd jobs, "rode the rails" in 1931. Several positions in Toronto, warehouse manager in Halifax, and a position with a furrier in Ottawa. On Sept. 2, 1939 he joined the Cameron Highlanders of Ottawa (militia), not with a sense of patriotism, but because he was bored! Quickly promoted to sergeant. Partially trained, the unit was sent to be part of the garrison in Iceland. Crude living conditions at first; defenses were built, conditions slowly improved. The Icelandic population remained somewhat distant. Impressions of the defenses of Iceland. (45:00)

(Cassette 1, Side 2) Promoted to sergeant. Left Iceland for Greenock in March 1941. Noticed an immediate increase in the volume of paperwork when they became part of the Canadian Corps! Impressions of wartime England. Continuous training with the Vickers machine-gun, an excellent weapon in defense and in support, but heavy to move. In Sept, 1941 sent to the O.C.T.U. at Borden. (45:00)

(Cassette 2, Side 1) Classmate of Col. Jim Stone. When commissioned returned to his unit which he found greatly improved. As a result of commanding a winning guard in a divisional competition he was offered the appointment of A.D.C. to Maj.-Gen. Rod Keller, the G.O.C., 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Promoted to captain. Description of Maj.-Gen. Keller and senior officers. Returned to the battalion. In 1943 the Cameron Highlanders of Ottawa became the
support battalion for 3rd Division. Capt. Gonder's platoon was attached to the Canadian Scottish Regiment. Trained for D-Day in Scotland; security tight, endless briefings. (45:00)

(Cassette 2, Side 2) Landed in Normandy three hours late due to engine trouble in the landing craft. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment which was well inland. In action against German tanks the following day. Moved to Plutot. Searched for snipers; wounded while moving forward in his carrier. Evacuated to England. In hospital at Taplow, the estate of Lady Nancy Astor. Reinforcement unit in Yorkshire. (45:00)

(Cassette 3, Side 1) In considerable trouble when he refused to pay for kit lost in Normandy. Posted to a reinforcement unit in Ghent, Belg. Returned to the battalion in October. Appointed O.C. of headquarters company. Married a Canadian nursing sister. Conditions at the end of the war. Dutch civilians. Favorable impressions of the German soldier (very well trained). (48:00)


(Cassette 4, Side 1) Job hunting, B.C. Electric sales department. Impressions of war. General coments on military career, the caring and concern, the drive to succeed. (45:00)

(Cassette 4, Side 2) Laying up the colors of the Cameron Highlanders in Ottawa. (15:00)

Squadron Leader Clarence Shirley Goode
Royal Engineers
Royal Flying Corps
Royal Air Force

Record ID: 00000079
Goode, Clarence Shirley, S/L, 1896-1987
My Army and Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence Shirley Goode ; interviewed by William S. Thackray and Tom Torrie
4 sound cassettes (ca. 330 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 330 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Interview 1 (ca. 90 min.) was conducted by William S. Thackray on June 2, 1980.
Interview 2 (ca. 240 min.) was conducted by Tom Torrie on July 9, 16 and 24, 1987.
The Goode interviews, particularly the second, are garrulous and repetitive. In the opinion of interviewer Thackray it is doubtful that the last hour of the interview is worth copying.
Researchers be aware!
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 2, 1980 and July 9, 16, and 24, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Interview 1) Became interested in wireless communications as a youth. Met Marconi, a famous pioneer. Learned Morse code as a boy and became very proficient. As a young man he was associated with Sir Charles Wright (later of Victoria, B.C.), the communicator with Scott's Antarctic expedition. In the Great War, as a Royal Engineer, worked on the secret "I-TOC" intelligence gathering device which allowed the British to overhear German telephone conversations. Explains the method, using "earth pins" near the German trenches, initially at Ypres. After being transferred to the Royal Flying Corps he had much to do with installing wireless sets in aircraft. All transmissions were in Morse. Worked at Farnborough, England. (ca. 1916). Joined the Allied Expeditionary Force in North Russia (1919) as "chief communications officer". Built and operated radio stations on the Dvina River. (30:00) After the war was employed during the early days of the B.B.C. Asked to rejoin the air force and was employed by the Air Ministry (ca. 1936). (45:00) Regional Controller for the Midlands. Set up a radio network including his own private radio station. In the Second World War he was sent secretly to France. Stationed at Metz he established a radio system of aerial navigation. Comments on the early days in the British Broadcasting Corporation (B.B.C.); many jealousies. (15:00) In England was later in charge of "Z", secret radio work. Commanded a training school for wireless operators. Was appointed to command the Royal Air Force (R.A.F.) station at Patricia Bay, B.C. in 1942. (25:00) Further remarks on training. (40:00)

(Interview 2, Side 1) Born in 1896 in Leicestershire (died Dec. 22, 1987). Charles Wright was his superior in the Royal Engineers. Early Morse transmissions before 1914. Describes equipment in use in the Ypres salient. (15:00) Use and advantages of Morse code transmissions. Trench warfare. Transferred to the Royal Flying Corps. (30:00) Early communications from aircraft. Front line environment, artillery fire, mortars. (45:00) Description of observation balloons. Farnborough, England. Early flying days where loss of engine power was a real danger. (15:00) Early aircraft wireless required a one hundred-foot aerial which was reeled in and out as needed. Was offered a permanent commission in the R.A.F. Experiences with radio communications in North Russia. Returned to Scotland. (50:00) As a result of war service he suffered a possible nervous breakdown (?) and was in hospital for three months. Medical discharge. Returned to radio. Opened the B.B.C. station for western England at Plymouth. Many "firsts" in broadcasting. After two years he resigned and joined a commercial research firm. (26:00)

(Side 2) Ca. 1935 he bought the last operating hansom cab operating in Edinburgh, reconditioned it, and drove in the George V Jubilee procession (in London?) Was recalled by the Air Ministry in 1936. Regional controller for W.I.S. (Wireless Intelligence Screen) in the Midlands. During the "phony war" served in Metz, France. Comments on the B.B.C. in the 1920s and makes additional allegations of discrimination against himself. For the Air Force he invented the TARY system of plotting and communication with aircraft. After the fall of France he became involved with the Ministry of Aircraft Production. Anecdotes of famous people he met in Metz. (45:00) In London he commanded an organization called "Z" which had to do with the use of aerial radar against enemy aircraft. (13:00) (At this point Sqn. Leader Goode recaps most of that which has
gone before: ten minutes.) An experience with an Air Force theatrical company seems to imply the reason for his posting (banishment?) to Patricia Bay. (35:00) Enjoyed Canada. Emigrated after the war. Economic struggle. (45:00) The remaining twenty minutes of the interview consist of comments on life in Victoria and are of no military interest.

Maj. Charles Elsworth Goodman

The Saint John Fusiliers (M.G.)

South Saskatchewan Regiment

Royal 22e Regiment

Record ID: 00000172
Goodman, Charles Elsworth, Maj., 1926-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Charles Elsworth Goodman ; interviewed by David Gantz
3 sound cassettes (ca. 270 min.) : standard mono.
No further interviews were undertaken, although Maj. Goodman went on to serve for some years.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 270 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Dec. 1 and 5, 1979 and Jan. 16, 1980, Sidney, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Feb. 5, 1926 in Montreal. Always keen to be a soldier and, after several years as a high school cadet, joined a militia signal company in Saint John, N.B. Claiming to be of age he answered a call for signallers by the Saint John Fusiliers and found himself transported to Nanaimo Military Camp in Dec. 1942. Very little signal equipment; what was available was obsolete. Moved to Patricia Bay and then to New Westminster where they were very comfortable. Further postings to Prince George and Vernon where he transferred to the Rocky Mountain Rangers. Overseas as a reinforcement, posted to the South Saskatchewan Regiment. Moved to Normandy in July 1944 as a reinforcement for the regiment, through Caen to Ifs. Night patrols; describes the sounds of battle and the general experiences of a rifleman in action. Method of moving into battle. Moved to Rocquancourt, then to Falaise where they "mouse-holed" house to house. Recounts terrific slaughter in the Falaise gap. Description of bombing attack by friendly aircraft. Pockets of serious fighting at the River Seine. (90:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) His company reduced to fourteen men at the Seine. Became company signaller and carried a radio for the remainder of the war. Liberation of Rouen. Dieppe and the parade of the 2nd Canadian Division through town. Channel ports. Close calls with enemy mines. (30:00) Company headquarters nearly wiped out. Goodman drove off an enemy tank with a PIAT at the Antwerp-Turnhout Canal. (45:00) Many small battles as they moved through Belgium and into Holland. Very close fighting during a German counterattack. Moved toward the Scheldt where
he was wounded in the leg by shellfire. Unauthorized return to his unit. Nijmegen, a cold, miserable winter. Reichswald Forest. Liberated a concentration camp transit camp in Holland. Suffering from general fatigue, he was transferred to the carrier platoon. His carrier was mined, but luckily he was uninjured. Remembers a feeling of "letdown" when the war ended. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Immediate postwar activities in Holland. Joined the Occupation Force as a member of the North Shore Regiment commanded by Bucko Watson. Moved to Wilhelmshaven to guard naval vessels. (Note incorrect warship type reference to the heavy cruiser, Prinz Eugen.) Guard duty and identity checks of Germans. Non-fraternization policy. (25:00) Leave in various European centres. In late Apr. 1946 the battalion returned to Canada. Transferred to the 7th District Signal Company at Saint John, N.B. Parachute training. (45:00) Commissioned as a second lieutenant and posted to the Royal 22e Regiment, although he did not speak French. Sent to Laval University to learn. Before he finished the course he was posted to the 2nd Battalion, Royal 22e Regiment in Korea. With some apprehension he found himself in the front lines again. Posted to the mortar platoon, then second-in-command of A Company. Main activity involved night patrols, very hard on the nerves of junior N.C.O.’s and officers. The Chinese were similarly engaged and were excellent at fieldcraft. Explains booby traps made by his platoon. Describes Chinese attacks. Shellfire relatively light compared to World War II. When unit returned to Canada he was appointed the junior liaison officer at Commonwealth Division Headquarters. An excellent learning position. Comments on the diversity of the headquarters staff. Returned to action with the 1st Battalion, Royal 22e Regiment as a platoon commander in C Company. Good soldiers, same routine. (45:00)

Capt. John M. Grant, C.B.E.

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000173
Grant, John M., Capt., C.B.E., 1895-198-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by John M. Grant ; interviewed by James Murphy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Capt. Grant was the first Captain of the Royal Canadian Naval College, H.M.C.S. Royal Roads during World War II.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 180 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 13 and 18, July 20 and 25, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born ca. 1894 in Halifax, N.S. He spent two years at school in Heidelberg, Germany. Returning to Halifax in 1909. In Jan. 1911 he joined the Royal Naval College of Canada as one of a class of twenty-one cadets. He entered a strenuous regime conducted by Royal Navy instructors with a heavy emphasis on engineering subjects. Graduated as a midshipman in 1913. Joined H.M.S. Berwick (cruiser), sailed for the West Indies for training. In Mexico and Venezuela was part of a force sent to protect British interests against revolutionaries.
(25:00) After courses at Halifax he joined another cruiser, H.M.S. Suffolk and describes the operation of "coaling ship". Explains the selection of Canadian midshipmen for H.M.S. Good Hope, later sunk in action. Suffolk on patrol off the eastern seaboard of the United States where she stopped shipping to search for German nationals of military age, who were removed. Since he spoke German, he was always a member of the boarding party. Escorted troopships to England. Appointed to H.M.S. Beaver (I-class destroyer). (48:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Constantly at sea, patrolling to the Hook of Holland. Escorted hospital ships to and from France. Comments on anti-submarine and minesweeping methods. (25:00) Describes modern asdic, depth charges, and the hydrophones used in the Great War which could not be used when a ship was underway. In action against enemy submarine. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Ordered to the Mediterranean in Apr. 1918. Convoy, anti-submarine, and rescue work; much improved social and sports activities ashore. Soon at Brindisi, Ital. where great efforts were made to seal the Adriatic against movement of enemy submarines, but only partially effective, since the sea was too deep to blockade. Executive officer of Beaver. Ferried troops to the Dardanelles when Turkey surrendered. Entered the Sea of Marmara and proceeded to Constantinople. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) In Oct. 1918 participated in the bombardment of Durazzo, Albania. From Constantinople they sailed to Odessa, Russ. where the German army and the White Russians were attempting to keep some sort of civil order. To a welcome by the Rumanians they sailed up the Danube where they attempted to keep the Rumanians and Bulgarians apart. In Dec. 1918 called at Sevastopol, saw and visited the Russian Black Sea Fleet, largely abandoned and in a poor state of repair. Removed a number of political refugees from Odessa. General comments. (46:00)

Capt. Raymond Skelton Gray

Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000055
Gray, Raymond Skelton, Capt., 1912-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Raymond Skelton Gray ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 27, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on March 11, 1912 in Victoria. Prior to joining the Canadian Scottish Regiment in the spring of 1939 he had belonged to the Army Service Corps militia unit in Victoria. During the summer of 1939 the Canadian Scottish Regiment trained at Vernon, B.C. where they still wore kilts during training in the field. Called up for active service in 1939 by means of a notice posted
outside the newspaper office of the Victoria Times. Comments on recruiting, training in Victoria, courses elsewhere. A sergeant in Debert, N.S. where they encountered very poor barrack conditions, no water laid on, plumbing facilities, etc. This was to be the cause of much sickness among the troops. Sent to the O.C.T.U. at Brockville for three months, then advanced training at Calgary. Volunteered to go to Hong Kong in 1941, but was turned down as he was already committed to the Canadian Army in England. Overseas to a reinforcement unit before joining the Canadian Scottish Regiment. Anecdotes. Comments on leave in England. Promoted to captain and adjutant. Isle of Wight for amphibious training. Extremely busy pre-D-Day administrative period. (35:00) Loaded in ships several days before the Invasion. A monotonous time: wrote letters, the troops sharpened the edges of their shovels for use as a close-combat weapon. Finally, on June 6, a very rough trip to the beach. Advanced under fire through a grain field. On the night of June 26 the regimental headquarters, which was in a farmhouse, received a direct hit from enemy artillery. Capt. Gray was wounded, evacuated to the beach, then taken by hospital ship to England. After convalescence, returned to the unit for a short period. The former commanding officer, Brig. Cabeldu, offered him a staff job at 4th Canadian Infantry Brigade headquarters. Acted as a staff captain for the remainder of the war. In Germany, in 1945, he contracted jaundice and stayed at hospital in Oldenburg. Returned to Canada in Oct. 1945. Staff job in Vancouver until discharged in June 1946. Returned to his provincial civil service job. (50:00)

Lt. William Archibald Gray

Royal Montreal Regiment

Royal Canadian Army Service Corps

Record ID: 00000056
Gray, William Archibald, Lt., 19--?- My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Archibald Gray ; interviewed by Grant Gray
1 sound cassette (ca. 70 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 70 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 24, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born in Verdun, Que. Joined the Royal Montreal Regiment (militia) in Jan. 1940. Shortage of arms and uniforms. Training consisted largely of drill. Worked for the freight department of Pennsylvania Railway. In Jan. 1942 joined the active army, Royal Canadian Army Service Corps so that his civilian expertise could be used as a stepping-stone to a commission. Sent to the O.C.T.U. at Brockville, a good camp and a good town. Advanced training at Camp Borden (20:00) at the R.C.A.S.C. training centre. After graduating as a lieutenant he became an instructor. Motorcycle training, directing convoys, which proved surprisingly difficult. Many exercises. Anecdotes. (3:00) In May 1943 he became a movement control officer at Halifax. Work consisted of handling troop trains, loading ships with troops, baggage, food, etc. Hospital
ships arrived, ambulance trains provided. P.O.W.s transported to camps. On one such train he was in command of the train, but not the guards, and moved the P.O.W.s as far west as Medicine Hat. Movement control duties in New York at one point. (45:00) He was temporarily O.C. Troops on the Princess Helene on the daily trip between Saint John, N.B. and Digby, N.S. Army O.C. aboard the Lady Rodney for one very rough trip to Newfoundland. (47:00)

(Side 2) Describes conditions aboard ship: the army anti-submarine watch were all very seasick. In an effort to get overseas he transferred to the infantry. Underwent a battle course at Vernon, B.C. Sent to Debert, N.S. as an infantry reinforcement until they discovered he was a movement control officer. Back he went to his former occupation! Sent to England after the war ended to assist in the repatriation process. Trip to France. One of a group of officers in England invited to a party at a local castle where he danced with one of the guests, the then Princess Elizabeth. Returned to Canada in Apr. 1946. Discharged. Returned to his civilian job. General comments. (23:00)

Squadron Leader Alfred Lewis Francis Greenwood

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000067
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Alfred Lewis Francis Greenwood; interviewed by Chris D. Main.
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Oct. 22, 1978 and Aug. 24, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 4, 1917 in Vancouver, B.C. (died in Aug. 1988). His mother moved to Quebec and there married M. Dumont Huot, a member of a very old French-Canadian family (ca. 1670). Early schooling was in English, but at twelve or thirteen enrolled in a Jesuit college, the only Anglo-Saxon Protestant student for the entire nine years that he attended. Graduated in 1939 with a B.A. which was awarded through the University of Montreal. Describes experiences in school and his French-Canadian/Irish home life. Applied to join the air force in Montreal and on Oct. 9, 1939 as commissioned as a provisional pilot officer. Elementary flying training at Kingston, Ont. at a civilian flying school. Moved to Trenton, Ont. where he was issued uniforms for the first time. Describes quarters, mess life, training. Anecdotes. (30:00) Ambition to go overseas: main fear was to be appointed an instructor in Canada. Advanced flying training at Camp Borden where he flew North American Harvard training aircraft. (40:00) Was awarded wings, then had the services of a batman. Also flew the Fairey Battle (light bomber). Description
of bombing range, methods employed, etc. (45:00) Account of forced landing. Army Co-
operation training at Rockcliffe Airport, Ottawa where he flew the Westland Lysander, artillery
spotting. In the fall of 1940 was posted to No. 1 Bombing and Gunnery School, Jarvis, Ont., for
about two weeks (15:00) before being sent overseas as a flying officer. Sailed from Montreal in
the Duchess of Athol (Canadian Pacific Steamship liner). Virtually conditions of civilian peace-
time travel as, among the passengers, there were only twelve R.C.A.F. officers aboard, however
they did have to stand anti-submarine watch. Anecdotes of trip, arrival in England, etc. (34:00)

(Side 2) Was posted to Sutton Bridge, No. 6 Operational Training Unit (O.T.U.), a R.A.F. station
where he first flew the Hawker Hurricane (fighter). Formation flying, navigation, gunnery. Tactics
were learned in operational squadrons. After about a month he joined No. 1 (Fighter) Squadron,
R.C.A.F. (which became No. 401 when later renumbered) at Prestwick, Scotland. (10:00) Shortly
thereafter the squadron returned to the operational role at Castletown in northern Scotland. First
operational "scramble" in Jan. 1941. Explains "ready aircraft", three aircraft kept continuously
warmed up by the ground crew. After a few months was posted to No. 110 (Army Co-operation)
Squadron where he flew Lysanders. (30:00) "Playing with the Army" was, he felt, a come-down!
Mess and social life. (40:00) On May 3, 1941 converted to Curtiss Tomahawk (P-
40 fighters), an obsolescent fighter aircraft. Seconded to an air-sea rescue unit at Manston.
(45:00) Flew Lysanders equipped with smoke floats and two dinghies. Their task was to locate
drowned aircraft and call out the high speed rescue launches. On standby from dawn to dusk; a
boring assignment. Returned to No. 110 Squadron. Was posted to No. 414 (Army Co-operation)
Squadron where training operations changed to an attack role in support of the army. Squadron
leader. Flew the early model North American Mustang (P-51 fighter) which was excellent for
low-level flying. Much aerial photography. Landed first aircraft (a "Tiger Moth") at the first
aerodrome built by the Royal Canadian Engineers. (30:00) Was posted to Canada (1943) and
taken off flying at his own request. Became an air traffic controller, first in British Columbia,
then in Newfoundland where he was in command of the air traffic control centre. Anecdote.
Demobilized at Boundary Bay, B.C. In civilian life a high school teacher, retiring from that
position in 1979. (40:00)

Capt. A.C. Vassar Hall

The Regina Rifle Regiment

Record ID: 00000174
Hall, A.C. Vassar, Capt., 1909-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by A.C. Vassar Hall ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
3 sound cassettes (ca. 195 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 195 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 7, 11 and 15, 1979, Victoria, B.C.
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on June 19, 1909 in Saskatchewan. Joined the 12th Machine Gun Battalion in southern Saskatchewan. Commissioned ca. 1932. Transferred to The Regina Rifle Regiment. Offers comments on the training, social life, and attitude of those in the militia. Mobilized on June 1, 1940 as part of the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Training began at Dundurn Camp where the unit became part of the 7th Canadian Infantry Brigade. Overseas in 1941, conditions in England. Describes duties as quartermaster of the regiment, adapted to the British system of drawing and accounting for stores. Commanded Headquarters Company which consisted of most of the administrative personnel of the battalion. Designated the D-Day landing officer in order to provide liaison between the fighting companies and the vehicles, stores, etc. which were in nineteen different ships. (45:00) Much loading and unloading of ships while the unit was training in Scotland. Assault training on the Isle of Wight. Loaded aboard the Llangibby Castle (landing ship, assault) on June 1 and spent the next few days practicing with their assault craft. Given very detailed last-minute instructions. Landed at Courseulles-sur-Mer fifteen minutes behind the first assault troops. As Headquarters Company commander he quickly organized the beach to provide support for the Regina Rifle Regiment. Mines took a toll of landing craft, particularly as the mines became covered by the rising tide. Comments on the very fast replacement of vehicles and equipment destroyed by enemy action. (35:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Explains his D-Day landing tables which specified landing craft, times, personnel, contents, etc. Verified location of forward companies and dispatched vehicles and supplies through beach exits. Moved off the beach on June 8. Rejoined the regiment in time to come under heavy attack by enemy armour, but they were beaten off by anti-tank weapons. (42:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Continues with account of close fighting. Comments on the enemy. Recollections of Caen in July. Moved on toward Falaise; "friendly bombing". Closing the Falaise gap, afterwards into open country. Held up at the Seine. In September observed heavy bombing attack on Calais, then the attack on Cap Gris Nez. Excellence of the supply system throughout the campaign. (45:00) Leopold Canal where the Royal Montreal Regiment assisted the Regina Rifles Regiment and were severely dealt with by the enemy. Operation Veritable, crossing the Rhine. Flooded area around Cleve caused many problems. Heavy casualties. At war's end was in Brussels on a twenty-four hour pass, stayed a few more hours to celebrate. Returned to Canada. Demobilized in March 1946. General remarks on veterans' and military organizations. (31:00)

Wing Commander Warner H. Halladay
Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000069
Halladay, Warner H., W/C, 1921-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Warner H. Halladay ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 4, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

RESTRICTED REPRODUCTION AND PUBLICATION

Born on Nov. 20, 1921 near Kingsley, Sask. Joined the R.C.A.F. at Regina, Sask. in 1940 despite
being turned down for air crew. Called up in Apr. 1941 for training as a wireless-electrical
mechanic at McGill University. Overseas in Sept. 1941 after a very rough crossing with poor
food and accommodation aboard a British ship. (10:00) In England was first sent to the personnel
reception centre at Bournemouth. Attended the R.A.F. Radar and Communication School at Cranwell. Applied for air crew. Was posted to a radar maintenance unit near London where he
was corporal in charge of the heavy radar section. Was promoted to sergeant, advised to prepare
for technical officers' board, and then posted for air crew training all on the same day.
Elementary flying training on de Havilland Tiger Moths at Derby. Near-disastrous first solo flight
in Apr. 1943. Returned to R.C.A.F. command. Service flying training in Canada. Sent on
commando course, partly to put in time. (25:00) Was posted to England, trained on Bristol
Beaufighters adapted for torpedo bombing, but the need for that skill lessened and he converted to
Avro Lancaster bombers. Posted to No. 419 Squadron, R.C.A.F. Flew on three operations only.
Explains the "corkscrew" downward maneuver to avoid enemy fighters. Used it only once to
avoid a Messerschmitt 262 (German jet fighter). Comments on the good flying characteristics of
the Lancaster. Describes living conditions and pay scale for ground crew and for officers. R.A.F.
living conditions were spartan, but they were treated well. Great celebration at the end of the war.
As a safety move all aircraft were disabled by removing the spark plugs from the engines.
Discharged in 1945. (40:00) Took an engineering degree at the University of Manitoba. Rejoined
the R.C.A.F. in 1949. Radar and Communications School at Clinton, Ont. In his case the course
was not required, so he left early to become maintenance officer at Centralia, Ont., where he flew
Douglas Dakotas (DC-3s) fitted out as flying classrooms. As a flight lieutenant was engineering
and maintenance officer at Trenton, Ont. Testing and development of electronic equipment at
Rockcliffe, near Ottawa. (45:00) Radar testing on the Mid-Canada Radar Warning Line proved
that their radars could be jammed by an intruder. Explains procedure in general terms. Electronics
at the Cold Lake range. Anecdot. At Air Force Headquarters was involved in
new methods of acquiring new electronic equipment. Attended George Washington University in
Washington, D.C. where he completed a Masters degree in engineering administration and
management. Afterwards was an exchange officer with the U.S. Air Force in research and
development of the electronics for the F-111 fighter. (15:00) A very competitive and hard-
driving environment. Wing commander. Returned to Canada where he became involved with
improving the telephone data-microwave system which, in the end, was very advanced. In the
1960s he found that integration and his age combined to reduce his chance of promotion, despite
being offered a position with a promise of higher rank. Resigned from the forces. Stayed on as a
civilian employee for a time, running computer operations. (25:00) Joined a communications
task force and occupied other government positions. Retired at age sixty. The Service was a good
life; team effort was particularly attractive which is, perhaps, not so prominent under unification.
(30:00)
Capt. Patricia Mary Jones Hamill

Canadian Women's Army Corps

Record ID: 00000062
Hamill, Patricia Mary Jones, Capt, 1918-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Patricia Mary Jones Hamill ; interviewed by Grant Gray
1 sound cassette (ca. 25 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
1 original sound tape reel (ca. 25 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 4, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 26, 1918 in England. Hers was a military family. Her father was a Master Gunner, permanent force. Was educated in Halifax. Discusses the early, unofficial role of women in the army which eventually resulted in the C.W.A.C. A secretary in civilian life, she joined the army in 1941. Worked as a secretary for a month, then underwent a month of drill. No uniforms, but was provided with civilian- pattern shoes, stockings, and an armband. Next, the nine women in her group were issued the smallest size of men's coveralls which they wore constantly. Finally, in Jan. 1942, they were issued uniforms. Food was badly cooked; roast beef every day except Friday.
Many young women joined the service despite parental opposition. Pay was two-thirds that of men, but they were entitled to equal trades pay. Posted to an administration course at Macdonald College, Que., as an acting corporal. In June 1942 attended an officers' training course at the same place. More administration courses and a messing course. Felt that the O.C.T.U. was deficient in man (women) management aspects. Returned to district headquarters in Halifax. Was sent on a recruiting drive through Nova Scotia. In Sept. 1942 she was a company commander in Halifax. Discipline, training, sports, administration amounted to a considerable responsibility. Was posted to Sydney, N.S. and promoted to captain. Moved to Dundurn, Sask., in May 1943 for about four months. Married, moved to Regina as a company commander as both husband and wife were not allowed to serve on the same base. After one year she was posted overseas in Nov. 1944 with ten C.W.A.C. officers. A "Cook's Tour" of A.T.S. (Auxiliary Territorial Service) camps. For a time she was C.O. of an English company. Took courses. Remained in England as an exchange officer for four months. Posted to Ottawa as a company commander at army headquarters until Oct. 1945. Comments that members of the C.W.A.C. filled many non-combatant jobs and trades, releasing men for other duties. (25:00)

Col. William Stebbing Hamilton

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000074
Hamilton, William Stebbing, Col., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Stebbing Hamilton ; interviewed by Tom
Torrie
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
After 27 min. into the tape, including a 2-min. pause, Hamilton conducts a 37-min. interview with Maj. Henry Earl Koehler of No. 1 Special Wireless Group, Royal Canadian Corps of Signals (1944).
Recorded on original sound tape reel June-Aug. 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on June 10, 1920. In the post-war period he was involved in radio intelligence gathering. Prior to that, during the war, powerful radio stations were established by the Royal Canadian Navy on both coasts of Canada. It was decided that this work should continue and eventually several stations were set up, beginning in 1946/47, with the purpose of monitoring Russian transmissions. All three services participated, with as many as five thousand persons involved in listening stations, research and development. Hamilton commanded the radio station at Ottawa. During the war Canada sent an army radio station to the Pacific War (Australia) which included Japanese language translators. There they engaged in interpretation and interception of enemy broadcasts, direction-finding, and analysis of intelligence. During the Korean War Signal Corps personnel served aboard R.C.N. ships, monitoring Chinese and Korean messages. Recounts the important intercept of Chinese messages regarding their entry into that war. R.C.C.S. stations operated until satellite surveillance made them obsolete. By 1970 all operations ceased. General discussion of the Canadian effort. (25:00)

(After a two-minute pause, Hamilton conducts an interview with Maj. Henry (Hank) Koehler of No. 1 Special Wireless Group (1944). Time: through 45:00 to 37:00.)

Hamilton continues his account. During the period June 1969 to May 1971 he was Canadian Military Attache in the Soviet Union. He was a "legitimate spy". Canadians are not too serious about this, not too well-trained. Picture and military uniform recognition very important. (40:00) The objective of a military attache was to see things, most often with Russian acquiescence. Russian military organization, troop strength, training standards (which were high). Took many day trips to identify units, personnel and equipment, rail movements, etc. Some information was obtained from the Finns who had Russian equipment. (45:00)

(Side 2) Observed missile installations, usually seen from civilian aircraft. Prefabricated submarines assembled at Leningrad. Methods of obtaining information: direct observation (Soviet military personnel do not wear civilian clothes at any time), military publications, visits to military camps and schools, social receptions, museums, T.V. and movies, libraries and book stores. (10:00) Explains "Moscow neck", the stiffness associated with continuously looking up to locate microphones and antennas used by the Russians for surveillance. Trips in Russia had to be planned well in advance and were always accompanied by a Russian "Director". As official harrassment was a danger attaches always attempted to travel in groups of three or four. Russians always knew where one was; cars "bugged". Maids and chauffeurs were Russian and always considered to be informers. Electronic eavesdropping devices were in the homes of all diplomatic personnel. A "sweep team" (electronic detectives) in constant need in foreign
missions. Comments on investigative fields other than military. (35:00) Also accredited to Finland where he had a good relationship. Compares the difficulties encountered in serving in Iron Curtain countries. (45:00) The training of Canadians for similar posts should be more intensive: memory, observation, photography, language (one year is not sufficient). Living and shopping conditions. Trips were often directed by Intourist which amused him by their blatant efforts to keep attaches and their wives from military installations. The Congo: from May 1962 to June 1963 he commanded the Signals Corps unit within the United Nations Force in the Congo. Describes the military-geographic situation. Radio-teletype system was established. The unit, 57 Signals Squadron, R.C.C.S., was organized at Barriefield, Ont. in 1960. Technical equipment was in short supply and eventually provided by the Americans who also flew it out to Africa. The Canadians were not entirely welcomed by the Congolese; some Canadians were jailed and had to be forcibly released. Rampant tribalism nearly tore the country apart. (25:00) There was also a R.C.A.F. presence; trained air-traffic controllers. Mentions need for bilingual Canadians, Katangan independence, military operations. Conditions in Leopoldville quite good. Service time: men, six months; officers, a year. Indian medical services not up to par. Anecdote. Canadians were forced to understand the African mentality. It required a little bribery to move ahead. Bottles of Scotch proved to be a useful currency. (40:00)

Lt.-Col. Maurice R. Harries
Royal Canadian Army Service Corps

Record ID: 00000063
Harries, Maurice R., Lt.-Col., 1910-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Maurice R. Harries ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 22, 1987

Born in Jan. 25, 1910 in Toronto. Employed before the war in the automotive business in London, Ont. Inquiries to the Army in Dec. 1939 resulted in a request by the Royal Canadian Army Service Corps that he accept a commission in that Corps in March 1940. Joined No. 1 Mechanical Vehicle Reception Depot as a "mechanist officer". Explains that, as a civilian, he had worked for a French company in carburetor, engine, and fuel development, and as a service manager in an experimental program by Goodrich Tire Company. He was sent directly overseas as a lieutenant after an "officer qualification course" of only a few days. Sailed on Apr. 15, 1940 for Liverpool, then to Camp Borden, Hampshire. There they received Canadian and British vehicles for issuance to the Canadian army. Due to lack of training and communication, many organizational difficulties occurred in the first few months. Anecdotes. Company commanders' course in Apr. 1942. Promoted to captain and second-in-command of No. 63 General Transport Company, then to No. 64 General Transport Company as acting commanding officer. Fell ill, went to hospital, met his wife, a Canadian nursing sister. Then back to 63 Company for several
months as C.O. Was posted to II Canadian Corps headquarters as deputy assistant director of transport in 1943. Comments on army discipline. Position at corps headquarters involved supervision of corps transport, administratively now running much more smoothly. Moved to Normandy on July 6, 1944. Job expanded enormously, including rail traffic for the Canadian Corps. Motor vehicles underwent very heavy usage, requiring complete overhauls in the winter of 1944/45. Drivers were taught to do much of their own light maintenance. Major job scheduling and coordinating traffic control, loading and unloading with occasionally close to one thousand vehicles involved. From Nijmegen shipped supplies forward toward Cleve by night in DUKWs. Had to supply some food to undernourished civilians helping to load the DUKWs which improved productivity. Anecdote on capture of Boulogne. In Canada on leave in March 1945. War ended, commanded No. 6 Company in Halifax. Was posted to Ottawa as chief inspector of mechanical transport (a major). Pre-staff college studies, then Staff College in Kingston in 1950. As a lieutenant-colonel he commanded the R.C.A.S.C. School. Overseas to a transportation course in England. Ottawa again. Was appointed assistant quarter-master general (A.Q.M.G.) in England. Retired in 1961. General comments. Employed by the Emergency Measures Organization in Ottawa in Oct. 1961. (80:00)

Lt.-Col. Lawrence S. Henderson, D.S.O.

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000064
Henderson, Lawrence S., Lt.-Col., D.S.O., 1908-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Lawrence S. Henderson; interviewed by James L. Cross
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
In answer to a question by the interviewer Lt.-Col. Henderson explains the term A.A.&Q.M.G. (Assistant Adjutant and Quartermaster General), D.A.Q.M.G. (Deputy Assistant Quartermaster General), but some confusion apparent with the term A.D.M.S. (Assistant Director of Medical Services). Henderson means D.A.A.G. (Deputy Assistant Adjutant General). Source: telephone conversations on Oct. 25, 1988 between William S. Thackray, Henderson, and Brig. John Adam, for whom Henderson worked at that time.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Jan. 14, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

Born on July 18, 1908 in Vernon, B.C., where his father was manager of the Bank of Montreal. Private school education in the Okanagan and Victoria. First joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment in 1927 as a private, having been recruited because of his skill at rugby! Commissioned in 1928 with several others. As usual all pay went to the regimental funds. Anecdote. Qualifying courses were required for a rank above that held. Attended courses offered at Work Point Barracks which ran for two or six weeks. Promoted to captain. Moved to Nanaimo with the Union Oil Company, thus becoming a member of the reserve of the 1st Battalion. In
1939 presented himself at the Bay St. Armouries in Victoria and received an unexpectedly cool reception; the officer establishment was full. His brother being commanding officer presented another problem, however, after bringing a little outside pressure to bear he was accepted as a lieutenant in A Company. Moved to Otter Point Camp. Made second-in-command of A Company, Macauley Point. Supplies and arms were in fairly short supply. Debert, N.S., tough conditions. There the Canadian Scottish formed part of the 7th Brigade of the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. (20:00) Was sent on a three-week ski instructors' course in Ottawa. Upon returning to the battalion they were issued enough skis to train one company at a time. Overseas in 1941 to England. During motorcycle training in England he broke a leg. Upon recovery he went to a holding unit where each infantry battalion had a staff to ensure, as far as possible, the return of members to their regiments. Posted to Divisional Headquarters as a staff learner (administration). In 1942 he was sent to the 8th Brigade for a short time as an acting staff captain. Comments on a new commanding officer (Lieut.-Col. J.D. Macbeth) who, it was rumoured, favoured the Macbeth tartan for the regiment. Trouble was averted and Lieut.-Col. Fred Cabeldu (of Victoria) assumed command. Heavy training on the Isle of Wight, sea assaults, etc. (35:00) By now Maj. Henderson was the support company commander. Describes composition and use of the five-platoon company. After D-Day he took over command of D Company. (45:00) Anecdote about Caen. After the capture of Calais he became second-in-command of the battalion. Some discussion on the fighting in Belgium. Became commanding officer in the spring of 1945. (15:00) Gives an account of the C.S.R. retaining their pipe band for the crossing of the Rhine, as the 16th Battalion, C.E.F. had done in the Great War. Tough fighting in the Reichswald. Attended the trial of the German General, Kurt Meyer. Did not entirely agree with it. Returns to the Reichswald fighting; heavy casualties, only six remaining of one company. Felt that young reinforcements were of reasonable quality. (35:00) Occupation duties initially guarding prisoners of war, then sending them home to the areas where they formerly lived. Gives an account of meeting and celebrating with Russian naval officers who were there to claim former German naval vessels. Comments on occupation force activities, riding, pipe band school, etc. No real animosity between Canadian troops and the German people. In Germany from June 1945 to Apr. 1946. Returned to Canada and was discharged. (51:00)

**Flying Officer Clarence Francis Henigman**

**Royal Canadian Air Force**

Record ID: 00000080
Henigman, Clarence Francis, F/O, 1920-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Clarence Francis Henigman; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
3 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 30 and June 13, 1985, Victoria, B.C.
(Side 1) Born in 1920 in Saskatoon; moved to Victoria in 1938. Planned to work his passage to England to join the R.A.F. The war intervened in Sept. 1939 and he volunteered for R.C.A.F. air crew. Was called up in Aug. 1940. (10:00) Manning depot, Toronto. Initial training school at the Hunt Club in Toronto where air crew members received their designation. (23:00) Was chosen as a wireless air gunner. Was posted to No. 3 Wireless Training School in Calgary and later, in Mar. 1941, the gunnery and bombing school in Mossbank, Sask. Was awarded wings and sent overseas as a sergeant in June 1941. (35:00) Impressions of England. Operational training unit where he attempted to remuster as a navigator. Was sent to No. 7 Squadron, R.A.F. Took navigational training on Vickers Wellingtons. (45:00) Was not crewed up, but used as a spare crew member. Operational flights were taken in Short Stirling bombers. Comments on heavy casualties. (10:00) First operational flight against Essen. Preparations, briefing, heavy flak over target. On his second operation, which was against Emden, was shot down over the Dutch coast by a night fighter. All the crew parachuted safely. (25:00) They were quickly captured, then taken to Amsterdam, then Dulag Luft near Frankfurt where they were interrogated. They were sent to Stalag Luft 3 about ninety km. from Berlin. Much activity within the camp, German food almost adequate compared to later in the war. Red Cross parcels kept them in reasonably good physical shape. The guards were honest and did not pilfer the parcels. Occasional raids by the Gestapo searching for contraband. Several clandestine radios were in the camp and a news sheet was produced. (45:00)

(Side 2) Educational programs from the University of London were obtained through the Red Cross. Camp life, escapes, guards were bribed with coffee, chocolate, etc., in order to obtain some of the necessities. (10:00) Escape committees were established; great spirit of co-operation. From Stalag Luft 3 they were taken through East Prussia to Lithuania, to a new camp, Stalag Luft 6. (26:00) Comments on the U.S. Air Force P.O.W.s., an independent, fractious group which had difficulties in organizing. The cold and dampness were serious problems in winter. The Germans issued wooden clogs which, for warmth, were much more effective than leather boots. A considerable amount of clothing was received from the Red Cross and in parcels from Canada. Regular inspections by the International Red Cross; if one was ill one had a chance of repatriation. The Germans were very conscious of medical care and treatment. (45:00) In June 1944 they were transported in boxcars to Torun (Thorn) on the Vistula River (Camp No. 357) where they stayed for about six weeks. Then by train to a camp near Hannover. Food became scarce. The winter of 1944/45 was very hard; sickness and low morale a problem. In Apr. 1945 marched westward across Luneberg Heath. Eventually were given one American Red Cross parcel. Their column of P.O.W.s was strafed by R.A.F. Typhoons; perhaps fifty were killed. (20:00) Quite ill. Was aided and fed by some German soldiers; liberated by the British army and (30:00) flown to Brussels, then to England. Was commissioned pilot officer. Many amenities were provided to ex-P.O.W.s: special rations, free rail passes, a wonderful time. Returned to Canada in July 1945. R.C.A.F. provided a poorly organized reception at Lachine, Que. Was discharged in Aug. 1945. Regrets not taking the opportunity to obtain a university education. (44:00)

Pte. Roy E. Henley
13th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

(The Black Watch)

Record ID: 00000081
Henley, Roy E., Pte., 1902-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Roy E. Henley ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, track, mono. also in archives.
This account is not strictly chronological.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 2, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Sept. 21, 1902 at Yewhurst, Kent. Emigrated to central Ontario as a boy. In 1915 joined the Royal Canadian Dragoons as a trumpeter at age thirteen, passing for fifteen or sixteen! Mentions the "Boys Battalion" formed in England of under-aged members of the Canadian Expeditionary Force. Comments on the harsh conditions at the Canadian Reinforcement Depot at Etaples, France. Chinese labour battalions encamped nearby. (10:00) In 1915 he volunteered for the infantry. (Some confusion here: Mr. Henley may have belonged to the Quebec Regiment, 20th Battalion, C.E.F. for a brief period before he was posted to the 13th Battalion, C.E.F.) Comments on the use of the kilt. (20:00) Rum ration, attacks, artillery fire, field guns. (30:00) When out of the line for a rest a considerable time was spent digging trenches or tunnels. (40:00) Personal reminiscences. (45:00) Trench conditions, wounds, gangrene (very prevalent). General comments about World War II, prisoners of war, Dunkirk. Personal collection of military badges. (15:00) Great War comments. Return to Mons in 1918. Armistice period. Hospital experience. Remarks, not always favourable, about former members of the battalion. (45:00)

(Side 2) Vimy Ridge battle in general. Trench activities, experiences with snipers, cavalry, opinion of senior officers, trench life, personal philosophy, rations, shelling, mortars, sentry duty, wound, Lewis gunner, personal weapons, etc. (32:00)

Cdr. Vincent Henry

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000176
Henry, Vincent, Cdr., 1922-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Vincent Henry ; interviewed by Shawn Cafferky
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 165 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 4 track, mono. also in archives.
No other interviews were undertaken.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Dec. 12, 1985 and Jan. 24, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1, track 1) Born on June 8, 1922 and educated in Victoria, B.C. No previous military experience except for cadet corps in grades seven and eight which he describes. Upon graduation from Victoria High School in 1940 he applied to the R.C.A.F. as potential air crew. In the meantime he wrote civil service examinations and was employed in H.M.C. Dockyard as a stores clerk. In 1941 he joined the Royal Canadian Navy as an ordinary seaman. Received air force acceptance, but was refused his transfer on the grounds that the R.C.N. was the senior service and, besides, he was not R.C.N.V.R.! (30:00)

(Side 2, track 1) Explains new entry naval training. Became a writer which involved clerical and administrative work. Considerable emphasis on defense of Dockyard when Japan entered the war. Fisherman's Reserve. Promoted to leading seaman (writer). Offered the opportunity to become an officer. Required to pass exams in four academic subjects, at approximately the senior matriculation level, qualifying as a petty officer or chief petty officer, and serve two years in capital ships of the Royal Navy. (24:00)

(Side 1, track 2) Comments again on the educational requirements for a commission. In 1943 sent to H.M.C.S. Stadacona (shore base) in Halifax where he took petty officer courses while waiting to proceed to the R.N. Promoted to that rank and sailed for the U.K. in Jan. 1944 on the Ile de France. Posted to the manning pool, part of H.M.C.S. Niobe (shore establishment). Experiences of living in wartime England. (31:00)

(Side 2, track 2) In May 1944 drafted to the Royal Naval Barracks at Portsmouth, then to H.M.S. Formidable (fleet carrier) just coming out of refit at Belfast. Sailed for Scapa Flow. Commenced operations off the Norwegian coast. Later acted as a floating air reserve for the D-Day landing. General remarks on aircraft carrier operations. (24:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Returns to remarks about H.M.S. Formidable, with some corrections. Experienced "culture shock" in a very large ship as his first seagoing appointment. Worked strictly on administrative duties in the captain's office. Partially describes the process of bringing the ship to operational readiness, including flying-on of the aircraft. Emphasizes that crews and ships very dependent upon one another. Discusses flying operations, including casualties. High element of risk flying off a carrier; lives were lost accidentally. Damage control and safety in a carrier were probably more important than in other kinds of ships. Operational patrols for ten days or two weeks. (47:00)

Lt.-Col. T.H. Hewitt, M.C.

46th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Record ID: 00000065
Hewitt, T.H., Lt.-Col., M.C., 1889-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by T.H. Hewitt ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Lt.-Col. Hewitt became Commanding Officer of the Regina Rifle Regiment (militia) ca. 1930.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
This interview took place when Lt.-Col. Hewitt was ninety-three years old.
Speech poor and some confusion evident. Unfortunately not much detail provided.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 6, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Feb. 1, 1889 in Yorkshire, Eng. Initially came to Canada, to one of the large English-
sponsored colony-ranches near Moose Jaw, as a boy of sixteen (1905). Comments on horses,
wildfowl, homesteading, etc. Speaks of his family in England. (10:00) He was later joined in
Canada by his father. For five years worked in the post office; salary fifty dollars per month. In
May 1910 became a Deputy Registrar in the Saskatchewan government land titles office. Was a
member of the local militia and, in 1915, joined the 46th Battalion, C.E.F. which became part of
the 4th Canadian Division. To France in 1916, fought on the Somme. Lewis gunner. Sergeant.
Commissioned just before the battle for Vimy Ridge. Action around Lens. (40:00) Battle
Missed Passchendaele as he was away on course. (45:00) Discussion changes to current times,
returned to life in Moose Jaw. Battle of Amiens, summer of 1918. Trip to the Rhine after the
Armistice. Returned to Canada in 1919. Demobilized. (13:00)

Mrs. James C. (Inez Jessie) Hibbard

Record ID: 00000177
Hibbard, Inez Jessie, Mrs., 1906-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Inez Jessie Hibbard ; interviewed by Reginald H.
Roy
3 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives also holds interviews with husband, R.-Adm. James C. Hibbard.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 15, 22, and July 6, 1983.

(Side 1) Inez Jessie Hibbard, wife of Rear Admiral James C. Hibbard, D.S.C., R.C.N., was born
on Dec. 15, 1906 in Victoria, B.C. Father was David R. Ker of the well-known Victoria family.
Educated in Victoria and later at boarding school in Toronto. At the age of seventeen she visited
Great Britain and then spent some months with a French family in Paris. Subsequently travelled
through France and Italy. Returned to Victoria. Attended many social events, including dinner at
again, including Germany where she attended a magnificent ball at the former Kaiser's palace at
Wiesbaden. Spain, Egypt, Jerusalem, and up the Nile by steamer. Met Jimmy Hibbard, a young
naval officer in Victoria, and was married in March 1933. (45:00) Early days of community work in Victoria. Navy wife had duties; discusses the custom of calling on senior officers' wives and others. Halifax. Points out that in the first sixteen years of married life (1933-1945) her husband had shore appointments for only three years. Visited the wealthy summer community of Bar Harbor, Maine where they enjoyed great hospitality. She followed her husband to the West Indies during winter training cruises. Housing in Halifax. On course in England in March 1936. Lived in "digs" which consisted of a small apartment, but with meals provided from a central kitchen. First unpleasant contact with British "reserve". Jimmy Hibbard appointed executive officer in the British destroyer H.M.S. Bulldog. Presented at court in 1937; explains the procedure and dress for ladies (as instructed by the Lord Chamberlain's office). A footman was required for every car arriving at Buckingham Palace. (48:00)

(Side 2) Continues with description of the scene within the palace. Attended the coronation procession and the naval review. Exciting social and political times. Spanish Civil War and a trip to Biarritz. Recalled to Halifax where Jimmy Hibbard was appointed to H.M.C.S. Venture, a sail training vessel. Next in Victoria where much preparation was required for the expected visit of the King and Queen. Lt. Hibbard received the new colours for the R.C.N. from the King. When war began Mrs. Hibbard and other naval wives encoded messages at Esquimalt without any previous training. Their "pay" was a letter of appreciation from the Minister of Defence and a silver ashtray. Next, to Halifax, leaving the house in Victoria for what turned out to be eight years. Lt. Cdr. Hibbard appointed to command H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer). Involved in various forms of volunteer war work. (45:00) Rented a house in Newfoundland where Skeena made port for two days each month. Experiences with Americans: how quickly they built their base in Newfoundland. Her feelings and reactions to friends who became war casualties. Returned to Halifax. Lt. Cdr. Hibbard appointed captain of H.M.C.S. Iroquois (Tribal class destroyer) which was in the U.K. (1943). Iroquois returned to Halifax for a short time in 1944 which made a difference to Mrs. Hibbard for she could now visualize where her husband was conducting his war at sea. In Apr. 1945 Cdr. Hibbard returned to Halifax. The looting during the Halifax Riot of May 1945 made a lasting impression. Remembers the ammunition depot explosions at a later date which kept up most of the night. Ottawa posting. In 1947 Capt. Hibbard appointed to command H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser). Washington, D.C. Flag officer, Pacific coast. The Admiral's wife had many social and semi-diplomatic duties. Official calls, many visitors. Final day in the Navy. No regrets at all. (50:00)

Rear-Admiral James C. Hibbard, D.S.C. and Bar
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000208
Hibbard, James C., R.-Adm., D.S.C., Bar, 1908-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by James C. Hibbard ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
10 sound cassettes (ca. 720 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.

Record ID: 00000209
Hibbard, James C., R.-Adm., D.S.C., Bar, 1908-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by James C. Hibbard ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives holds additional interviews with R.-Adm. Hibbard. Reels include 720 min. of interviews conducted by Chris D. Main, June 6, 7, 13, 27, July 2, 7, and Aug. 14, 1983, Victoria, B.C. Archives also holds interviews with wife, Inez Jessie Hibbard.
Recorded on original sound tape reel, Apr. 23, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born the youngest of two sons of an Anglican minister on March 26, 1908 in the province of Quebec. Both brothers were officers in the navy. Joined the Quebec City half-company, Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve and in summer 1925 went to sea for the first time. He was accepted as a cadet, Royal Canadian Navy (R.C.N.) and in 1926 sent to England for training. Placed in the hands of Gieves, the naval tailors, and proceeded to join H.M.S. Erebus (monitor), the direct-entry training ship. Quickly introduced to proper social customs of the mess: no political discussion, no ladies' names mentioned, formal dress and dining. (45:00) Living conditions, routines, attitudes. As a midshipman in 1927 joined H.M.S. Emperor of India (battleship), an older coal-burning vessel. As members of the gun room, midshipmen came under the command of a sub-lieutenant who ruled very firmly. Limited monthly wine account and disciplined meals were the norm. Acted as the captain's "doggie" for nearly a year. Found that some messages from the captain and others were sometimes difficult to deliver and failure to do so resulted in stoppage of leave. Participated in a great deal of small boat work. In charge of a steam picket boat, occasionally using his own money in order to maintain it at a high level of smartness. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) On-the-job training fostered teamwork and loyalty to the ship. Describes coaling ship: everybody worked, butter smeared on neck and ears so that coal dust could be more easily removed. A twenty-four-hour job, slept on deck, cleaned ship immediately after coaling finished. Three months special study for sub-lieutenants exams. When successful, pay became four dollars per day and he was posted to Greenwich for courses. Returned to Canada in 1931 after five years training, posted to H.M.C.S. Vancouver (destroyer) at Esquimalt.
(Reel 2, Side 1) Met his future wife in Victoria. Promoted to lieutenant, Jan. 1932. Married. Comments on Sunday church parade, captain's inspection. Navy life hardly affected by the Depression except that money was a little short. Sent to England on course and then served as first lieutenant in destroyer, H.M.S. Bulldog. Mentions the "first lieutenants' union" in which all first lieutenants decided upon the standards to be maintained in the flotilla. In 1936 served on patrol off Spain as part of the non intervention patrol. (45:00) Returned to Canada as second-in-command of H.M.C.S. Venture (schooner) which he considered a considerable "comedown". In 1938 posted as first lieutenant to H.M.C.S. Restigouche (destroyer). When new colours were presented to the R.C.N. in 1939 by the King, Lt. Hibbard was the colour officer. At Esquimalt, when war was declared in 1939, Canadian ships were fully prepared.

(Reel 2, Side 2) Describes convoys, usual fifty to sixty ships proceeding fairly slowly, the orders required, the commodore, the escorts. Limited asdic coverage. Surface attacks by U-boats. Escort composition and deployment. Serious gales, navigational problems, approaching enemy submarines. Captain of H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer). Convoy SC 42. Attacks, escorts, tactics required. Details of the three-day battle. Ships sunk. Escorts attempted to force submarines under the surface where their speed was slow. Eventually hunter/killer groups were formed to sink submarines while escorts proceeded with the convoy. General comments. Poses the question why submarines did not concentrate their attacks against the escorts. Awarded the Distinguished Service Cross (D.S.C.). Admires the qualities of both naval and merchant seamen.

(Reel 3, Side 1) Returns to an account of H.M.C.S. Venture in the training of young seamen. Fine concept, but too close to war to produce the required numbers adequately. In 1942 appointed ashore in Halifax to train crews for the Battle of the Atlantic. Comments on his experienced staff, all "battle trained". Took ships to sea and exercised crews and the ships. Initiated the "battle trainer", developed ashore, after a particularly ineffective training exercise at sea. Explains principle, usage, effectiveness for officers and men. Mentions the relationship with the Halifax civilian population was only fair; the city was feeling the strain of large numbers of seamen. Appointed captain of H.M.C.S. Iroquois (Tribal class destroyer). There had been a little unrest in the ship, but it was quickly squelched by the first voyage to Murmansk. Convoy escort to north Russia from Aug. 1943 to Jan. 1944. At Christmas 1943 a major battle developed. The Germans attacked the convoy with the battle cruiser, Scharnhorst. In command of a division of four destroyers attempting to encircle the Scharnhorst, but the German ship turned away. Celebrated Christmas in Murmansk, puzzled by the suspicious attitude of the Russians. In Jan. 1944, as part of the Tenth Flotilla in the English Channel, they were to prevent the Germans' use of the coastal waters and later, from escaping from French ports. Remained there, working from Plymouth, until Sept. 1944. (60:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Describes the Tenth Flotilla, four Canadian, two British, two Polish destroyers. Operated in the Bay of Biscay and close to the French Coast at night. Reads signal recording successes in the five months, Apr. 15 to Sept. 15. Thirty-five ships and one submarine sunk, fourteen damaged. Iroquois participated in twenty-two "kills" and four damaged. Superior radar equipment often caused Iroquois to be the leading ship. Commander Hibbard was one of the first to fight a battle from an operations room rather than from the bridge. In fighting a radar-directed battle fire was opened at close range, four to six thousand yards. Sent a party ashore to the French Ile d'Yeu and, in effect, liberated it, appointing an interim governor. Describes a night
action against two destroyers escorting a small convoy. In two nights completely emptied the ship of ammunition. Awarded Bar to the D.S.C. Returned to Halifax in March 1945 after voyages to Norway and Russia. Speaks of his admiration for the German submarine service. Returned to North America in the Queen Mary carrying the badly wounded. Spent several hours each day visiting the wounded -- no complaints from them! A sobering, but uplifting experience. Appointed Captain D at Halifax, effectively having under command all ships at that base. Discusses the Halifax riot on V-E Day. Lack of planning part of the cause. Believes that the pubs and liquor stores should have remained open. Unfairly, the navy received most of the blame, but soldiers and civilians were major participants. Compares Halifax to the more serious riot in San Francisco where a much greater amount of damage was done. Federal politicians there did not become involved and the navy refused to accept any blame, saying that it was a matter for the civil authorities to control. (45:00)

(Reel 4, Side 1) Prepared to send a naval squadron to the Pacific. Protested the need to volunteer. At the same time was demobilizing ships very quickly and without proper safeguards for the ammunition. Warned Ottawa of this dangerous operation. When some ammunition exploded he ordered the north section of Halifax evacuated and all ships that were able, put to sea. As a result of warnings given, the government took the entire responsibility for damage that occurred. Reads from the Halifax Chronicle. Appointed deputy chief of personnel in Ottawa. First inkling of integration in the forces occurred under Brooke Claxton, the Minister of National Defence. In his opinion Claxton was a fine man who let the military carry out government policy. In spring 1947 appointed to command H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser) -- a wonderful job. Valuable and complicated big-ship administrative training offered to the navy through ships of this size. Very keen to work with the Americans and personally arranged exercises about which Ottawa did not want to know, there being no direct political arrangement in place. Eventually became a common and officially acceptable part of naval training. Appointed to the National War College, Washington, D.C. for the year 1949/1950. Promoted to commodore and chief of naval personnel. The navy troubled by plans for expansion due to the Korean War. Insufficient trained members of the officer corps was a major concern. The account jumps ahead to Paul Hellyer and unification. Promoted to rear-admiral in 1953 and flag officer, Pacific. Visited Hawaii in order to emphasize Canadian/United States co-operation. Stump-Hibbard Agreement signed, which is now part of the U.S./Canadian Defence agreement. Persuaded the Minister of National Defence that the agreement was in the best interests of Canadian sovereignty. Early retirement in 1956 due to poor health. (90:00)

(Reel 5, Side 1) Speech to the crew of H.M.C.S. Terra Nova (destroyer escort) on the twentieth anniversary of her commissioning (June 27, 1979). Speaks of the importance of the man in the Navy: what one does and how one does it; it is the effort that counts; be careful of criticism; loyalty to all aspects of life. Second speech, May 9, 1970. Battle of the Atlantic. Reads signal from German naval headquarters ordering the cessation of hostilities. Mentions the record of the U-boat, merchant ships, and the spirit of those who participated. Fall of France, H.M.C.S. Skeena, defence of the South Coast of England, tales of ships sinking, convoy SC 42, etc. Iroquois and the actions in the North and off the French Coast. (45:00)

(Reel 6, Side 1) Reads a speech to the mayors of British Columbia, in conference at Victoria (1955). The importance of maritime trade and defence. The submarine as a weapon. National and international security are part of the same thing. Conflict continues partly due to differing
concepts of justice between people, but it must be controlled. Events must be thought about very thoroughly. The primary role of the Canadian navy remains, and is the most effective, in anti-submarine warfare. Speech ends. Upon retirement spent seven months on a trip around the world. Visited many foreign dignitaries whom he had met during his career. Discusses unification at some length. Thinks that Rear-Admiral W.M. Landymore may have been the best naval officer in the history of the Canadian navy. Reads message to Capt. David Groos of the parliamentary defence committee. Deplores the lack of requests for advice to senior officers of the services, but recognizes that the government may have already made up its mind. (52:00) Claims that all the best senior officers left the services, leaving the weaker ones behind. Lunched with Paul Hellyer in 1978 and put the question to him, why was he now a Conservative. Received an ineffective answer. Comments that he knew and liked Prime Minister Mike Pearson, but that he (Pearson) did not know what was going on in the domestic scene. Thinks that integration was very good, but that unification seriously damaged the forces. Claims that Paul Hellyer told him that the unification of the services was a mistake. Lists a few civilian boards of which he is a member. Philosophy of naval service. Control of the sea is vital. Mentions requirement to volunteer for the Pacific war. In 1947 the Mainguy Report pointed out serious deficiencies. Political influence deemed to be a crime by the navy. Reads letter to his member of parliament in which he deplores the lack of integrity of many politicians. (37:00)

(Reel 7, Side 1) Reasons for joining the navy, life as a cadet. Strict discipline for midshipmen in H.M.S. Emperor of India. English social habits, manners and discipline, considerate of others, yet cool to strangers. Greenwich, return to Canada. Relationship to the men the greatest factor in naval life. Canadian forces used to be highly respected, now less so. In 1950 he rejected the idea of recruiting Royal Navy (R.N.) officers for the R.C.N. Started the Reserve Officers Training Corps at the universities. The Canadian navy suffered much through the use of inadequately trained officers during the war and immediately afterward. Describes living in H.M.C.S. Vancouver. Main source of disillusionment in the navy was power-hungry politicians. Close ties with the R.N. saved the R.C.N. at one point, but Canadianization was not rapid enough. (47:00)

(Reel 7, Side 2) In Germany made the acquaintance of a former German naval officer. Found themselves to be kindred souls. Speaks of war and the attitude, for instance, of certain individuals who advocate unilateral disarmament; many are well educated, but not mature enough to discuss the problem in an adequate manner. (10:00)

Flying Officer Richard Davidson Higgins
Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000075
Higgins, Richard Davidson, F/O, 1922-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Richard Davidson Higgins ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 27, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 23, 1922 in Victoria. After graduating from high school he worked for a few months for the Provincial Government before joining the R.C.A.F. in June 1940. Was called up and sent to Brandon, Man. in Feb. 1941. Barrack conditions were barely adequate. The mess hall was two miles away. Enlisted as air crew, but they were trained for specific air crew positions as service needs developed. Training very basic. (10:00) Guard duty at Calgary (No. 3 Service Flying Training School). Was chosen to train as a wireless air gunner. Nearly all wireless theory and practice with a little gunnery thrown in, almost as an afterthought. Thinks that the selection of pilots depended on the availability of aircraft types. Anecdotes. (25:00) Bombing and Gunnery School at Lethbridge: was awarded wings after a month. Was posted as a wireless operator in Ferry Command at Dorval Que. With a civilian pilot delivered a Consolidated Catalina (flying boat) to Scotland, then travelled to the reception centre at Bournemouth. (35:00) Was sent to Prestwick for training on early radar equipment. He was "crewed-up" at the Operational Training Unit at Cranwell where they trained on the obsolescent Armstrong- Whitworth Whitley (bomber). (45:00) The crew opted to go to a Vickers Wellington (bomber) squadron. No. 172 Squadron, R.A.F. in North Devon (Aug. 1942). This was the first squadron to be fitted with the Leigh Light which retracted into the belly of the aircraft. After a U-boat was picked up on the surface by radar, the Leigh Light illuminated the boat during the bomb-run. (10:00) Describes a theoretical attack: light on at one-quarter mile distance from the boat, aircraft at two hundred feet altitude. Moved to Gibraltar in 1943 and flew from there on operations for about six weeks. In company with No. 173 Squadron moved to the Azores for three months, then returned to North Devon with a full load of liquor and bananas! (30:00) By D-Day he was an instructor at an operational training unit in Scotland. Returned to Canada for a month's leave in Nov. 1944. Did not again go overseas. (36:00)

Capt. Peter Hinton

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000076
Hinton, Peter, Capt.
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Peter Hinton ; interviewed by Mark Hill
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 22, 1985, Victoria, B.C.
Born in Shanghai, China, grew up in Victoria, and was educated at Brentwood College. Volunteered and was called up by the navy in 1941 as an acting temporary probationary sub-lieutenant. Motive and feelings about joining the navy. H.M.C.S. Kings, Halifax. Good barrack conditions, hard work, gunnery, anti-submarine, logistics, torpedo, parade ground, at sea. Looked on as a great adventure. After four-month concentrated course horrified to be appointed ashore in Vancouver. Later was appointed to H.M.C.S. Kelowna, a Bangor class minesweeper, on west coast patrol. A happy ship in which he learned much pilotage. Combined operations training centre at Comox, B.C. Now a lieutenant, he went overseas to England where he was appointed captain of a landing craft, infantry (large), L262. Describes the ship: armament, seakeeping, navigation, equipment, capacity (about two hundred persons), beaching procedure. Of his ship's company only five had been to sea before! Comments on landing exercises. Describes some of the specialized ships used on D-Day. Sailed for Normandy on June 4, 1944 with part of the North Nova Scotia Highlanders. Terrific traffic jam in English ports when D-Day was postponed. Sailed again on June 5. Rough seas very hard on the troops who were put ashore at Bernieres sur-Mer. Beach obstacles not well cleared. Mined when about to unbeam, returned to England under tow. Later engaged in ferrying reinforcements and returning wounded. In Oct. 1944 the ships were paid off. Was attached to the R.N. as a relief captain at Lowestoft. Returned to Canada in Aug. 1945. Was discharged. Rejoined the navy during the Korean War, serving in Canada. Enjoyed the peacetime naval professionalism. Commanded two minesweepers, two destroyers, and H.M.C.S. Protecteur (operational supply ship). Executive officer, H.M.C.S. Stadacona (shore base) and then base commander at both Halifax and Victoria. Retired in 1976. Unification: great harm done to the navy. Intellectually stifling, much loss of identity. Situation now slowly improving. Comments on Paul Hellyer and his sometimes shabby treatment of the services. Operational effects. Cannot think of any important positive attributes due to unification. Believes that more retired naval personnel should be working at the political level of society. (80:00)

Squadron Leader Philip D.P. Holmes, D.F.C.

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000082
Holmes, Philip D.P., S/L, D.F.C., 1924-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Philip D.P. Holmes ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 in.) : 1 7/8 ips, track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Jan. 11, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Feb. 2, 1924 in Victoria, B.C. Attended Victoria College for one year. Joined the air force in 1941. Was sent to manning depot in Edmonton where he remembers the kind treatment by local citizens to all the young servicemen. "Tarmac duty" in southern Alberta before returning
to Edmonton to the initial training school for several weeks of classroom work. (10:00) Took elementary flying training at High River in de Havilland Tiger Moths. Civilian instructors. At No. 3 Service Flying Training School at Currie Barracks, Calgary the work was intense and much was learned on the Cessna Crane (twin-engine monoplane). In rank he was a leading aircraftman during this period. Was awarded wings, after a total of about two hundred hours flying time, (25:00) and commissioned as a pilot officer, then posted to the general reconnaissance school at Charlottetown where he was taught navigation. Anecdotes regarding the R.A.F. station commander. Posted overseas, sent to New York to join a large convoy, but after an abortive start returned to Halifax and boarded the Queen Elizabeth for a high-speed (four-day) voyage to Scotland. Came down with mumps aboard ship and spent two weeks in a Glasgow hospital. After a short stay in Bournemouth he was assigned to Bomber Command. Much night flying practice at a variety of schools. Converted to four-engine aircraft (Handley Page Halifax). Flew short operational trips to France, dropping leaflets, to get the "feel" of operations. Joined No. 433 Squadron at Skipton, Yorks. in June 1944. Compares operational methods of the R.C.A.F. and the U.S. Air Force. Changed to the Avro Lancaster; carried a heavier bomb load. Spent considerable time mining enemy waters, including Norwegian. (45:00) These were exciting low-level operations. Describes the crowded skies on regular missions of several hundred aircraft, chance of collisions. Air crew casualties ran about fifty per cent for any given tour. Night operations over Germany; daylight attacks usually the Ruhr which was less distant. Later in the war his aircraft was attacked by Me 262's (Messerschmitt jet fighters) and his gunners were credited with shooting down one and one-half of the new jets. Always approached the enemy very warily; over-confident crews did not last long. Until the end of the war there was heavy enemy fighter opposition and anti-aircraft fire. (15:00) Procedure for target identification became quite sophisticated. Pathfinders (de Havilland Mosquitoes) gave instructions where to bomb, flares dropped, codes used. The "Master Bomber" directed the aircraft over the target during the entire period of the raid. Normally the Lancaster carried four thousand-pound bombs plus incendiaries. (20:00) Very tight aerial discipline. For future use of intelligence officers every aircraft carried an automatic camera. Was promoted to squadron leader on his twenty-first birthday in 1945. Took command of an Avro Lincoln bomber conversion squadron just before the end of the war. High praise for ground crew to whom air crew owed a great debt. Comments on take-off problems which could cause the four thousand-pound bombs to explode. (30:00) Returned to Canada on leave before joining the Pacific Force. Was discharged in 1945. Joined the family business. Continued in the R.C.A.F. reserve for a few years before finally retiring. (35:00)

Wing Commander Richard E. Horsfield

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000175
Horsfield, Richard E., W/C, -198-?
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Richard E. Horsfield ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Interview of May 24, 1978, on reel 1, appears never to have been in the possession of the archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 31 and June 24, 1978, Maple Bay, B.C.

(Reel 1) Interview of May 24, 1978 appears never to have been in the possession of the University of Victoria Archives.

(Reel 2, Side 1) Discusses a Maj. Ellis, a prisoner of the Turks and a clever escape of the Great War, eventually reaching Cyprus and England. In the 1930's gave lectures on flying and also intelligence work. Took a job as information officer with the Dept. of National Defence, but was required to join the R.C.A.F. beforehand. Engaged in recruiting in Ontario, then on Vancouver Island. Squadron leader at the end of 1941. Promoted to wing commander. Instituted an advertising program in conjunction with private corporations that saved the government millions. Began to work on radio propaganda. (45:00) Wrote thirteen radio shows, "L for Lancie". Anecdotes of Ottawa; the missing code machine, etc. Worked for and admired “Chubby” Powers, the Minister for Air. Criticizes Quebec regarding conscription and the war effort. Assistant director of manning, becoming director in early 1944 as an acting group captain. Later became chairman of the Demobilization Board. Some discussion regarding high ranking members of the R.C.A.F. (30:00) Demobilization point system. Concerned with ex-servicemen at U.B.C. Explains some of the benefits made available. Postwar he was employed by the Dept. of Veterans Affairs. Comments on the later unification of the services. Tradition adversely affected. Anecdotes of prewar army life and later of the air force. (58:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Opinions on senior air officers. Recruiting services in Vancouver. "Canadianization" of the R.C.A.F. serving in the R.A.F. Tests for the selection of air crew. Flying experiences on the west coast and elsewhere. (25:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) In 1940 the R.A.F. advised that they were short of radio-radar technicians. Unsuccessful attempt to recruit through Queen's University, but were more successful recruiting technicians from the commercial sector. Stories of Billy Bishop, Douglas Bader, Campbell, Beurling. Recruiting pilots. Alaska Highway. General comments; some stories perhaps apocryphal. Air Force headquarters. (51:00)

Air Vice-Marshal George Roberts Howsam, C.B., M.C.
116th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force
Royal Flying Corps
Canadian Air Force
Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000192
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by George Roberts Howsam ; interviewed by William Alexander Binney Douglas
1 sound cassette (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
A/V/M Howsam's further distinctions include the Legion of Merit in Degree of Commander (U.S.A.); Order of White Lion (Czechoslovakia); and Commandeur de l'Ordre de la Couronne (Belgium).
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with A/V/M Howsam. Reels include 480 min. of interviews conducted by Chris D. Main, July 27, Aug. 3, 15, 27, 31, and Sept. 12, 1979, Victoria, B.C. and 120 min. of interviews conducted by William S. Thackray, May 14, 21, 28, and June 2, 1980, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 28, 1975, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000193
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by George Roberts Howsam; interviewed by Chris D. Main
4 sound cassettes (ca. 480 min.) : standard mono.
A/V/M Howsam's further distinctions include the Legion of Merit in Degree of Commander (U.S.A.); Order of White Lion (Czechoslovakia); and Commandeur de l'Ordre de la Couronne (Belgium).
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 480 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives holds additional interviews with A/V/M Howsam. Reels include a 105-min. interview conducted by William Alexander Binney Douglas, Aug. 28, 1975, Victoria, B.C. and 120 min. of interviews conducted by William S. Thackray, May 14, 21, 28, and June 2, 1980, Victoria, B.C. Recorded on original sound tape reel July 27, Aug. 3, 15, 27, 31, and Sept. 12, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000194
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by George Roberts Howsam; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
A/V/M Howsam's further distinctions include the Legion of Merit in Degree of Commander (U.S.A.); Order of White Lion (Czechoslovakia); and Commandeur de l'Ordre de la Couronne (Belgium).
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives holds aditional interviews with A/V/M Howsam. Reels include a 105-min. interview conducted by William Alexander Binney Douglas, Aug. 28, 1975, Victoria, B.C. and 480 min. of interviews conducted by Chris D. Main, July 27, Aug. 3, 15, 27, 31, and Sept. 12, 1979, Victoria, B.C. Recorded on original sound tape reels May 14, 21, 28, and June 2, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1 interviewed by W. A. B. Douglas) As a member of the Canadian Air Force stationed in High River, Alta. in the early twenties, flew DH4’s (de Havilland general purpose aircraft) on patrol over much of Alberta. Anecdotal account of Air Marshal G.M. Croil, seaplane/flying boat types and uses. Photographic equipment. Employed by the government of Manitoba and several federal government departments. At Camp Borden was closely associated with the Royal Canadian Corps of Signals. Flew the Armstrong-Whitworth Siskin (fighter) at air shows. Flying club movement in the 1930's. R.A.F. Staff College in England. (65:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returned to Canada as Staff Officer (Civil Operations). Stationed in Toronto; early experiences with the militia and auxiliary squadrons. Initial efforts to establish the Commonwealth Air Training Plan. Relations with the Americans. Commanded No. 2 Army Cooperation Squadron at Rockcliffe. Important role of the aero clubs in providing elementary flying training to pilots. Second World War; the Alaska Highway and the air staging route to Alaska. Anecdote regarding Air Chief Marshal L.S. Breadner and "Chubby" Powers, the Minister for Air. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by C. D. Main) Born in 1895 in Ontario (d. Apr. 16, 1988, Victoria, B.C.). Howsam joined the 116th Battalion, C.E.F. in 1916. Transferred to the Royal Flying Corps in 1917 and trained in Toronto and at Camp Borden. After only thirty-six hours of flying training he was sent to France as a second lieutenant in July 1917. Comments on various aircraft, particularly the great agility of the Sopwith Camel (fighter) upon which he trained in England. Remarks on the built-in use of the centrifugal force/torque produced by the rotary engine. In unskilled hands, at low altitude, torque could cause an aircraft to crash or, in a turn, be of great benefit in aerial fighting. Joined No. 70 Squadron, R.F.C. in Sept. 1917. Passchendaele. Further comments on the Camel in action. Describes the small aerodrome close behind the front lines in the Ypres sector. Living conditions. Service flying began with three or four days of flight training followed by "line patrols" in order to become familiar with the topography. Spent much time on aircraft maintenance and on the firing range as constant practice was essential to success.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Did not receive any formal tactical training, learned to fly operationally strictly through experience. Compares British and German aircraft. Air tactics, aircraft markings, importance of good ammunition. Lack of parachutes. Returns to engine torque-induced flying maneuvers, including the "flick roll". (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Aerodrome near Poperinge. Again describes patrolling. Comments on flight commander, aircraft engines, flying ceiling, flying clothes, early oxygen supply. Letter regarding E.B. Quigly, C Flight commander, an outstanding fighter tactician. In winter 1918 often flew into enemy territory to a depth of ten to twelve miles. Describes the fighting, shooting down of enemy aircraft. Accurate German anti-aircraft fire kept the R.F.C. at a respectable altitude. Just
before the German offensive of March 1918 the squadron moved to support the 5th British Army. Heavy aerial fighting took place once the offensive was underway. Spent much time bombing bridges. The squadron had to move on short notice in order to escape the advancing Germans. (80:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Wounded in the right shoulder by anti-aircraft fire during an attack on a bridge on March 26, 1918. Knocked unconscious for a few moments, but managed to reach a small British aerodrome. Four months later he was able to return to flying, at first on Sopwith Snipes at the London airport. Returned to France in Sept. 1918. As a member of No. 43 Squadron he flew Snipes in support of day bombers. (45:00) At the end of the war he was an acting flight lieutenant and became a member of the British Army of Occupation. Comments on German civilians. Joined the Canadian Air Force in England where they attended to the aircraft and equipment given by Britain to Canada. When the Canadian squadrons were disbanded a R.A.F. temporary commission was offered and accepted. Resigned after a few courses and returned to Canada. Joined the Air Force and spent the next few years working for civilian government departments. Digresses to anecdotes, some about World War II. Describes a flawed training aircraft and how the flaw was discovered. (45:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Repeats account of first joining the Canadian Air Force in England (1919). In 1921 returned to Canada and joined the C.A.F. Flew DH4's (de Havilland general purpose aircraft) in western Canada. Mapping and photo surveying. Amphibious flying in Vickers Vikings. Military training took place in the winter, especially at Winnipeg. The Royal Canadian Air Force came into being in 1924. Stationed in Vancouver for a time. (45:00) Details of flying in Manitoba, early wireless, emergency engine repairs in the North. Attended the militia staff course at the Royal Military College. Comments on air power/airships. (45:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Led the R.C.A.F. demonstration flying team in 1929 flying Armstrong-Whitworth Siskins (fighters). Royal Air Force Staff College, England. Early planning for the Commonwealth Air Training Plan. Auxiliary (or reserve) squadrons established to which pilots were fed from flying clubs. Wing Commander Robb, the R.A.F. liaison officer. Important social aspect to the staff college. Returned to Canada to face financial restrictions (1931/1932, although the flying load was increased. Four-year posting to Toronto where an auxiliary squadron was established and another in Hamilton. Appointed Director of Training in Ottawa. (30:00)

(Reel 4, Side 1, interviewed by W. S. Thackray) Planning for possible expansion of flying training. Impressions of the defence bureaucracy in Ottawa, 1937-1939. Government policy dictated that all senior Air Force officers in Canada should be Canadian. This led to unfortunate repercussions for the R.C.A.F. later in England. Early wartime aid by the Americans. (45:00) Training commands established which, by 1943, consisted of 360 training schools. In 1940 undertook a familiarization tour of the United Kingdom and France. Public relations. Problems of building training bases. (40:00)

(Reel 4, Side 2) Offers an account of the construction and establishment of the training base at Yorkton, Sask. Private funds were obtained to enhance mess facilities. In Feb. 1942 was promoted to air commodore and stationed in Calgary. The Northwest Staging Route began and airports became clogged with American aircraft. Appointed to command and reorganize the
staging route. Discusses training aircraft, safety factors; North American Harvards were excellent. (35:00)

(Reel 5, Side 1) Much co-operation with the Americans, additional headquarters established. Details of British Commonwealth Air Training Plan. In 1944 air training was reduced and Howsam was transferred to Ottawa to plan for the postwar air force. (45:00) Experiences with the "political factor" in Ottawa. Retired, effective Apr. 30, 1946. Explains some problems with the R.A.F. component of the air training plan. In 1942 particularly there were man management problems of a fairly serious nature. Feels that R.C.A.F. headquarters suffered from some political interference. (45:00) Returns to comments on the Canadian Air Force at the end of the Great War.

Col. Alfred Geoffrey Hoyt

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000083
Hoyt, Alfred Geoffrey, Col., 1921-1998
My Army and Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Alfred Geoffrey Hoyt; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 10, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born in 1921 at San Bernardino, Calif. of Canadian parents. Family returned to Nanaimo in 1929. At the age of fifteen he joined the 2nd Battalion, Canadian Scottish Regiment (militia) and two years later, in 1939, was mobilized. Discusses conditions and attitudes toward the military in Nanaimo. Was sent to Prince Rupert to guard the harbour. Much training of recruits. Because of his age he did not go overseas with the unit. Remustered into the air force as air crew in order to get overseas. Manning depot and initial training school in Edmonton. Unsuccessful in pilot training, so opted for navigation training at Portage la Prairie. Was awarded wings and commissioned. (30:00) Overseas from Halifax in Jan. 1943. Conditions in England. Kept busy until the "air crew pipeline" required him. Many navigational courses, including visual navigation in England which was the most difficult. Converted to the Handley Page Halifax. Flew to Italy via North Africa. The only Canadian and only officer in the crew. (45:00) Comments on various bomber aircraft. Joined No. 614 Squadron, R.A.F. which was a Pathfinder squadron. Very accurate navigation was required so that the target could be identified at night by the bomber force. Flew for almost a year from Foggia Plain in Italy. On operations the squadron usually put up eight aircraft, three or four carrying illuminating flares, three with visual target markers, and a "Master Bomber". The latter adjusted the fall of visual markers if necessary and
the approach of bombers onto the target. His fifth operational flight was to the Ploiesti, Rumanian oilfields, carrying illuminating flares. The oilfields were heavily defended for miles around. As the first aircraft on the target they were held in searchlight cones for a total of fourteen minutes, were heavily damaged, but managed to return to Italy, although their aircraft was deemed to be a write-off. Half of the squadron was lost on this mission: about twenty per cent was the usual casualty rate. Finished first tour of forty operations and made ten more before the war ended. Later on they converted to Consolidated Liberators (20:00) as the American spare parts were much more easily available than were those for the Halifax. As a flight lieutenant he became senior navigator for the squadron. The LORAN navigation system came in at this time (40:00). Usual targets were enemy airfields, bridges, railyards, etc. in Italy and the Balkans. Toward the end of the war they ferried supplies to Tito's partisans and ammunition to Athens, Greece. Was removed from the squadron and sent home to Canada soon after the war in Europe ended. (48:00)

(Side 2) Graduated in civil engineering from the University of British Columbia in 1950. Rejoined the R.C.A.F. as an engineer officer. Wartime seniority helped him regain the rank of flight lieutenant in a few months. Much new construction as well as repair of "temporary" wartime buildings. North West Air Command, Edmonton. Base construction engineer at Trenton, Ont. Similar positions and more senior ones in western Canada. Integration in the 1960s was a good idea for the support services, but a different story for the operational elements. Was posted to Europe where much construction negotiation took place with N.A.T.O. partners regarding costs, changes in construction requirements, etc. (15:00) Offers impressions of various nationalities. Personally very busy during a tough time for the Canadian forces as a whole. Was appointed to mobile command in Montreal. Director general of works at D.N.D. in Ottawa. Much involvement in maintenance and environmental problems. Retired in 1975. Worked for the B.C. Dept. of Forestry. Was involved with the Military Engineers Association. (45:00)

Lieut. Merlin Huth

British Columbia Horse (Militia)

Lord Strathcona's Horse (Royal Canadians)

Imperial Camel Corps

Record ID: 00000072
Huth, Merlin, Lt., 1888-198-?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Merlin Huth ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 18, 1978, Victoria, B.C.
Born in London, England, in 1888. Booked passage to Canada via the Titanic, but changed to a
Canadian Pacific liner because of the simple rail connection to western Canada. Arrived at Saint
John, N.B. to learn that the Titanic had sunk. Purchased sixty acres in Salmon Arm, B.C. upon
which to grow fruit. In the summer of 1914 he joined British Columbia Horse (militia) as a
trooper. Soon found himself mobilized and in Oct. 1914 sent to Valcartier Camp where he
transferred to Lord Strathcona's Horse (Royal Canadians). Overseas to Salisbury Plain for
training. After the first Battle of Ypres the cavalry were sent to France as infantry. At the battle
of Festubert in May 1915 he was wounded. (12:00) When infection set in he spent two months in
hospital in England. Applied for a commission and was transferred to Royal Bucks Hussars, a
yeomanry regiment, as a second lieutenant. Was immediately sent on draft to Gallipoli where he
arrived just in time to be evacuated to Egypt. Participated in modest operations against the Turks
in Libya. Originally mounted on horses, but when the Imperial Camel Corps was recruiting, one
officer and thirty men from each cavalry regiment were transferred and, after six weeks of
training, were sent on patrol in the western desert. Describes Sudanese camels, (35:00) training,
habits and control. Carried a man, his equipment, five gallons of water for the rider, and seventy-
five pounds of grain as fodder. Camel capacity: three hundred pounds. Patrols lasted five days as
that was the limit of endurance for the camel. Navigated by compass in the desert. (45:00)
Comments on the purpose of the long patrols and some experiences. When General Allenby took
command of the war against the Turks, he was sent to Palestine. Acted as mounted infantry in a
war of constant movement. Comments on the Turkish defences, Gaza, etc. At one time under the
command of Lawrence of Arabia. Participated in the attack on Amman. In Aug. 1918 was sent
on leave to Canada. A long journey, ten days by train across Europe. Returned to Salmon Arm
for a few days. At sea, returning to England, on Nov. 11, 1918. Was discharged Apr. 1, 1919 in
London. General comments on the Camel Corps. (40:00)

Miss Mary Isabella Ingram

British Military Intelligence, MI5

Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Ministry of Economic Warfare

Record ID: 00000178
Ingram, Mary Isabella, Miss, 1908-
My MI5 and Ministry of Economic Warfare recollections [sound recording] / by Mary Isabella
Ingram ; interviewed by Chris Bell
5 sound cassettes (ca. 330 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 330 in.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds an additional interview with Miss Ingram. Cassette includes a 90-min. interview
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 14 and 19, Aug. 9, 1983.
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on July 29, 1908 in London, Eng. Her family had been connected with the Indian Civil Service and the army since 1816 and some had risen to high rank. Her mother had been an inspector of Indian schools and her father a chartered accountant with the Indian railways. As a child she had a series of governesses (45:00) and in 1919, during a period of great unrest in India, when the family returned to England on leave, she was sent to Cheltenham School. Recounts many experiences of school and family. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returned to Lahore. Describes the social life, parties, dances, etc. of the higher levels of society in British India. Comments on the eight or nine servants required by a normal English family: cook, footman, water carrier, gardener, sweeper, and others. At Simla, in the summer, they all used heavy rickshaws which were both pushed and pulled by "coolies" dressed in livery. Experiences with Lord and Lady Willingdon, former Governor General of Canada. Visits to the vice-regal lodge. Ballroom scenes, brilliant dress of the guests, both Indian and British. An invitation to dinner was a major affair, perhaps ninety guests at one long table. Anecdotes of social life during the British Raj. Some detail about her former polo pony, "Timothy". (45:00) Describes her stepfather, a senior engineer with the Indian government. Visits the Maharaja's palace of great luxury, including the elephant stables. Customs of Indian royalty. (30:00) Became a member of St. John's Ambulance. Offers some detail of nursing experiences.

(Reel 2, Side 1) Returned to England after her stepfather died. On Dec. 23, 1938 she and her mother moved to Singapore after she obtained leave from her position with the Church of England Pension Board. In Singapore she became personal assistant to the Defense Security Officer (MI5, MI6). Was privy to all local and services intelligence reports. Comments on social life in Singapore, native servants, living conditions. "Mr. Smith" and the case of false arrest. Japanese consulate affair. When war with Japan began she experienced air raids. (30:00) After being advised that the intelligence service had found her name on a Japanese "blacklist" she arranged that, in the event of a Japanese victory, she and her mother were to be shot. Told that they must both leave Singapore, which they both did, a week before the fall, in Feb. 1942. Details of the confusion during the evacuation. (45:00) Comments on the duties and the staff of MI5 in Singapore. Placed aboard a small, dirty, and very crowded French vessel in which they came under air attack as they left Singapore. Finally they reached Bombay; a tremendous relief to be among friends ashore. Through the latter she managed to obtain a job with the Ministry of Economic Warfare in Apr. 1942. Defines the work of the S.O.E. Seconded to General Headquarters, Delhi. (35:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Association with the Indian Communist Party. Borrowed an aircraft from the R.A.F. Codes and ciphers. Account of her small part in the attack on Portuguese Goa. Life in Meerut. Seconded to the political section of the Foreign Office to assist in the repatriation of civilian internees in Singapore. (30:00) Comments on Lord Louis Mountbatten. In spring 1946 obtained an administrative position in Kashmir. (45:00) Returns to a description of New Delhi, roads, major buildings. A thought on the Indian National Army, a puppet organization encouraged by the Japanese. Ghandi, with whom she was not entirely favourably impressed, civil disobedience, telephone disruptions. General discussion on racial relationships in Canada as well as in India. (26:00)
Lt.-Col. Alfred George Jacobs

Lord Strathcona's Horse (Royal Canadians)

Record ID: 00000195
Jacobs, Alfred George, Lt.-Col., 1894-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Alfred George Jacobs ; interviewed by Chris Bell
7 sound cassettes (ca. 600 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 600 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Reel 3 is missing.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 26, June 8, Aug. 3, 5, and 12, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on March 23, 1894 at Salisbury, Wiltshire. After finishing his schooling he was employed in a variety of jobs, including apprentice plumber. Family emigrated to Canada in 1911. Describes immigration hall, colonist train to Saskatoon. English and Canadian experiences. (25:00) Joined cavalry militia unit. Interview moves forward in time to the battle at Moreuil Wood in March 1918 where he was a member of the Lord Strathcona's Horse (L.S.H.). Wounded.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Explains location in 1914 of squadrons of a militia cavalry unit, usually located in different prairie towns. Joined the L.S.H. Discusses equipment, troopship to England. Early training at Quebec. (47:00) Explains military equitation and drill. Stowing horses aboard ship. Troopship anecdote. Scandals at Fort Osborne in the 1920's, pay scales, barrack life. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Returns to his account of the movement from Canada to Salisbury Plain. So wet that the horse lines had to be moved as often as three times a day. No training as cavalry, but became an excellent horseman. Billeted in villages. Comments on Brig.-Gen. J.B. Seely. (Lt.-Col. G.R. Bradbrooke selected officers and N.C.O.'s for the Calgary Regiment, World War II.) Opinion of the Minister of Militia, Sam Hughes, and his characteristic ego. (45:00) In March 1915 they moved into brigade barracks in Sussex. Jacobs was by now a troop trumpeter. Describes the L.S.H.'s fighting as infantry in France, trench system, sniping post, laundry, shelling, etc. (53:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Relieves another battalion in the front line. Details of trench life and conditions, the sights and smells, his wounds. Participated in patrols in no-man's land. (45:00) Night movement. (Reel 3 is missing.)

(Reel 4, Side 1) Demobilized in 1919, rejoined the regiment in 1920. Some description of personnel, early barracks and stables in Calgary and Winnipeg. Anecdote re profits on sales of beer. Within six months was promoted to sergeant. Sent to assist in the training of the militia. Took instructors course in physical training. Winter schools, camp anecdote. (45:00)
(Reel 4, Side 2) Regimental life. Admired Capt. Worthington (later of armoured corps fame). Mentions Lt.-Col. (to be) J.C. Cave and Maj. C.E. Connolly. Courting days and marriage, 1929/1930. (48:00)

(Reel 5) Returns to his early days in the militia in Saskatchewan. Quality of the militia and how effective they were in the Great War. Feels that, between the wars, much of the militia was not very effective, although some units were very good. Tales of the British Columbia interior militia. Indian members of the cavalry militia attended for summer camp only, bringing their own horses. Commissioned when World War II broke out. Adjutant of his unit. Commanded the training wing at Calgary, as a lieutenant-colonel for the last two years of the war. Returns to anecdotes of militia training between the wars and of the period 1914-1918. Offers a favourable opinion of Lt.-Col. (later Brig.) C.E. Connolly and his career. Describes his own family. (85:00)

Second Lieut. Cecil James, M.C.

6th Battalion, The Middlesex Regiment

King's Royal Lancashire Regiment

Record ID: 00000070
James, Cecil, 2Lt., M.C., 1889-1982
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Cecil James ; interviewed by James Murphy 1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tape also in archives. Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews. One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. ; 5 in. also in archives. Side 1 of original tape has interview with Pte. Alex Gerrard. Recorded on original sound tape reel June 1, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1889 in London. Came to Canada in 1905, a small legacy of twelve pounds sterling buying his passage. An incomplete chemist apprenticeship in England served to find him employment in drug stores in Saskatchewan and Alberta. Enlisted in a C.E.F. Field Ambulance at Yorkton, Sask. About six weeks later he received a telegram, delayed in transmission, to join his unit, but by then the unit had left for overseas. Bought his own passage to England, through New York. In London a boy scout led him to a recruiting station where he soon found himself a member of the 6th Battalion, The Middlesex Regiment of the British army. After a few weeks of basic training he was sent to France as a reinforcement. Attained rank of sergeant and was later commissioned at Saint-Hubert (ca. 1916) into the King's Royal Lancashire Regiment. (12:00) Comments on trench war, "over the top", occupied enemy trench. Describes trench life and conditions. British Army strictly observed the relationship between officers and men. Compares discipline, as personally observed, with that of Canadian and other Dominion troops. Was awarded the Military Cross; an account of the action, leading off from a sunken road, across no man's land, cane in hand. Many casualties. After a few minutes only two of his machine-gun section on their feet. Fired effectively into a German trench, then withdrew under enemy mortar
fire. Only one other returned with him to the British trenches. (33:00) Describes a Vickers machine-gun crew. Portions of machine-gun battalions were attached to regular infantry battalions during attacks. (40:00) Speaks of reasons for joining in the war: offered a certain esprit de corps and to defend England. Finally point out the difficulty of many in attempting to join the Canadian army in Winnipeg: units were swamped with volunteers. (45:00)

Lieut.-Col. Henry S. Johnson

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Queen's Own Rifles of Canada

Record ID: 00000086
Johnson, Henry S., Lt.-Col., 1917-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Henry S. Johnson ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 2 and 7, 1986,

Johnson was born in 1917 in Melville, Sask. He followed his older brothers into the Royal Canadian Corps of Signals in 1941. Qualified as a driver-operator and, as such, took considerable wireless training. He was sent to the O.C.T.U. in Debert, N.S. and became attached to an Army Co operation Squadron (R.C.A.F.) to train air crew in wireless communications for operations in support of ground forces. Describes this training and service liaison requirements. Joined 7 Air Liaison Section attached to No. 168 Army Co-operation Squadron in Wainwright, Alta. (1943). It was his duty to see that the required air support was delivered. Air-to-ground communication improved. Overseas in Nov. 1943 he was posted to No. 39 Reconnaissance Wing in Gatwick and became involved in both training and operational roles and the photo interpretation of pictures of suspected V-1 flying bomb sites. Posted to Canadian Army headquarters in Leatherhead he trained army officers in ground support procedures. He returned to No. 143 Wing (Typhoon fighter-bombers) where he was in command of the air support signals unit. He briefed the Air Force on military targets. Most operations were against enemy transportation facilities, in some cases directed to the target by an air liaison officer on the ground. Carried out debriefing of pilots immediately upon their return. Describes the use of advance airport parties required to maintain rapid forward momentum of the ground support squadron. He served with an air wing in the occupation force in Germany. (30:00) Back in Canada as a major he investigated certain substantial shortages in the Ordnance Depot in Regina, which turned out to be largely of an accounting nature. Posted to the Joint Air School in Rivers, Man. in 1946 where continued interservice co-operation was fostered. attached to the Royal Canadian Navy as an army liaison officer. At sea in H.M.C.S. Warrior (light fleet carrier) he trained naval pilots to direct naval gunfire on shore targets and against moving targets at sea. He attended the army staff college in Kingston and offers some details of the work encountered. As
staff officer (G.S.O. II) in the Saskatchewan area headquarters he was responsible for training and intelligence. Appointed a company commander in the Queen's Own Rifles of Canada. (Nominally an infantry officer since 1942). Sent to Korea. His liaison experience was put to good use there in dealing with the U.S. Army. Later appointed to the military plans section of Defence Headquarters. He then became involved in civil defence planning in the Windsor, Ont. area. It was a busy period when the continuity of government was the prime concern. In 1962 posted to the Canadian Defence Liaison Establishment in London, Eng. Relates liaison anecdotes about Korea. During integration/unification he was part of the "Joint Staff" serving the Chief of the Defence Staff. Opinion on unification; loss of esprit de-corps was most serious, but much positive morale has now been recovered. (95:00)

Capt. Eugene Morris Johnson

Malacca Volunteers

Canadian Intelligence Corps

Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Record ID: 00000084

Johnson, Eugene Morris, Capt.

My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Eugene Morris Johnson ; interviewed by James Murphy

1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.

Summary of tape also in archives.

Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.

One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. ; also in archives.

Archives holds an additional interview with Capt. Johnson. Tape with 51 p. transcript includes a 90-min. interview conducted by Dr. David A.T. Stafford, Apr, 29, 1983, Victoria, B.C. Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 15, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Johnson was born in Saskatchewan and educated in Victoria, B.C. For a short time, as a youth, he was a member of the 2nd Battalion, Canadian Scottish Regiment. In those pre-war days they drilled in a farmyard in Happy Valley, on the outskirts of Victoria where he was schooled in World War I infantry tactics. He went to Malaysia to work on a plantation in 1936. There he joined the Malacca Volunteers (militia). He was required to do so by his employer since the military paid half the cost of hospitalization, should it be necessary. The military was very conscious of possible racial friction between Chinese, Indians and Malays, although mixed messes were normal. Training was not related to the type of warfare later encountered. (12:00) There was no real belief that war could be fought effectively in the jungle. When war started his sub-unit was manning a pillbox at a river mouth close to the Japanese invasion area. They were quickly outflanked and forced to retreat. For a time he was part of the rear guard, blowing up every bridge as they retreated. Native troops were disbanded south of Kuala Lumpur and told to return home. The British army suffered considerable defeat at Muar
(Jan. 1942). He was posted to the 2nd Battalion, The Black Watch, for rear guard actions, then withdrew to Singapore. Within the fortress the general air of apprehension was not helped by confused defensive measures. He was appointed to an official escape party of about thirty which left at 10:00 p.m. on Feb. 14, 1942. He crossed to Sumatra and, from the west coast by ship, to Java, and then aboard a liner in a small convoy to Fremantle, Australia. He does not know why he was included in the escape party. Eventually he returned to Canada and reported to Work Point Barracks where he was told that he was considered a possible deserter. He was subsequently cleared and inducted into the Canadian Army. To his disgust he was sent to Vernon Army Camp for basic training, but then appointed to the Japanese Language School in Vancouver. As a lieutenant in the Canadian Intelligence Corps he joined Force 136 in India. He was sent on a jungle warfare course in Poona where Canadian troops, considering themselves overtrained, conducted a "mutiny". After that was settled he was sent to Malaya in time for the Japanese surrender. The task of sorting out guerilla fighters began in the approximate area in which he entered the war.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Force 136 was ostensibly to conserve the means of production in territory occupied by the enemy, but in fact was used in intelligence work. He discusses broadcasting, translating captured Japanese documents, etc. Translations were difficult because many were composed of colloquial or jargon Japanese. The many specialists in Force 136 kept a very low profile for they did not want to stir up either friend or foe. A problem was created as Force 136 supported both Chinese nationalist and communist groups. The Malayan People's Army (Chinese) is remembered as initially being socialist rather than communist. Open animosity was displayed between the Chinese groups and the Malays and Indians. Personally he found it easier to deal with the Malayan People's Army who were well disciplined. Discusses the tactics used to keep the warring factions apart, but still make use of them. Returned to Bentong in central Malaysia where they were taking over old government buildings and quietly beginning to reassert the British Raj. Began to buy guns and ammunition from guerrilla groups. He enlisted former civil servants and obtained the services of ex-Malaysian Volunteer officers and N.C.O.'s. British army civil administration was efficient, but government became less so when former government personnel took over, reverting somewhat to the pre-war days. (30:00) Outside communist influence contributed to an almost chaotic situation. The interview concludes with a few remarks about the Japanese Language School in Vancouver. (37:00)

Lieut. Anthony Lidden St. John Jones

4th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

2nd Battalion, The Middlesex Regiment

Record ID: 00000077
Jones, Anthony Lidden St. John, Lt., 1894-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Anthony Lidden St. John Jones ; interviewed by Chris Bell
2 sound cassette (ca.107 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 31, June 5, 1984

(Side 1) This interview begins with a general discussion; his attitude toward the war which he enjoyed as a great adventure, almost sport. Born on Jan. 11, 1894 in Stamford, Lincolnshire where his father was an Anglican vicar. Educated at a public school. Articled to a chartered accountant in Southampton, but did not enjoy the work. Attended an agriculture course on a private estate, then in March 1914 emigrated to Canada, to a farm near Barrie, Ont. Joined the Simcoe Foresters in Aug. 1914. Comments on the officers and men. Was sent to Valcartier Camp as part of the 4th Battalion, C.E.F. Considered the Ross rifle a fine weapon under good conditions of use. Public school experience made Army life seem fairly easy. Overseas to Salisbury Plain. A quiet and easy transition to trench life in France. Instilled a feeling of security in the trenches. On Christmas day, 1915 he saw Germans climb from their trenches and walk about in the open. The Canadians did the same on their side. (Interviewer mistakenly mentions Christmas, 1914). Trench raids. Was wounded in the Second Battle of the Somme. Returns to 1915 and recalls a gas attack at Ypres. (50:00)

(Side 2) In the second interview he recalls being badly shaken up in his dugout by the explosion of a German mine. Suffered from trench foot, a swollen and painful condition. Despite strict discipline on the subject, attempts to keep feet dry were almost impossible. Explains primitive anti-gas measures. Upon his own request in 1916 he was posted to the British Army to join his brother in the 2nd Battalion, The Middlesex Regiment. After officer-training in Scotland he joined in Nov. 1916, tragically just after his brother had been killed. The day after joining he participated in an attack, reached the German parapet where he was badly wounded in the arm, and saw the German who shot him at close range. After hospital in England he returned to Canada where he spent some time in military hospitals. Despite an eighty per cent disability pension he and a partner homesteaded in northern Alberta. Later owned a dairy farm in B.C. Comments on his transition from private to officer. Finest experience in war was the esprit de corps. He really felt a simple patriotism; he was able to do something for his country. (40:00)

Group Capt. Morgan Keddie
Royal Air Force

Record ID: 00000087
Keddie, Morgan, G/C, 1904-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Morgan Keddie ; interviewed by Grant Gray
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.): 3 3/4 ips, track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 29, 1985, Victoria, B.C.
(Side 1) Keddie was born in 1904 in Montreal, Que. He was educated in Ottawa, then Royal Military College which he left for health reasons after two years, Queen's University, and Massachusetts Institute of Technology where he obtained a Master's degree in aeronautical engineering. In the spring of 1932 he entered the Royal Air Force. Basic training in Uxbridge, Middlesex Flying Training School in Sealand, Ches. He describes some of the early training aircraft. Posted to No. 4 Squadron in Farnborough (20:00) and took Army Co-operation training in Old Sarum, Hants. Flew the Hawker Audax, a fine, late model biplane. The squadron shared Farnborough with the Royal Air Force Establishment where they tested all types of new military aircraft. He was promoted to flying officer and posted to India in 1933 to No. 20 Squadron in Peshawar on the North-West Frontier. After participating in operations against unruly tribesmen he became ill and was invalided home. While in India he lived in a cantonment, largely army, quite isolated from the civilian population. Comments on the early days of the Royal Indian Air Force. Air crew were Sikhs. The Westland Wapiti (bomber) was a most extraordinary machine, constructed of many spare parts of wartime machines. It was underpowered with one speed (eighty-five m.p.h.) for all flying. After he regained his health he was posted to R.A.F. Halton, Bucks. on a two-year engineer officers' course, which he found not too difficult due to his university training. (45:00)

(Side 2) As a flight lieutenant he experienced his first court-martial as a defending officer. In 1937 he was posted to the Air Ministry as a technical staff officer. Great expansion was under way. Promoted to squadron leader. In 1940, appointed to an Advanced Flying Training School in Peterborough as a wing commander. Shortly thereafter the base personnel were moved to Kingston, Ont. under the Commonwealth Air Training Plan. Later he became Commanding Officer of the station. Major problems in maintaining the British aircraft were due to a shortage of spare parts. This problem disappeared after the aircraft were changed to North American Harvard trainers. In mid-1942 he became commanding officer of No. 6 Repair Depot, R.C.A.F. in Trenton, Ont. as a group captain. This was a command that needed and received rejuvenation. In Sept. 1943 he returned to England to administer a large number of aircraft preparation sites for aircraft (in preparation for D-Day). All types of aircraft were tested and armed before delivery to a squadron. Twenty-seven stations were under command of headquarters 41 Group at Andover where he was chief technical officer. Personnel were almost entirely civilian. (30:00) In mid-1944 he moved to the Ministry of Aircraft Production. After three months he was sent to Canada where he was technical adviser for production of the de Havilland Mosquito and the Avro Lancaster. He remained for the post-war wind-up of production and then joined Canadair in Montreal. After resigning from the R.A.F. he continued in civilian employment. (44:00)

Brigadier-General Lloyd Everett Kenyon
Royal Canadian Artillery
Directorate of Military Intelligence

Record ID: 00000226
Kenyon, Lloyd Everett, Brig.-Gen., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Lloyd Everett Kenyon ; interviewed by Chris R. Bell
39 sound cassettes (ca. 60 hours) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Twenty original sound tape reels (ca. 60 hours) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

(Reel 1, Side 1) B-Gen. Kenyon was born on June 9, 1915 in Waterloo, Ontario. Some details of family background. Enroled in the 10th Field Battery, R.C.A. (militia) in 1935. Commissioned during the winter of 1938/39. Describes summer camp, social events, etc. At the outbreak of war the battery became part of the 2nd Field Regiment, R.C.A. Recruiting. Move to Aldershot, England, intensive training began. Attended first Canadian staff college course in January 1941. Posted as Staff Captain, 3rd Canadian Infantry Brigade. Feels that some militia officers not efficient and some criticism of senior officers. Appointed to Canadian Corps headquarters. (95:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Artillery gunnery. Conversations with senior officers. Involved in planning, Mediterranean Theatre. Appointed officer commanding 12th Battery, 7th Army Field Regiment (later designated the 7th Medium Reg't R.C.A.) as a major. In May, 1943 posted to personnel job at Aldershot. Sent to Italy in January, 1944, Corps Headquarters, then to 5th Canadian Armoured Division as Grade II staff officer. Comments on fighting in Italy. Corps moved to Belgium, 1945. Returned to Canada to the directing staff at the army staff college for a year. Explains some of the curriculum. (95:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Exercises at, and the purpose of, the staff college. Return to comments on the Italian campaign. Organizing the peace-time army. Worked in the Directorate of Military Intelligence. Problem of finding suitable personnel, reliable conscientious types best. Military attache system expanded as a source of intelligence. Was able to obtain the services of one officer for "recruiting", an occupation not authorized in the strictest sense. Intelligence work had to be produced so that it could be "sold"- i.e. understood and appreciated by one's superiors, military and political. Intelligence analysis should not speculate, hard facts only. (95:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) General comments and organization of the Directorate of Intelligence. Followed the British system. Reverts to comments on war-time exercise in England, artillery shoot, etc. Intelligence work in Ottawa, post war. Security classifications, military attaches. (90:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Anecdote regarding French mobilization plans. Some criteria in the choosing of military attacks. Anecdotes, including the period when B/Gen Kenyon was attache in Yugoslavia. Sometimes felt that his intelligence work was ignored, a lack of close contact with Ottawa.

(Reel 4, Side 1) Canadians attend British attache conference. Various thoughts on the Chiefs of the General Staff. Canada followed the British tri-service intelligence model. In conjunction with External Affairs, the Canadian Joint Intelligence Board was formed where an interest developed
in economic intelligence. Some work problems, including security within the intelligence organization. Much information from British and American sources. (90:00)

(Reel 4, Side 2) Kenyon's respect for Col. W.A.B. Anderson, his superior. Points out that it seemed that the British were less open with their intelligence than were the Americans. The former were more prone to seek an advantage. Refers again to security within the Directorate and the occasional difficulty in dealing with it. Caught off base by the outbreak of war in Korea. Importance of regular intelligence briefing of those in high places. (60:00)

(Reel 5, Side 1) Donates private library on intelligence to the School of Military Intelligence at Camp Borden. General account of Canadian intelligence work. Trip to Turkey. Career path for officers in the Intelligence section - probably maximum rank, a full colonel. Peacetime intelligence and the importance of keeping current. Kenyon makes decision to keep to the staff side of the military, rather than return to the field. Accepts the position of attache to Yugoslavia (1951). Language course, new clothes, large supply of food. Comments on Pres. Tito and the ethnic mix in the country. (95:00)

(Reel 5, Side 2) Some aspects of the political scene in Yugoslavia, including the anti-Stalinist attitude, but not anti-communist Yugoslav military. Military attache interested in order of battle of Yugoslav army, location of units, equipment, efficiency, etc. Field trips, restricted areas. (75:00)

(Reel 6, Side 1) Security matters. Ethnic German population. Joint Intelligence Bureau in London had a large "want" list of pictures of transportation and manufacturing facilities. Eventually visited all of Yugoslavia. Official trips and demonstrations put on by the Yugoslav military. Relations with other military attaches. (95:00)

(Reel 6, Side 2) Co-operation between attaches, most frequently took place at parties. War-time divisions within Yugoslavia and some Allied personalities involved. Security problems in Belgrade. Conscription/training in the Yugoslav army. Relationship to the Canadian ambassador. (60:00)

(Reel 7, Side 1) Internal security in Yugoslavia very efficient; little contact was possible with the civilian population. Discusses Communism and his personal feelings toward it. Social life. Becomes doyen of the military attaches. Diversity of cultures within the country. Diplomatic and civilian personalities, hunting parties, etc. (95:00)

(Reel 7, Side 2) Very formal relations with Yugoslavs, much protocol at official functions. Rarely did wives attend, except those whose husbands were involved in liaison with foreigners. Opportunities to see military manoeuvres. Trieste crisis, 1953. Yugoslav mobilization "practice" felt by Kenyon to be the real thing. Wrote long report of the state of the Yugoslav army in the Trieste area. (95:00)

(Reel 8, Side 1) The Yugoslav army and the elite Tito Guards. Indoctrination of the troops and of the general population. Facets of the peasant life, including religion. Alliances and Balkan Pact of 1953/54. Extremely important war industry in Yugoslavia. Visits of foreign heads of state,
including Kruschev. Describes a hunting party and an off-the-record briefing including an account of the death of Beria (head of Russian KGB). Visit of students of the Canadian Defence College. (95:00)

(Reel 8, Side 2) Had good relations with the Dept. of External Affairs (Canada), although changes in personnel were not always smooth. Travelled to Turkey and Greece. Returns to Canada in 1955. Stationed in Regina (Prairie Command), then chief of staff at Winnipeg. Attends tactical nuclear course in the United States. As a full Colonel participates in a brigade exercise (1958). Comments on Civil Defence. (95:00)


(Reel 9, Side 2) Nuclear war. Requirement for special equipment and supplies. Posted to NATO in Paris and describes the organization and administration. As part of the international staff Kenyon was civil defence advisor. Attempts to promote a civil defence exercise which became lost in the bureaucracy; too many civilian committees. Some accomplishments at NATO. (90:00)


(Reel 10, Side 2) International Control Commission, Hanoi and Saigon. Social and military events. Servants (Chinese). Relations with the press. Transportation, inspections, operations and regulations, outposts, food, official entertaining, etc. Visit to Hanoi. (90:00)

(Reel 11, Side 1) Attitudes in North and South Vietnam, restrictions, etc. The Vietnamese mind. Discusses Canadian members of the mission. Quality of postings, North vs. South. A financially attractive post for Canadians. Assessment of the Polish officers. The siting of some of the Commission outposts tended to reduce the effectiveness of their work. Personnel problems, some friction between military and External Affairs staff. (95:00)

(Reel 11, Side 2) Some illegal financial/trade practices suspected of Canadians. Military and social customs in effect with the Canadians. Comments on travel, religious practices in the North. Contact with the local government authorities. South Vietnamese liaison staff. Northern propaganda. Often awkward for foreigners to deal with the North Vietnamese. All culture very politically oriented. Attempted to gain some idea of the agricultural and manufacturing progress being achieved in the North. Entertainment in Hanoi, film and opera. (95:00)

(Reel 12, Side 1) Regular reports by the Commission were under very restrictive regulation. Obstructive tactics by the Polish members of the Commission, often by simply not participating
in an inspection team. Felt that the Indians were not entirely reliable in negotiations. Canadians received "representational allowances" in Vietnam, largely used to pay for social events that were required. Cambodian visit. Comments at some length on religion in South Vietnam, often had a great influence on society. Offers an opinion on the British method of suppressing insurgents - the Malaya example of bringing the civilian population on side. Fortified hamlet system effective but not popular with the peasants. This caused the North Vietnamese to escalate the war. American journalism and news reporting which often had an adverse effect on reliable news. Sometimes details used to justify a preconceived position. Generally the press treated the U.S. rather badly. (95:00)

(Reel 12, Side 2) (Poor audio at the beginning). South Vietnamese coup in 1963. Plays tape recording made on the day of the coup, from the roof of the Canadian offices. Situation in Saigon, fighting, civilian, etc. In January 1963 there was another coup, virtually bloodless. Security programmes, relations with the Americans. Contact with the C.I.A., directly when in the field. Some unwritten orders from Canada. Intelligence gathering was sometimes difficult; felt that the Americans did not completely trust the Canadian security. Passed on information to the Americans which had been gathered in Hanoi. Commission began to wind down as the war heated up. Some comment on the American vs. British outlook toward war. (95:00)

(Reel 13, Side 1) Discipline and morale sometimes difficult for the Americans, the situation not being helped by the media. Canadian office routine. Vietnamese attitudes, Jesuit missionaries who were usually very helpful with advice. Anecdotes. During one leave, was invited to a tiger hunt in India, mounted by the Poona Horse (an armoured regiment). (90:00)

(Reel 13, Side 2) Describes Indian experiences in some details. Hunting in Vietnam. July- August, 1964 in Hong Kong. Return trip to Canada began (with Mrs. Kenyon) with one month in India. (95:00)

(Reel 14, Side 1) Comments on French language training in Vietnam. Reported in Ottawa to Planning and Intelligence where he became Director of Intelligence. Discusses administrative channels open to him, access to superiors, etc. Concept and implementation of the integration of the services. Many committee meetings to judge the intelligence implications of integration. Many structural changes necessary throughout the forces, including officer's messes, services, different requirements for skills and levels of training. Feels that the Intelligence service was affected through the removal of personnel appointments from the Director of Intelligence. Too little consultation with those responsible for the efficient running of the directorate. Feels that training lacks input from the "sharp end" of the forces. (95:00)

(Reel 14, Side 2) Believes that operational research should be part of the army staff; every tactical problem should be considered as well as specific problems. Problems in Intelligence - attempts by others to over-ride security. Post-integration intelligence organization. The Joint Intelligence Committee downgraded by Kenyon as very time-consuming. Had the feeling that too little use made of intelligence material because of insufficient time allocated for briefing of those in senior positions. Intelligence Directorate had staff of about 140 persons. (90:00)
(Reel 15, Side 1) Clarifies a number of points regarding intelligence and integration. Joint (with U.S.) Intelligence Board considered threats to North America. Feels that Personnel Branch created problems by posting "unsuitable" persons to the Directorate. Again mentions difficulty in "selling" information gathered. Canadians lacked intelligence to offer other organizations since we gathered little. Also had some difficulty in evaluation the "soundness" of information that we received. A better balance between gathering, production and selling of information was required. (95:00)

(Reel 15, Side 2) Integration re-organization. Required many rehearsals of proposals before presenting to superiors, especially the Chief of Defence Staff. General organizational remarks. Briefing teams, audio-visual presentations. Time is very important to senior people therefore presentation must be smooth, complete, succinct, in order to hold their attention. Emphasizes the need for proper and knowledgeable presentation in order to sell intelligence. Relations with Paul Hellyer, Minister of National Defence. (95:00)

(Reel 16, Side 1) Duty to gather intelligence about foreign armed forces. Clear, technical writing important. Committee meetings reduced by the Minister. Commands military funeral of General H.G. Crerar. Comments regarding briefings, encourages staff and others to "think intelligence" and widens participation within the organization. Cabinet briefings and of the Minister of External Affairs. (95:00)

(Reel 16, Side 2) Sample briefing to External Affairs. Informal briefings to Paul Hellyer. Interested in instructing military attaches who could be an important source of information. Deplores fact that the School of Military Intelligence was transferred to Training Command. Exchanging information with the Americans. (90:00)

(Reel 17, Side 1) Occasionally attended parliamentary debates. Meetings with the Minister of Defence and Chief of Defence Staff. Use of American information. Returns to his time in Belgrade. Satellite intelligence, very heavy security. The importance of correct analysis of satellite information required some additional staff. Cooperates with the Americans in establishing a new direction-finding station. (95:00)

(Reel 17, Side 2) Has to justify the existence of the Intelligence Branch. Directorate of Scientific Intelligence and Directorate of Security become part of the Directorate of Military Intelligence. Some difficulty in integrating the three services. The Canadian Military Intelligence Association, its rationale, methods, results. The FLQ crisis and their sympathizers. Feels that the RCMP were treated somewhat badly by the government and the press. Considers early retirement, after 33 years in the Service. Trips of inspection of Canadian, American, and British bases in Germany. (95:00)

(Reel 18, Side 1) Security matters. Royal Commission on security (1967). RCMP on university campuses. Commission studied the future of security forces. Kenyon liaised with the RCMP on the position to be taken in respect of the Commission which was to find ways to establish a civilian security force. Presents submission to the Commission. Some personalities involved. Working relations between military intelligence/security and the RCMP. Canadian Military Intelligence Association. The "Crerar Dinners". (95:00)
(Reel 18, Side 2) Crerar Dinners continued. Returns to discussion of military attaches, Canadian and foreign. Visiting (Canadian) bases, a source of intelligence. Celebrations on national days, anecdotes. (95:00)

(Reel 19, Side 1) Comments on Gen. de Gaulle and the Algiers problem. Travel in India; the Sikhs. Entertainment in Saigon and protocol in general. Parties in Ottawa as Director General of Intelligence. Public employees obtain the right to strike, defining essential services. On leave overseas. Lack of intelligence services within External Affairs. (95:00)

(Reel 19, Side 2) Intelligence Conference, U.S.A., Britain, Australia, Canada. Largely concerned with collection of intelligence rather than "production". External Affairs weak on contingency intelligence, the projection of intelligence and the need for it. Gives an example (Israel). Rumours of a kind of C.I.A., promoted by External Affairs, probably to the detriment of military intelligence. Kenyon raised successful objections. Did not like the prospects for the intelligence field, the prospect of civilian input spelled trouble. Made move toward retirement. Briefed new Prime Minister (Trudeau) but feels efforts probably fell upon deaf ears. Succeeded in position by Maj-Gen. Norman Ross. Retirement party, career reflections. (95:00)

(Reel 20, Side 1) Returns to comments on the Yugoslav partisans and time spent in Belgrade as military attache. Canadian defence policy in relation to the United States, to modernization of the Forces, to Trudeau's ideas toward NATO, to North American Air Defence, etc. Believes the Defence budget should be allocated differently, with savings. Militia capabilities. Opinion of the Avro Arrow fighter aircraft. Other Canadian defence problems, equipment, policy, intelligence rationale. More emphasis should be placed on intelligence at staff colleges. Critique of book by Major R.S. Eliot, Scarlet to Green. (95:00)

(Reel 20, Side 2) Book critique continues. Points out certain errors and omissions, some personalities, etc. The author was formerly a member of the Directorate of Intelligence, under Brig-Gen. Kenyon. (95:00)

Maj.-Gen. George Kitching, C.B.E., D.S.O.

Royal Canadian Regiment

Record ID: 00000210
Kitching, George, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1910-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by George Kitching ; interviewed by James Murphy
3 sound cassettes (ca. 225 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Tapes may not be used in publication without permission.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 225 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives also holds interview with brother, Lt. Hugh Kitching.
Recorded on original sound tape reels, Sept. 28, Oct, 2, and 12, 1977, Victoria, B.C.
(Reel 1, Side 1) Communications used by the 4th Canadian Armoured Division, provided by the skillful and well-trained Royal Canadian Corps of Signals. Canadian wireless sets superior to those of the British in almost every way, however they were always subject to the operators remaining alive! Communications did break down on Aug. 14, 1944 due to bombing by our own forces, the cause most often due to concussion. Makes a comparison of German and Allied tanks. The Sherman tank was a good work horse, if under-gunned. Armoured division tactics with reference to Operation Totalize. Too much congestion. Criticism by the Corps Commander of the 2nd Canadian Armoured Brigade caused a sense of grievance within all armoured units. Discusses some of the unit commanders, including that of Brigadier E.L. Booth whom he believes had a premonition of death. When he was in fact killed there was a hiatus in orders since it remained unknown for several hours. Absence of control had its effect. Feels that a lack of quick replacement of senior officers let down the troops. Anti-tank warfare. Huge dummy tanks produced in the hope of fooling the enemy. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Discusses the establishment of Canadian armour. Operation Totalize. Difficulties of moving at night -- easy to lose direction. This eventually happened to the British Columbia Regiment. Problems of communicating in warfare. Complimentary opinion of the brigadiers of the 4th Canadian Armoured Division. Unfortunately all fairly new to their jobs and had no real chance before Normandy to exercise the troops under their command. Has favourable opinion of Field Marshal B.L. Montgomery. At the time of being relieved of his command, felt that officers were under great pressure from the army commander on down. Ideas connected with Totalize. French maps of Normandy were very different from the accurate British maps with which they had trained. Quite out of date (1910) and not easy to read. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Operation Tractable mounted after Totalize petered out. Quesnay Wood was a major stumbling-block. Feels that the bombing of 4th Canadian Armoured Division by our own air force may have virtually prohibited success. The plan of the attack had been captured by the enemy. The bombing certainly interrupted communications at a critical juncture. Wireless sets were 'concussed' off net. Armoured Brigade headquarters lost in the smoke and dust. Their brigadier was mortally wounded and it took several hours to become organized. Comments again on the required changes of command. Further confusion resulted with the centre-line of the advance being changed to the eastward. There were problems with the Polish Armoured Division, courageous fighters, but language was a problem and there was always the impression of some disorganization in administration and supply. Falaise gap. Serious lack of tanks affected the Canadians’ ability to close the gap. In fact, the 4th Canadian Armoured Division did not close the gap despite considerable losses in trying to do so. Relieved of his command by the corps commander; a very upsetting episode. Points out that the division had only forty-six tanks available for action. Very proud of the work done by the division. Repeats account of the interview with the army commander. Anecdote of German generals deciding to whom to surrender. Given command of a reinforcement brigade in England (13th Brigade). The Canadian army was culling all units for reinforcements who were then sent to 13th Brigade for two or three weeks training before being sent to mainland Europe. Brigadier Kitching objected strenuously to this and was able to make a few changes, but in a few weeks was appointed as chief of staff to 1st Canadian Corps in Italy (Nov. 1944). Explains the composition of the six training battalions of the 13th Brigade in which many members of other corps volunteered to serve in the infantry, but were not obliged to do so. Comments on the training offered. (45:00)
(Reel 3, Side 1) Flew across France to Italy. Lunched with Lt.-Gen. E.L.M. Burns, the corps commander. Joined the headquarters at Rimini where almost immediately Maj.-Gen. Chris Vokes made acting corps commander. There was considerable shock when Lt.-Gen. Charles Foulkes appointed to command. Considers that the appointment of Foulkes hurt the whole 1st Corps. To make matters worse, the new commander was delivered to the wrong airport thus missing his official welcome. This was deemed to be an insult to the commander, but in time the tension eased. Considers that the Canadians in Italy were very good at their job and extremely proud of their record there. Describes constant attacks across rivers and canals. In February the corps moved to Northwest Europe. In order to keep the Germans guessing about the Canadian movement radio operators kept up normal, if false, wireless traffic. Explains the deliberate lack of paperwork involved in the movement. Very skillfully handled, but it required well-trained administrative officers. Lack of enemy air power in Italy allowed the corps headquarters to operate as a concentrated group. Comments on desirable location for a corps headquarters. Corps first in action near Arnhem, Holland. The liberation of Holland was a wonderful event for all concerned. Anecdote, capture of German paratroops. (45:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) German attack on headquarters 5th Canadian Armoured Division. Precedent set in order to feed Dutch civilians still under German control. Comments on several German general officers. Present at the surrender of German forces in Holland. Humiliation of the Canadians to find that the Russians considered Col.-Gen. Johannes Blaskowitz to be a war criminal. Feels it was unwarranted. The German general committed suicide. Personal relationship with Blaskowitz’ chief of staff, Lt.-Gen. Paul Reichelt who became a friend and later a general in the West German army. Impressed with the German army which even in defeat did not lose discipline. In 1947-1948 attended the National War College in Washington, D.C. One of the few Canadians who were, almost confidentially, allowed to attend. The practice of allowing foreign students to attend ceased when NATO came into being. A wonderful course which opened many doors to him later in his career. Nuclear weapon problems for Canada. A waffling approach by Diefenbaker. Criticism by the Americans and NATO in Europe. Howard Green (Minister for Foreign Affairs) left much to be desired. Supported Paul Hellyer in his integration plans, but considers that he behaved very badly thereafter. Able to threaten the Prime Minister and obtain his own way. Political interference in the armed forces of the highest order. Patronage rampant in defence contacts. Retired, 1965.

Lieut. Hugh Kitching
Royal Indian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Record ID: 00000088
Kitching, Hugh, Lieut.
My Naval Reserve recollections [sound recording] / by Hugh Kitching ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 40 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, track, mono. also in archives. 
Archives also holds interview with brother, Maj.-Gen. George Kitching. 
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 25, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

Kitching first went to India in 1931 as a junior lawyer. In 1939, before the war began, he joined 
the R.I.N.V.R. in Calcutta as a junior naval officer. He trained in coastal minesweeping for three 
months followed by three months of the usual classroom instruction given to new entry officers. 
Classes consisted exclusively of about twenty Europeans. All "other ranks" in the R.I.N.V.R. 
were Indian. He was called up for active duty in 1941 and posted to H.M.I.S. Dipavati, a 
commercial vessel (very poor sea boat) converted to a "corvette". He volunteered for the Coastal 
Forces which were equipped with new Vosper motor torpedo boats formed into two flotillas, the 
16th and 17th. In addition, the Indian Navy obtained seventy-foot harbour launches with a speed 
of about twelve knots and the standard Fairmile motor launch. The M.T.B.’s in which he served 
were originally crewed by Royal Navy ratings with the additional purpose of training Indian 
naval personnel. In mid-1943 the 17th Flotilla was based at Trincomalee, Ceylon where it was 
soon joined by a South African flotilla. At this time the Japanese were still on the Burmese coast, 
although they could only operate against them during the months of November to February (poor 
weather conditions, monsoon season, etc.). Attacks by the R.A.F. caused more casualties than 
did actions against the Japanese. As the war progressed on land their duty was to keep the Bay of 
Bengal free of Japanese shipping and to land agents behind the enemy lines. He comments on the 
clandestine raid on Goa (Portuguese) to destroy German merchant ships, although he did not 
directly participate. He was posted ashore at Colombo as a staff officer. Coastal forces gathered on 
a large scale for a proposed major attack on the Andaman Islands. The war ended. He makes 
averse remarks on the rapid withdrawal of the British from India. Mountbatten should have 
allocated more time for the Indian civilian and military authorities to come to grips with the great 
problems with which they were presented. Excessive numbers of deaths and suffering resulted. He 
returned to England not long after Indian independence and retired. (40:00) 

Maj. Henry Earl Koehler

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000089
Koehler, Henry Earl, Maj., 1917- 
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Henry Earl Koehler ; interviewed by William 
Stebbing Hamilton and Tom Torrie 
1 sound cassette (ca. 37 min.) : standard mono. 
Summary of tape also in archives. 
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews. 
One original sound tape reel (ca. 37 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. 
This interview follows a 25-min. interview, then a 2-min. pause, of Col. William Stebbing 
Hamilton of the Royal Canadian Corps of Signals by Tom Torrie on the same tape. After the 37-
min. Koehler interview Hamilton resumes his memoirs. 
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 1987, Victoria, B.C.
No. 1 Special Wireless Group of about three hundred (all ranks) was formed in Ottawa, slated for India, but sent to Australia. Trained in Victoria, B.C. for six months. In Jan. 1945 embarked at San Francisco on the U.S. troopship Monterey. Twenty-six days later they were off-loaded at Hollandia, due to a change in the ship's schedule, and left without means to proceed to Australia. Eventually they and a group of Australian Air Force personnel boarded a smaller U.S. vessel, the Shawnee, and refused to get off. The Americans authorized the Shawnee to proceed to Australia where they finally arrived twelve days later after an uncomfortable journey; the ship had been used to transport native labourers, was filthy, bug-infested and low on food. After a short period of wireless training with the Australians and Americans they proceeded by train and motor convoy to Darwin in northern Australia. Opened the radio station on Apr. 13, 1945. (20:00) Canadian military intelligence unit attached with Japanese-speaking personnel. Some shortage of trained operators became evident, heavy traffic, predominantly Morse code. The Japanese used a grouped variation of this code applied to "kana", their written symbols. Rations were Australian: mutton, canned goods, dehydrated food. Eggs rare, but two quarts of Australian beer per man per week. A boring station. Good movies, excellent, but dangerous beach: sharks, crocodiles, quick sand. Primitive sanitary conditions. Operations shut down quickly at the end of the war. After waiting two or three months decided to initiate their own return to Canada. Loaded all their equipment and drove to Alice Springs where they organized a train to Adelaide, drove to Melbourne and Sydney. Warm welcome by the Australians. After some difficulty, in Jan. 1946, they found a British freighter sailing for Vancouver, B.C. Assured the Captain that he would not have to provide for them. Persuaded the Australians to convert part of the upper holds to accommodation, built a cookhouse, showers and latrines on deck, installed their own diesel generators. Arrived in Vancouver, B.C., delivered their special vehicles to the Ordnance Depot, and the unit was disbanded. Thinks they deserve a theatre medal, although not on active operations. Anecdote regarding good relations with allies and emphasizes excellent treatment by the Australians. (37:00)

Lieutenant-General Reginald J. Lane, D.S.O., D.F.C.

Royal Canadian Air Force

Canadian Forces (Air)

Record ID: 00000228
Lane, Reginald J., Lt.-Gen., D.S.O., D.F.C., 1920-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Reginald J. Lane ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy with Chris D. Main
27 sound cassettes (ca. 30 hours, 11 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Fourteen original sound tape reels (ca. 30 hours, 11 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Apr. 4, May 9, 11, 16, 18, 23, 25, June 12, 15, 20, 27,

NOTE: OBTAINED FROM TRANSCRIPT PROVIDED BY DR. R.H. ROY

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born 4 January 1920 at Victoria, B.C. Schooled in Victoria. Attributes years as a member of Christ Church Cathedral choir and as a Boy Scout in teaching the importance of leadership by example and gentle persuasion rather than by coercion. Joined medical corps militia in 1939, accepted by the Royal Canadian Air Force in September, 1940. Worked for the Hudson's Bay Company, Victoria, during the preceding months. Sent to manning depot in Brandon, Man. Elementary flying at Vancouver, Service flying at Dauphin, Man., where he was introduced to North American Harvard aircraft. (82:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Experiences at Dauphin, topped class, awarded Wings, commissioned. Operational training unit in England; Armstrong Whitworth Whitley bombers. Describes living conditions, food, flying. First operational squadron: No. 35, Royal Air Force based in Yorkshire. Mentions that he later joined a Pathfinder squadron where he completed two tours. (87:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Based at Linton-on-Ouse, Yorkshire with No. 35 Squadron. Crewed-up on Handley-Page Halifax aircraft. Crew duties. First operation to Berlin. Comments on Bomber Command, meteorological considerations, routes and other preparations. Claims that, partly due to lack of navigational aids, the weather returning from operations was more important than that over the target. Bombing policy. Dangers during the take-off with a full bomb load. Duties of squadron and base commanders. Promotion of experienced personnel. Briefing before a raid, weather and altitude conditions, necessity of photographs of bombing points. Effect of fear on aircrew. Efficiency of ground crew. Some air incidents. (91:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) First operational flights were made as a co-pilot, very boring. Navigational problems, 1942. Recreational activities. Raid on German ships, Scharnhorst, Gneisenau, and Prince Eugen at Brest, France. Observed a Halifax "ditching" in the English Channel on return flight. Explains flying on a reduced number of engines. First operation as aircraft captain on 3 March 1942 against the Renault autoworks in Paris. Comments on his air-crew. Replacement navigator "freezers" over target. Problem of air-crew members who lost their nerve. (76:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Part of squadron transferred to Scotland in March, 1942. First attempt to bomb the German battleship Tirpitz was foiled by cloud. Second attempt in April, 1942 in which his aircraft was badly damaged, thus unable to participate in the third raid of the series. In total the squadron lost eight of twelve aircraft in the attempt to destroy the Tirpitz. Returns to description of raids against German ports and the Ruhr. Becomes part of the new Pathfinder Group (No. 8). Early H2S radar and other navigation aids. Describes raid on Hamburg, managed to return to base but the aircraft was a "write-off". Awarded the Distinguished Flying Cross. (94:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Theory behind the establishment of the Pathfinders. The Group became a necessity because of navigational problems and inaccurate bombing. Number 8 Pathfinder Group consisted of four squadrons of heavy bombers, all with experienced crews. Improved navigational aids. Technique of target marking. "Oboe" system for navigation and target marking
very great improvement but range (beam) could not extend from England to all of Germany. Mosquito bombers. Master Bomber system introduced, in which the bombing was orchestrated, on site, by radio. Enemy night fighters, diversionary raids, instrument flying. Battle of the Ruhr 1942/43. Describes a raid, flying technique called "weave". Mentions "off-set" bombing. Describes night-fighter attack. Completed 45 operations in Pathfinders. Awarded Distinguished Service Order (D.S.O.). (84:00)

(Reel 4, Side 1) New duties, operational and administrative, as a squadron leader and flight commander. Returned to Canada to fly the first Canadian-built Lancaster bomber to England. After much publicity, ceremony, etc., a complete instrument failure meant a month's stay in Canada - in seclusion - so that there would be no adverse publicity. Flew to England, joined 405 Squadron, R.C.A.F. (Pathfinder) at Gransden Lodge, as a wing commander. Points out that later on there was some difficulty in attracting air-crew to Pathfinder squadrons due to the higher attrition rate in that operation. The offer of promotion helped ease the shortage: Squadron commanders became group captains, and so on. Wing Commander Lane acted as a Master Bomber. Poor living conditions at their base which tended to lower morale. Is of the opinion that, as a strategy, bombing Berlin was not an effective one, considering air-crew casualties. Believes that "Bomber Harris" (Air Chief Marshall Sir Arthur Harris) was mistaken in his single-minded dedication to bombing. Describes effect of winter jet stream on air navigation. Accidents over the target. Blind landing in the fog killed air-crews. Raid on marshalling yard in France. Night fighters. Promoted to group captain at 24 years of age. "Good Luck" raincoat. (70:00)

(Reel 5, Side 1) Experienced near around-the-clock operations in 1944, preparatory to the invasion of Europe. Made his last operational flight against Caen in Normandy, signifying the end of his third tour. Introduced to his future wife in Leeds, anecdotes of leave, etc. Appointed a staff officer at No. 6 Group - Air I - responsible for planning operations. Account of raid planning, aircraft serviceability, the trying wait for aircraft to return from operations. Icing could be a serious problem; one night eight aircraft were lost to this cause, soon after take-off. In late Spring, 1945, joined Tiger Force (war against Japan) as group captain, operations. Dropping the atomic bomb postponed, then cancelled, the move to the Far East. Arranged to command a base in England as he had plans to be married. (51:00)

(Reel 5, Side 2) Became commander of a base in Buckinghamshire; Three squadrons of Douglas Dakotas (RCAF) flying for the most part in the service of the British. Was able to attend a few days of the Nurnberg war criminal trials. Experienced some ground-crew agitation to return more rapidly to Canada. Defused by obtaining replacements from Canada. Comments on the considerable psychological change for pilots - air regulations and safety now became paramount. Pilots with experience in Training Command made excellent peace-time air-crew. Very different from war-time where a more "adventurist" attitude was necessary. Noticed that even he became less colourful in peace-time. The units became very efficient in the air-freight business. Returned to Canada to the air force staff college where on October 1, 1946 he was reduced to his permanent rank of wing commander. (56:00)

(Reel 6, Side 1) Comments on conditions at the six-month course at staff college. Lived in, learned to write the "service way". Posted to air force headquarters in Ottawa, plans and organization, operational requirements. Posted as a staff officer to a transport wing. Claims that
extraordinary efforts were made by crews photographing the North. At Christmas, 1948 was promoted to group captain. Was senior officer involved in Lester Pearson's attendance at the Ceylon Conference; first R.C.A.F. flight around the world. Resisted efforts by his father-in-law in England to become manager of his firm of contractors. (71:00)

(Reel 6, Side 2) Base commander at Edmonton for two years, a base badly run-down. Able to begin improvements before being transferred to Ottawa to logistics and plans where he coordinated supply, engineering and maintenance. Comments on the aircraft industry, relations with the Americans. Involved in planning specifications for the Avro Arrow fighter. Long hours preparing budgets. Good relations with the Treasury Board. (61:00)

(Reel 7, Side 1) Attended the Imperial Defence College in 1955. Gives considerable detail on the course, psychology, syndicates, personalities, and social life. Course trip to the Middle East. In their report the members of the course predicted the Arab-Israeli war of 1956, and the winner. Students at the I.D.C. were asked for input to problems facing the British Cabinet. An excellent system, expresses wish that the Canadian Cabinet would make the same request to the Canadian Defence College. Returned to Canada to the directorate of air plans and programmes. Later became chief of plans and intelligence. Emphasizes that very careful consideration was given to every phase of air force operations. (55:00)

(Reel 7, Side 2) Planning for the Avro Arrow fighter aircraft. A state-of-the-art machine, but very expensive. By 1957/58 it was having a serious financial effect on the defence budget. Either large additional sums of money were required, or the prospect of cancellation had to be faced. As well, Canadian specifications made the Arrow less adaptable to the needs of other countries. Lane had the very difficult job of recommending to the chief of the air staff that the Arrow be cancelled. Considerable drop in morale at air force headquarters when cancellation became a fact. In 1961 was promoted to air commodore, chief of plans and intelligence. (68:00)

(Reel 8, Side 1) Comments on the production of various aircraft. As chief of plans great emphasis was placed on "management". Describes the position and that of the four directorates within the organization; policy, plans (international), air plans, and intelligence. Planning was a group process, but always got some result on paper! Bomarc missiles - trouble with nuclear warheads and the Cabinet. How NORAD defences worked, including consultation process which was supposedly required. In practical terms the senior Canadian officer (deputy commander of NORAD) spoke for Canada, most often due to insufficient time to consult Ottawa. Discusses "Rules for engagement" - when an enemy could be destroyed. Planned movement of the army by air. Instigated around the world training flights. Given command of air transport command. (62:00)

(Reel 8, Side 2) Relied heavily on British and American sources for air intelligence. Feels that the Americans are much better at gathering information than they are at reaching conclusions from it. The U.S. was very willing to share information with the Canadians, especially if the Canadians had made an effort to assist them in some way. Training command moved to Winnipeg amidst some hard feelings and air transport command took over the base. Difficulties with the Canadair Yukon transport aircraft. Emphasizes safety in training and the great boon conferred by various Link (ground) trainers. First class facilities at Trenton. (61:00)
Operational concept, air transport command. Levels of pilot efficiency, fatigue, etc., and similarly for the ground-crew. Air movement units were established, required for the movement of personnel and families to Europe. Accommodation and baggage facilities required. Much of this transport flying could be justified as air-crew training. Troop, passenger, and freight capability required a large staff and careful planning. Civilian airlines complained at first that they were not getting any of this business, but when it was explained that service aircraft sometimes had to fly where they would not and sometimes were shot at, the complaints disappeared. Gives an account of air transport responsibilities in Yemen where conditions were terrible and crews had to be quickly relieved. (69:00)

Headed air transport command for four years - a popular command as it was very operational. In December, 1965 became chief of staff to 1 Canadian Air Division at Metz, France (and air officer commanding in 1966). It was a quick learning experience regarding the nuclear strike role. The nuclear weapons were stored at Canadian bases under American control. Authority to release came through American channels, tactical use through Supreme Allied Command. Canadians were expert at flying their Lockheed CF104's in the strike role: contour flying as low as 50 feet. High degree of navigational training required. Bombing ranges were scarce, but practice vital. Tactical exercises. Pilots examined annually, a two-hour exam on their role with a 90% passing grade. Competitive exercises very important. Tac/Evaluation teams would arrive unexpectedly and "push the button", putting the base on a war-time footing. Aircraft were bombed-up" with nuclear weapons (under American supervision) followed by a halt in the exercise while the bombs were returned to storage. Crews were constantly watched for any psychological effects caused by the heavy pressure environment. (59:00)

Describes a Tac/Evaluation exercise. (Notes that each Wing always had ready aircraft bombed-up by the Tac/Evaluation team). Anecdote regarding repeat performance of Tac/Evaluation for the benefit of U.S. Air Force commanders - just first class, due to Canadian team-work, training, professionalism. Aspects of the move of the Air Division to Lahr, West Germany, where accommodations were in very short supply. Problems in taking over the air base from the French air force. Canadian anecdotes. (66:00)

Some of the political aspects faced in Europe by 1 Cdn Air Div. - civic, international, and national. Comments on the excellent relationship with the French while still at Metz. When de Gaulle ordered NATO units out of France (1967) real problems of relocation occurred. The French Air Force had to move from Lahr to France, but their new base was not ready for them. Anecdote: Canadian headquarters and one Wing were moved to Germany by the U.S. Army at no cost to Canada! The French eventually left the German base - in very poor condition - and much had to be done by German contractors before the Canadians could move in. Relations with the German civilian authorities. (68:00)

Assisted the German Air Force with maintenance procedures on their version of the CF104. German pilot fatalities grew noticeably less. Relations with the Italian Air Force, practice range in Sardinia. Canadian politics not quite as happy an affair. Unification and cutbacks had an effect, although the unified rank structure not really a problem since the Air Force had worked for so long with the U.S. Air Force. Tale of the Canadian naval flier who was sent as squadron commander - which turned out very well. Despite efforts to keep everybody informed
regarding reductions - to keep up morale - in time it became necessary to close one base. Morale suffered when the Canadians went "non-nuclear". Blames much of the loss of effectiveness on Prime Minister Trudeau. Additional comments on the double control of nuclear weapons in Europe. (75:00)

(Reel 11, Side 2) Describes the release orders for nuclear weapons and the launch of aircraft. The Canadian government ordered the CF104's to be modified to the "attack" role; i.e. "regular" armament. Considers that the loss of nuclear weapons was the worst blow in his service career, going from a state-of-the-art system to virtually a state of ineffectiveness, both militarily and strategically. During this time the R.C.A.F. established a fishing camp in Labrador with the most basic of facilities on the Eagle River. Popular with senior officers, particularly the Americans. Valuable since it opened doors in Washington and in Europe, a great lubricator of "deals". Approving remarks about the American system of command, very fast once a decision has been made. Some thoughts on command of the Air Division in Europe and his subsequent postings. (62:00)

(Reel 12, Side 1) In the summer of 1969 appointed deputy commander at Mobile Command Headquarters (Montreal). Components and function of this command. Severe budget problems, poor accommodation, worn-out vehicles. Some practical aspects of the unification challenge. Considers that the FLQ crisis could not have come at a better time for the armed forces. They gained considerable respect from the public and the politicians. (62:00)

(Reel 12, Side 2) The FLQ crisis. A problem was created by the R.C.M.P. who were very secretive with their intelligence, to the point where the army felt it necessary to establish their own intelligence network. Describes the build-up of tension in Montreal. War Measures Act declared. Tactics adopted by the military; all senior officers escorted and public installations guarded. Some concern that the Army would be stretched too thin if a similar crisis developed in another city. Makes the point that the War Measures Act was the only tool that the government had. (73:00)

(Reel 13, Side 1) Conditions in Montreal. Effective techniques of the Montreal Police in handling demonstrators. Last career appointment as deputy commander of NORAD in Colorado. Describes the operations room at NORAD headquarters and the large and complex communications system. Live exercises were common, with incoming aircraft and points out the "tricky" aspect: advising the President of the United States if an attack was real. The President could then authorize the use of nuclear weapons. Various practice scenarios were used involving the President and his staff. He or the Vice President had always to be available and the decision had to be made on the basis of a one-minute assessment of the situation by the commander of NORAD. At NORAD, the commander or deputy had to be within a twelve minute automobile trip from headquarters. Always called in if the Russians were test-firing inter-continental ballistic missiles. Points out that the U.S. had a very large air defence system, always exercising and always against the clock. (70:00)

(Reel 13, Side 2) Command of the Canadian units by NORAD was a continuing problem, partly due to poor communications with Ottawa. General Lane worried about the lack of senior personnel in Ottawa who were available beyond office hours. Constantly recommending that
facilities and duty officers be upgraded. As a result the senior Canadian in Colorado shouldered a heavy responsibility. (50:00)

(Reel 14, Side 1) Comments on the excellent selection system seemingly in place for American general officers. Impressed with their habit of admitting if they were not entirely clear about a problem. Rule: "Never try and 'snow' a three or four-star general". As the Canadian deputy he was privy to the most secret American intelligence reports. Comments on officer's clubs, Colorado Springs, Air Defence Command vs. Tactical Air Command, Canadian air traffic control compared to the U.S. Considers it vital that Canada remain in NORAD so that the government remains in the picture. Retired from the Canadian Forces in December, 1973. For two years was Ottawa representative for Systems Development Corp. of Santa Monica. Felt that Ottawa not ready for high-tech computers. (78:00)

Col. William L. Laurie, O.B.E.

Canadian Engineers

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000090
Laurie, William L., Col., O.B.E. 1896-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William L. Laurie ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
During World War II Col. Laurie became Director of Signals at National Defence Headquarters, Ottawa.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mon. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 9 and 14, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Dec. 4, 1896 in Scarborough Township (Toronto). He recounts his youth and those he knew, some becoming prominent Canadians. A "ham" wireless operator in 1912, a member of the Wireless Association of Ontario in 1914. First employed as a Third Operator in the Great Lakes Wireless navigation system which in 1914 intercepted messages from a German wireless station on Long Island, N.Y. until the U.S. government forced the station to close. In the summer of 1915 he was a ship's wireless operator on the Great Lakes. Enlisted on his nineteenth birthday in the Canadian Engineers, Signals Branch. Overseas in Apr. 1916 and there became a telegraph operator. (20:00) By mid-June he was in France with the 3rd Divisional Signals, then was posted to Canadian Corps headquarters where he joined the wireless section. Describes a poison gas attack, the early gas mask, and the slight damage to himself by phosgene gas. During his experiences of trench warfare, when attached to infantry battalions, they carried very simple portable crystal wireless sets on their backs. Comments on the front at Vimy Ridge where they experienced heavy shelling and were buried in a collapsed dugout, but were fortunately rescued.
after some time. He was sent back as "walking wounded" in Jan. 1917. He returned to Vimy in time for the battle, but spent his time in a wireless dugout. The interview returns to reminiscences of the Marconi station in Kingston in 1914 and the burning of the Parliament Buildings in Ottawa (1916) where he helped to save some library books. (45:00) In France, by the time of the Battle of Amiens, they were issued the "Woolich" set which used valves (vacuum tubes) which were a great improvement. A bulky interception equipment called a "French Piano" was introduced to pick up any enemy messages. They used a ground loop several hundred yards long with earth pins, a type of I-Toe system. A new amplifier was issued. By the end of the war they had 120-watt wireless sets. (15:00) As German equipment was good Laurie brought some home after the war ended. While his unit was in Cologne as occupation troops he was in Bonn. He refers to postwar articles by Maj. W.A. Steel in the Canadian Defence Quarterly. In Canada he returned to college to become an engineer and gained summer employment as a radio operator aboard steamships on the Great Lakes. (34:00)

(Interview 2) In the fall of 1922 he joined the Signal Corps militia as a Lieutenant. After working with the R.C.A.F. on the Manitoba forestry patrol he joined the permanent force Signal Corps in 1923. Radio stations were established in Edmonton, the Yukon, and the North West Territories (45:00) and run by the army for the use of all government departments and, for a fee, civilian traffic was instituted. All messages were sent by key. In 1925 as district signals officer in Calgary he lived in the officers' mess of the Lord Strathcona's Horse. He mentions a number of permanent force officers of that era and reminisces. (23:00) In 1927 he joined the expedition to check the ice and weather conditions in the Hudson Strait. The R.C.A.F. managed the expedition on behalf of the Dept. of Marine and Fisheries. Two Fokker Universal aircraft (seaplanes) stationed at each of three bases had modified wartime wireless sets in the aircraft. (30:00) They were also in short-wave contact with the R.C.C.S. signal station in Ottawa. Living conditions were hard. (34:00)

(Side 2) Mentions Flt. Lieut. Leitch of the expedition and other air crew who made forced landings. There were many difficulties with planes, weather, etc. (10:00) He became involved in establishing radio beacons for air mail service and beacons/radio stations for the British airship R-100 on its visit to Canada. Later flew to Ottawa in this airship. Became senior technical officer in Ottawa in 1932. Attended the International Radio Conference in Madrid. In 1933 inspected all radio stations in the North West Territories. (20:00) He developed a prototype short-wave radio set for special use in the summertime. The R.C.A.F. began to train their own wireless officers and all equipment in use by them was turned over. Some new equipment was received from England. Sent to England for up-to-date signals training (which was not always forthcoming!) Comments on Col. E. Forde and Maj. Steel. Appointed second-in-command at Vimy Barracks in Kingston in 1939/40. (45:00) Overseas in England in 1940 he later commanded the 7th Corps (British) Signals unit. Remarks on overseas headquarters senior personnel. (9:00)

Maj. Edward G. (Ned) Lawrence

85th Battalion, C.E.F.
The Sherbrooke Fusiliers Regiment

Record ID: 00000179
Lawrence, Edward G., Maj., 1894-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Edward G. Lawrence ; interviewed by Chris Bell
3 sound cassettes (ca. 225 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 225 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels July 26, 30, and Aug. 1, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Comments on existing political leadership in Canada. Born on Aug. 12, 1894 in Southampton, N.S. Family were United Empire Loyalists and were engaged in the lumber business. Boarded at Pictou while he attended high school, but left before graduation in order to work for the Canadian Bank of Commerce. Joined the army in the fall of 1915, possibly because of friends who enlisted at that time in the 85th Battalion, C.E.F. (45:00) Discusses the regimental connection with the Seaforth Highlanders of the British army. Early training in Halifax. Pay was $1.10 per day. Comments on "tin town", the gambling and liquor establishments that sprang up near Valcartier Camp. While in Halifax he worked in the orderly room and then as clerk for the medical officer. (25:00) Speaks of Lt.-Col. Ralston who commanded the battalion. Voyage overseas. Landed in England in Oct. 1916. General comments on recruiting and the beginnings of the battalion. Intensive training in England. (50:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returns to a description of the increased tempo of training. Continued with his administrative job in the medical office. Trained with the signal section for a time; remarks on the use of Morse code. Preferred administrative and signals work to drill and trench-digging, etc. Leave in London. General remarks. (47:00) Remembers the excitement of first seeing the immediate war zone. Participated in the attack on Vimy Ridge, although most of the time in the reserve trenches. Describes the eventual crossing of a German trench with many dead of both sides lying there. Rum ration. The cold and wetness were very hard on soldiers' feet; many injuries thus caused. Deep mud made life very hard, especially carrying supplies and ammunition. British and German attitude toward taking prisoners. (40:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) In May 1917 he was wounded in the arm by a sniper (or stray bullet). Evacuated by narrow-gauge railway after dark. Military hospital in London. Returned to Canada in the fall of 1917. Recounts a leave in Dundee at an estate there, then the voyage to Canada. Gradually his arm improved and he was discharged on Jan. 1, 1918. Returned to his job in the bank. Transferred to Ottawa. In 1940, then a major, "went active" with the Sherbrooke Fusiliers. Posted to a local training centre (No. 43) as second-in-command. Discharged at Saint. John's at the end of the war. (47:00)

Pte. Donald Rowan Lazier

The Calgary Highlanders
The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000091
Lazier, Donald Rowan, Pte., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Donald Rowan Lazier ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 85 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 85 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 2, 1986, Vancouver, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on May 19, 1915 in Vancouver, B.C. Member of The Calgary Highlanders (militia) in the mid-1930's when he became a small arms instructor. Underwent partial officer training at an O.C.T.U., but ill health prevented completion of the course and a disciplinary problem permanently assigned him to the "other ranks". Comments on relations with the British people while overseas. In 1942 transferred to the 14th Armoured Regiment in which he became a gunner in a Churchill tank. (11:00) Admits that he "was not a typically good soldier", but got on very well with the English people he met. Remembers the raid on Dieppe in 1942 and the exhilarating feeling when they landed on the beach near the Casino. Stuck in a tank trap after reaching the promenade they were pulled out by another tank after he had attached the tow line while under enemy fire. Comments that the beach rocks were quite unsuitable for tank movement. Finds it hard to believe that the composition of the beach was not properly appreciated by the military planners. Claims that his was the last tank in action, evacuated and surrendered when the turret became inoperable. Gives details of his surrender. Interrogated by a very knowledgeable person in civilian clothes whom he took to be a member of the Gestapo. (45:00) Sent to Stalag 8b where he soon became known for his ability to "scrounge" and to bribe the German guards. Escaped from a working party in Oct. 1943 only to be caught after four days. After punishment cells for fourteen days on bread and water only he formed a liaison with a New Zealander in a form of potato-and-cigarette black market. Sent to other camps and at one time was the only Canadian in camp. In 1944 joined a group of British paratroop prisoners. Sold horse meat as beef to American P.O.W.'s. (45:00)

(Side 2) Describes a visit to a German hospital. In late Apr. 1945 he was "liberated" by the Russian Army, but was still, for all practical purposes, a prisoner. Left the prison camp to meet a Russian tank driven by a female soldier. Released prisoners had to fend for themselves. Recounts his return and eventual pick-up by American Army vehicles. In Britain on May 19, 1945. Stories of Russian brutality to German civilians and black markets in camps. The noticeable lack of initiative on the part of many P.O.W.'s was carried over into civil life. He was able to make the best of his situation as a P.O.W. and became a more resilient person. (25:00)

Rear Admiral Richard Hugh Leir
Royal Canadian Navy
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born in 1921 in Penticton, B.C. Attended Shawnigan Lake School. In the fall of 1939 he made a career choice; he wrote the naval entrance exam. Early in 1940 he was sent to H.M.S. Frobisher, the training ship, in England. Explains the status of midshipman. Rigorous life in the training ship. Chose to go to a battleship for his sea-training. Describes the gunroom (mess), sub. of the gunroom, corporal punishment. (45:00) Joined H.M.S. Rodney (battleship), but on board for only a short time before she was damaged by a mine. Sent to H.M.S. Prince of Wales (battleship) in Jan. 1941. A new vessel well equipped with radar. Explains gunnery trials which were lengthy and had barely begun before the ship was ordered to join H.M.S. Hood (battle cruiser) in the search for the German battleship Bismarck. Describes the sight of the Hood blowing up after being hit by German shells. Almost a slow motion experience. Prince of Wales hit by a salvo of four shells from Bismarck. Most guns out of action due to mechanical malfunction. Turned away, but shelled and hit Bismarck with radar-directed fire that night. Radar put out of action by concussion. Served in a sloop for a month while Prince of Wales repaired. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) The sinking of the Hood was a great psychological shock. She was certainly mismatched with Bismarck due to her light armour, although he considers that tactical error compounded the risk. The sloop H.M.S. Bittern was bombed off Norway, but he survived and rejoined Prince of Wales to sail with Winston Churchill aboard to meet President Roosevelt at Placentia Bay, Nfld. In Oct. 1941 they had a short engagement with Italian battleships in the Mediterranean. Returned to England and with H.M.S. Repulse (battle cruiser) sailed for Singapore. War with Japan. Sailed from Singapore on Dec. 10, 1941 and sunk by Japanese aircraft. (40:00) The speed with which Japanese aircraft attacked was an unpleasant surprise. Ship’s heavy anti-aircraft weapons less effective than expected. Two torpedoes hit the ship directly under his director position putting all four guns of his battery out of action. Another torpedo struck the port outer propeller shaft causing major flooding and eventually the sinking. Saw Repulse sink. Recounts abandoning ship, walking on the upturned bottom of the ship before being washed overboard by a wave. Picked up by the destroyer H.M.S. Excellent. Sent to England to finish his courses, but at Columbo he was appointed to H.M.S. Exeter (cruiser) which returned to the Far East. Promoted to acting sub-lieutenant. Joined the mixed force of British, American, Australian, and Dutch cruisers which attempted to prevent the Japanese landing on Java. Out-gunned by Japanese cruisers and badly hit in the engine room, Exeter was left behind to undergo repairs, sank a Japanese light cruiser that ventured too close. Eventually made a Dutch naval base, steaming at fourteen knots and with about one-quarter ammunition remaining. Ordered to attack a Japanese convoy, but met four Japanese cruisers and was sunk. Picked up by a Japanese destroyer after thirty-two hours in the water. Well treated until he came under control of the Japanese army. No report of survivors received by the British, so his family was advised
that he was presumed dead. Upon release from prison camp in 1945 he "hitch-hiked" his way home, first to London, then Halifax where he was sent to hospital with a number of tropical ailments. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Under psychiatric observation for a time while he continued in the Navy, the only former Japanese P.O.W. continuing to serve. Sent to England for retraining. Found studying and retaining knowledge very difficult. Felt that morale in the R.C.N. was poor in the postwar period, so elected to serve with the Royal Navy in the Mediterranean for a time. Appointed gunnery officer in H.M.S. Chevron (destroyer). Describes operations, especially on the anti-Jewish patrol off Palestine. Was among the boarding parties in several ships of illegal immigrants. A great experience for a young officer against opposition which could occasionally be vicious. After ten years of service he returned to Canada, to a Navy in which he was a virtual stranger. Tale of attempt to remain in Malta for a time and to be married; successful in both. Posted to H.M.C.S. Nonsuch, the reserve naval division in Edmonton. A year later appointed to H.M.C.S. Athabaskan (Tribal class destroyer) on the west coast. Pleased when the Korean War started, since it gave the Navy a tremendous boost. Operations in Korea. Promoted to lieutenant commander in 1951. H.M.C.S. Crusader. Navy established Canadian training schools, specialized in anti-submarine warfare. Became executive officer in H.M.C.S. Bonaventure (light fleet carrier), an organizational mess with poor morale in the crew. Firm discipline, new outlook for air training turned the ship around. (48:00) Describes carrier task force. Navy should always have their own air service. Later fought hard for their air component and lost. Bonaventure scrapped; partly the fault of the Navy who were not as air-experienced as they should have been. New ship/helicopter tactics developed. Appointed to command H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer escort). During gunnery practice a failure to switch from surface to air control resulted in sixteen three-inch shells landing above Clallam Bay in Washington state. Cdr. Leir refused to allow his navigation or gunnery officer to be court-martialed and thus faced a court-martial himself. Retained Lloyd McKenzie as counsel (now Mr. Justice McKenzie of the Supreme Court of B.C.) who went to sea in Skeena and for ten days learned all he could about gunnery and navigation. Despite this he was convicted and severely reprimanded. In a subsequent error by the chief of naval staff, lost one year's seniority. Anecdote of ship-handling with style in Halifax harbour. (48:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) After Skeena promoted to captain and commanded the Venture training establishment which was very successful. Worked in Ottawa on the Landymore report, a method of gearing training and courses to the operational periods of a ship. Appointed commander of 1st Escort Squadron. Comments on naval aviation and the importance of political and industrial will. Discourse on the Canadian naval air service: Anti-submarine role, Sea King helicopter, and Beartrap haul-down system. Unification was a very emotional time, nearly a mutiny in Canada. Much of the cream of the naval crop left or were pushed out. Landymore retired, Rear Admiral O'Brien assumed command and Capt. Leir became a commodore. Took a large group of ships to the West Indies to allow temps to cool. Foreign navies laughed at the Canadians' green uniforms; R.C.N. reputation sank drastically. Bonaventure refit and subsequent scrapping came at a time when the influence of the navy was at its lowest ebb. Air force had strong influence. Further remarks on Bonaventure, air service loss, uniforms. Cannot have cost-effective studies applied to defense as criteria are often incorrect. Deplores lack of strategic studies organization in Canada. Appointed flag officer, Pacific coast, then chief of maritime operations, Ottawa.
Structural form of the navy changed (not for the better). Points out the need for the navy and the army to control their air support. Vigorous opposition by the air force. Control should be exercised by those trained in the sea or ground role and the lack of this has caused many regrettable results. (50:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Retired when he was offered a final posting with N.A.T.O. in Brussels. Comments on present (1978) armed forces which seem to be less tough and certainly have less sense of humour! The country should be more involved in the surveillance game; more emphasis on the Pacific area. Reiterates the need for strategic studies in Canada and the dearth of writers on the subject who have had military experience. (20:00)

Capt. J. Duncan Lorimer
Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000092
Lorimer, J. Duncan, Capt., 1919-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by J. Duncan Lorimer ; interviewed by Cameron Falconer
1 sound cassette (ca. 70 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 70 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 6, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Nov. 22, 1919 near Calgary. At the age of two moved to Sooke, near Victoria. Joined the 2nd Battalion, Canadian Scottish Regiment in 1936 at age sixteen, becoming a piper. Went "active" when the war started in 1939 and, after a few months, became a full-time medical orderly. Comments on training and sports in the pre-war militia. Housed at the Bay St. Armouries and various camps on southern Vancouver Island. (20:00) then sent to Debert, N.S. where the camp was in very poor physical condition. Civilians in Truro, N.S. were very good to the troops. Overseas in Aug. 1941 to Aldershot and Horsham, Eng. Eventually selected for a commission. In Jan. 1943 posted to the O.C.T.U. in Gordon Head, Victoria. After graduating as a second lieutenant he remained an instructor for four months. Returned overseas in Dec. 1943 as a supernumerary officer in the battalion and was then posted to a reinforcement unit. (35:00) Just prior to D-Day they were locked in a camp near West Ham, then transported to London to sail to Normandy, arriving on D + 1. (Returns to comment on England and the very good relationship with British friends.) (45:00) In Normandy he was sent to a reinforcement unit and subsequently, for about three weeks, to the North Nova Scotia Highlanders. Subjected to heavy mortar attacks they attempted to take three-man patrols behind enemy lines. Bombing of Caen. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment on July 1, 1944. Experience with a French family. Wounded during an attack on Rots on July 8. Good morale of troops. Gave himself a shot of morphine after being hit, then was nearly run over by a German tank. Taken out by jeep ambulance to an advance dressing station where he was operated upon, then by air to hospital in England. Out of hospital
in about a month. Due to the shortage of infantry officers he was sent to retrain Army Service Corps officers as infantry. Had to return to hospital, then back to Canada. Served in Petawawa. Discharged in June 1945. Considers army rations in Normandy to have been very good. Comments on his three brothers who also served in the Canadian Scottish Regiment during the war. (23:00)

Maj. Alan Fraser Macdonald, O.B.E.

The Edmonton Regiment

The Loyal Edmonton Regiment

Record ID: 00000093
Macdonald, Alan Fraser, Maj., O.B.E., 1913-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Alan Fraser Macdonald ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives also holds interview with brother, Maj.-Gen. Bruce F. MacDonald.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 28 and Aug. 4, 1981, Victoria, B.C.

(Interview 1) Born in 1913 in Edmonton, Alta. (died in 198-?) He was a junior solicitor when he joined The Edmonton Regiment (militia) in 1938 as a second lieutenant. Appointed intelligence officer, an appointment he held for most of his time with the battalion. Describes the uniforms of officers and other ranks, equipment, summer camp in Sarcee. Remembers the declaration of war on a Sunday morning in September. Sailed for Scotland on Dec. 17, 1939. Lucky to be housed in new, modern barracks in Aldershot. Wartime England reflected a false sense of complacency, the "phony war". Annoyed by the occasional condescending attitude (which soon changed) of some English toward the Canadian colonials. The Edmonton Regiment was part of the 2nd Infantry Brigade of the 1st Canadian Division and was commanded by Brig. George R. Pearkes. (30:00) Heavy training schedule with much friendly competition between the three infantry battalions of the brigade. The German invasion of the Low Countries was a shock and after Dunkirk the Canadians, although not fully trained, were one of the few formations in Britain to be near full war establishment. Comments on the arrogant attitude of a captured Luftwaffe pilot. There was a considerable change in civilian attitudes toward the war at this time. (45:00)

(Interview 2) Describes civilian rationing and entertainment for the troops. Good public dance halls and excellent pubs. He was able to go on "shooting leaves" at English and Scottish country homes. The battalion, in position defending the south coast of England, had an excellent view of the air battles during the Battle of Britain. (15:00) Many exercises with the Home Guard who were a varied and enthusiastic body. Sent to brigade headquarters as intelligence officer. Humourous anecdotes of southern England, blackouts, etc. Considers a brigade headquarters to
be an excellent posting. One had much knowledge of the tactical situation and felt part of it. In mid-1941 he was sent to a junior officers' course at the Canadian army staff college in Kingston, Ont. Offers a sidelight on Gen. Pearkes who always enjoyed being actively engaged in maneuvers. Anecdotes about Churchill, Pearkes, etc. Describes the course, administration and practicality of the curriculum at staff college (all good). Promoted to major and appointed G.S.O. II (Air) at No. 414 Army Co-operation Squadron, R.C.A.F. in Croydon. There he interrogated returning pilots. Explained aircraft used up to and including operations at Dieppe in 1942. Then appointed to the same position at Canadian corps headquarters. Most interesting work during 1942/43. (45:00)

Maj.-Gen. Bruce F. Macdonald

The Calgary Highlanders

Fort Garry Horse

Record ID: 00000094
Macdonald, Bruce F., Maj.-Gen., 1917-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Bruce F. Macdonald ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 4, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Born on July 2, 1917 in Edmonton (died in 198-?). Graduated in 1940 from the University of Alberta where he had been a member of C.O.T.C. In 1939 accepted as air crew by the R.C.A.F., but parental pressure caused him to finish his university courses. In 1940, as the R.C.A.F. was not immediately accepting air crew, he took advantage of an opportunity to join the Calgary Highlanders at Currie Barracks. He was asked to transfer to Lord Strathcona's Horse and joined the regiment in Listowel, Ont. as the first "civilian" officer to be taken on strength by that former permanent force unit (1941). Met their first tanks (old) at Camp Borden. In late 1941 they were posted overseas to England. (15:00) Explains the tactical game of "tankie, tankie" in which men represented tanks, a rather bitter joke in his opinion. Comments on the Aldershot barracks and a more recent visit to the same place. First tanks were obsolescent "General Lee", American models. Appointed officers' mess secretary and sports officer. In late 1942 appointed to divisional headquarters as camp commandant or "principal janitor", as he calls it. Promoted to captain. Anecdote regarding Maj.-Gen. Bud Stein whom he "lost" on a scheme. Comments that many senior generals did not seem to be attuned to armoured warfare, although it was true that most had no prior experience with this form of warfare. Neither did they take particularly well to regular use of wireless communication. (35:00) Attended the Canadian Army Staff College in Kingston in 1943, a tough four-month course "on the nuts and bolts of the military arts". Posted, while a major, to 6th Canadian Infantry Division in Prince George, B.C. as the G.S.O. III
(Operations) in Nov. 1943. After seven months he was flown to England, reverting to captain, and appointed to the liaison staff at army headquarters. Comments on that organization and on Gen. H.D.G. Crerar and his position as commander of the 1st Canadian Army. (45:00) Policy decisions discussed and also political attributes required of an army commander. He was part of the advance party to Normandy for Army H.Q. In late July 1944 appointed to Fort Garry Horse (2nd Armoured Brigade) in command of "B" Echelon. During Operation Totalize he acquired some armoured personnel carriers from the battlefield, loaded them with ammunition and petrol only to have them mistakenly bombed by the U.S. Air Force, killing half a dozen men and setting the armoured personnel carriers on fire. He was able to put out the fire in one and eventually managed to get through to the regiment only to find that they did not need additional supplies! Appointed to brigade H.Q. as G.S.O. III. (15:00) Unfortunately his lack of wireless experience caused the brigade problems during the attack on Quesnay Wood. He feels this was partly due to the command technique of the brigade commander, Brig. J.F. Bingham, who left part of the brigade staff ignorant of his operational orders. Bombing by the R.A.F. caused a breakdown in the brigade wireless net. He was on duty for as long as thirty-six hours without sleep. Severe fatigue altered his judgement and actions. Brigadier's whereabouts unknown for a time; Macdonald not fully in the picture. (25:00) Returned to his regiment for a while. Appointed brigade major for 4th Armoured Brigade where he was happy to find a considerable change in command methods. There was always sufficient staff, radio sets worked well, efficiently produced radio logs, message records, etc. (38:00)

Lieut. William W. McGill
Royal Flying Corps
Royal Air Force

Record ID: 00000095
McGill, William W., Lt., 1890-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by William W. McGill ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mon. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 9 and 28, and Aug. 10, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Interview 1, Side 1) Born on Oct. 17, 1890 to a farm family near Guelph, Ont. At age twelve he began working after school in a drug store. Eventually he began a four-year pharmacist's apprenticeship (at three dollars per week) and finished with one year at the University of Toronto where he obtained his pharmacy degree. Began a job in 1912 at Georgia Pharmacy in Vancouver where he worked full-time on the night shift. When the Great War started in 1914 he tried to join the Canadian Red Cross, but they did not have room for another pharmacist. He then attempted to join the Royal Flying Corps, but could not pass the medical examination. (10:00) In response
to a rumour that it was easier to join the R.F.C. in Victoria he made the journey, was accepted, and was ordered to report to the R.F.C. in mid-1917. Sent to Long Branch, Toronto where he underwent basic training and general duties. Attended the School of Military Aeronautics at the University of Toronto for the theory of flight, gunnery, and more drill. (24:00)

(Interview 2) Flying training at Camp Mohawk, Deseronto, and Camp Borden was followed by additional flying training in Texas. Describes different types of aircraft. After about four hours of instruction he made his first solo flight. Considers the Sopwith Pup to have been an excellent aircraft. (35:00) Anecdote about Texas training which was in a very rough and ready air school. Commissioned and sent overseas via Halifax. (47:00) Landed in Liverpool in early Feb. 1918. Comments on some of the Avro aircraft at a flying school in Cheshire where he was stationed. Explains rotary engines. Bronchial pneumonia. (15:00) Much flying training due partly to a reduced demand for pilots in the war zone. Describes flying accidents, experience in flying in dense fog, well-trained in forced landings (25:00) during one of which he nearly landed on an explosives dump near Liverpool. (35:00) He flew a total of ninety hours solo when he had finished advanced flying school (where the emphasis was on aerobatics, gunnery, formation flying). Took a month off due to influenza. (46:00)

(Side 2) Finally shipped to France, to a pilot pool, in July 1918. By now the name of the service had changed to the Royal Air Force (Apr. 1918). No practical difference to him. Kept up flying skills in Sopwith Dolphin (fighter) aircraft. Posted to No. 23 Squadron, R.A.F. in Bertangles, a large base northwest of Amiens. (10:00) This squadron was designated a "ceiling squadron", i.e. they always flew at maximum height. One day he was able to reach 23,000 ft. Also flew patrols protecting observation balloons. Considerable trouble experienced with rebuilt Hispano Suiza aircraft engines; their failure caused many crashes. He experienced several forced landings because of engine failure, but his extensive training in England had made him an expert at this. On one occasion barely returned to the British side of the front. (27:00)

(Interview 3) McGill reads from an account that he wrote about his last patrol on Armistice Day, 1918. An excellent description of preparations, including dress for the patrol, arming and testing guns at ten thousand ft., very quiet except for heavy and accurate anti-aircraft fire. Landed after two hours to find that they should not have been sent on patrol that morning and that the war would be over very soon. (45:00) From then on flew "protective patrols" for several months. Returned to Canada in Aug. 1919. Back to Georgia Pharmacy where in due course he met a Mr. Orme who offered him a job in Prince Rupert, which he accepted. From there he went to Victoria to open a prescription store; Orme supplying the capital and McGill the pharmacy expertise, unfortunately just as the Depression began. This endeavour took several years to become profitable. (15:00) Returns to aircraft anecdotes. Because of faulty engines was loathe to fly very far over the German lines. Describes the aerial view of a major artillery barrage. (32:00)

Brig.-Gen. Ernest Morgan Keith MacGregor, M.C.

Calgary Highlanders
The Loyal Edmonton Regiment

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000096
MacGregor, Ernest Morgan Keith, Brig.-Gen., M.C., 1923-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ernest Morgan Keith MacGregor ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mon. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 22, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Feb. 20, 1923 in Alberta. When the war began he joined the navy, but was released when his father informed the authorities that he was underage. Attended the University of Alberta (first year engineering) and was a member of the C.O.T.C. Joined the Calgary Highlanders when he was of age and was sent to the O.C.T.U. at Gordon Head in 1942, then to Calgary, to A-16, Canadian Infantry Training Centre, graduating with the rank of lieutenant.
(15:00) Posted to England to the reinforcement unit at Thursley Common. Comments on relations with the British, an enjoyable experience. Infantry officers' wireless course. By mistake he was sent to the 1st Canadian Division reinforcement unit instead of that of the 2nd Division and found himself slated to reinforce the Edmonton Regiment instead of the Calgary Highlanders. Attended battle, mechanical transport, and anti-tank courses. Later a battle drill course (infantry platoon and company tactics), then became an instructor for about six months. In 1943 posted to the Loyal Edmonton Regiment in Italy at the Hitler Line. Comments on Italian civilians and an Italian unit fighting with the Allies. As part of the L.O.B. (left out of battle) group of the regiment he instructed for a month in a junior N.C.O. course at Riccioni. Describes some actions at the Naviglio Canal Senio River areas. Here he commanded his company as a lieutenant and was awarded the Military Cross after, he claims, the "accidental" capture of an enemy machine-gun nest. Became the intelligence officer for the battalion after taking a course at the British Intelligence School. Moved to northwest Europe. Explains battle intelligence, gathering information from all sources and passing it to the commanding officer. Distributed maps and photos, wrote the war diary. Long hours required of this job. Promoted to captain. Fighting in Holland: many rapid movements, short battles, during one of which he was wounded.
(45:00) Volunteered for the Pacific Force. Comments on the demobilization of the Canadian army. Joined the Interim Force, then the Regular army. In 1949 was a G.S.O. III (Intelligence) at army headquarters. Interesting work regarding the Russian Army. Explains the various "desks" of the military intelligence structure which in Canada was largely a collating organization. Due to his high security clearance he was not sent to the Korean War. Selected for the British army staff college at Camberley: an intensive one year course during which he was promoted to major. Administration officer for the Canadian coronation contingent. Posted to the War Office as Canadian army liaison officer (land/air warfare). Immediately took parachute training with the S.A.S. (Special Air Service), air transport, liaison, air warfare courses. Military observer (1958) in the Middle East. (30:00) Returned to regimental duty, then to Ottawa, to the Canadian army operational research establishment which was concerned with war games. Was the "senior Red
Commander" for a few months which required him to think like a Russian officer. In 1962 was appointed C.O. of P.P.C.L.I. during which time they engaged in much Arctic soldiering. Comments on integration and unification; feels that the latter did not make too much sense. As chief of infantry (Colonel) in 1965 he presided over the reduction of the permanent force to three infantry regiments. Became director of training for the Canadian forces. Part of the Canadian delegation for Control and Supervision in Vietnam. (45:00) Discusses the sometimes opposing political overtones of the members of the Commission, but they all got along extremely well socially. As a brigadier-general commanded the 1st Canadian Infantry Brigade. Commandant of Camp Gagetown, N.B. Retired in 1977. Highlight of career: C.O. of 2 P.P.C.L.I. (06:00)

Flying Officer Harold James McKay

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000097
McKay, Harold James, F/O, 1916-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Harold James McKay ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 2, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 29, 1916 in Morden, Man. Educated in Oshawa, Ont. where the family had moved. When the war started he was employed in an accounting position in Toronto. In early 1942 he joined the R.C.A.F. as an air crew prospect. After a period at the Initial Training School in Toronto he was allocated to the Bombing and Gunnery School to train as a bomb aimer. Then the Air Observer School in London, Ont. Commissioned after graduation. Enjoyed the service life; discipline no problem. Comments on crew formation at the Operational Training Unit in England (20:00) to which he was posted after a month in Bournemouth and time in several training schools in Wales and elsewhere. Great camaraderie in his air crew. Much training in the obsolescent Armstrong Whitworth Whitley bomber for which he had high regard. Early operations involved the dropping of "window" and diversionary raids. In Aug. 1944 he joined No. 428 Squadron, R.C.A.F. flying Avro Lancaster bombers. Made a total of twenty-eight operational flights. Describes the first such flight to Kiel, Germany where heavy flak caused them to jettison their bombload and, unfortunately, their bomb racks as well. They were in considerable trouble when they returned to base. In future all attacks were pressed home. Claims that he had no psychological compunction about dropping bombs on any target. (45:00) Mentions Pathfinder operations, fuel consumption, etc. Operations produced a certain constant strained feeling. Some slight regret that he never became a pilot; loves flying. Some air crew problems discussed and the devotion required to undertake operations. (15:00) Recounts experience on a daylight raid against German troops in northern France. Anecdote on relations with R.A.F. (25:00) Life on an operational base involved considerable celebrating, but no
alcohol-related problems of which he was aware. Last operational flight on an old well-worn aircraft, "D for Dog" in Feb. 1945. Could not maintain height or speed, a straggler at sixteen thousand ft. instead of the nineteen thousand ft. required. One engine stopped, jettisoned their four thousand-lb. bomb and returned to base. About to land, the second engine stopped, causing them to crash land in a field, killing two of the crew. The aircraft should never have been flown. Sent on an instructor's course. Returned to Canada and demobilized later that year. (45:00)

**Pte. James McKenzie**

**Canadian Army Medical Corps**

Record ID: 00000098
McKenzie, James, Pte., 1897-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by James McKenzie ; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.): 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 2, 1977, Veterans' Hospital, Memorial Pavilion, Victoria, B.C.

Born in 1897, the eldest of eight children, in what is now Northern Ireland (died in 1983). The family emigrated to Victoria, B.C. in 1911. On Dec. 26, 1915 he enlisted in the C.A.M.C. as he felt strongly that it was his duty to become involved in the war as soon as he could. Remembers that, as in inducement to recruiting, trenches and dugouts were constructed in downtown Victoria. Enlisted at Work Point Barracks, volunteered for overseas duty, and left in March 1916, the medical group in company with the 67th Battalion (Western Scots), C.E.F. Very little medical training in Canada; learned "on the job" in France where they were quickly sent. Landed at Le Havre and, after a short time in the hospital there, was sent to No. 1 General Hospital in Etaples. It was a second choice, rather humdrum job as personnel preferred to work with an infantry battalion or at a casualty clearing station near the front. The camp, including the hospital, was bombed by raiding German aircraft. (20:00) The orderlies lived in a canvas-topped frame hut which required much ingenuity to make comfortable. Hospital wards were in large marquees (three) placed end-to-end and holding about fifty patients in all. The operating and x ray rooms were in a frame building. Normally worked twelve-hour shifts, but in a very busy time he might only get two hours sleep per day. Typically a ward staff consisted of two nurses, one orderly and a light-duty patient during the day-shift and one nurse and one orderly at night. He also assisted in the operating room. (35:00) There a team of two orderlies prepared the patient for the operating table. The operating room staff consisted, besides the orderlies, of two nurses, an anesthesiologist, and the surgeon. Remembers that his fingers were always coated with iodine which was the common antiseptic used on patients. Had difficulty ridding himself of the colour and taste of it. After the bombing raid on Etaples a large red cross on the ground was outlined in white stone. Due to the constant threat of bombing the living quarters of the hospital were
eventually moved outside the camp. Spent some time working in a casualty clearing station. Anecdote regarding leave. (47:00)

Lt. Col. William Hamilton McMurray, O.B.E., M.C., E.D.

Canadian Signal Corps

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000099
McMurray, William Hamilton, Lt.-Col., O.B.E., M.C., E.D., 1894-1985
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Hamilton McMurray ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 25 and 29, and June 8, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Side 1 Born in Toronto ca. 1894/95. Moved to Winnipeg in 1910 where he joined the Canadian Signal Corps (militia). Learned Morse code, semaphore with flags, use of heliograph. Summer Camp with No. 10 Section, Canadian Signal Corps. Obtained a job with the C.P.R. Comments on lack of telephone equipment, messing arrangements at camp. Summoned from Alberta to Winnipeg when war broke out in Sept. 1914. (25:00) Second interview, May 29, 1979. Issued British equipment including field telephones. Terrible living conditions on Salisbury Plain. Sent to France in Feb. 1915 and posted to No. 4 Section, 1st. Canadian Divisional Signals Company which was attached to the 3rd Cdn. Infantry Brigade. (45:00) Moved by train to the Armentieres area. Describes the sections of a divisional signals company, mounted for cable-laying, and unmounted. Trained signallers wore crossed flags on their left sleeve and a blue and white armband on the right. Trench warfare: communications. Responsible for communications within the Brigade and to the front line. Experienced first poison gas attack at Ypres, protection against it was very primitive. Explains the use of the I-Toc listening device. Promoted to sergeant after the section suffered many casualties. (April 15, 1915) On Feb. 5 1916 promoted to Lieutenant and Signal Officer, 1st Infantry Bde. Awarded the Military Cross for action on the Somme. Given six days leave to obtain his officers' kit in England. (35:00) Third interview, June 8, 1979.

Side 2 Shortly after his return to France, posted to the 2nd Infantry Bgd. Conditions on the Somme battlefield were the worst ever experienced by him; very heavy fighting, lack of sanitation, artillery barrages. (45:00) Use of carrier pigeons field telephones, inadequate wire especially in the beginning. Here Col. McMurray reads from his citation for the Military Cross, gallantry in action, etc. Awarded the O.B.E. for work with the Corps Headquarters in the Army of Occupation. Signallers: use of. In the front line signallers worked in pairs, the section had the use of two motorcycle dispatch riders, battalion runners, etc. Comments on the Battle of Vimy Ridge; had to move off with the first wave of attackers so that with bayonets stuck in the ground
he could mark the path for the cable layers. (15:00) Awarded his M.C. by the King at Buckingham Palace. Promoted to Captain in 1917 (5th Cdn. Div. Signals Company). Acting commander of the Canadian Corps Signals Company. (30:00) Much admiration for General Currie. Duties at Corps Headquarters. Army of Occupation at Bonn, Germany. Returned to Canada in mid-1919. Invited to join the Royal Canadian Corps of Signals as a major. Instead returned to the C.P.R. Rejoined the army in 1940 and served in a training role until 1945. Points out the vast difference and improvement in equipment in the Second World War.

Maj. Charles E.C. MacNeil

Canadian Scottish Regiment

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000100
MacNeil, Charles E.C., Maj., 1912-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Charles E.C. MacNeil ; interviewed by James Cross
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Jan. 28 and March 11, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born in Suffolk, England on Nov. 23, 1912. Emigrated to western Canada in 1913, educated in Victoria, B.C. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment in June 1930. In Sept. 1937 commissioned as a second lieutenant, promoted to lieutenant in Sept. 1939. Guard duty at the Esquimalt Graving Dock, camp at Otter Point, Mary Hill, Macaulay Point. Gives account of rail trip to Debert, N.S. where the camp was initially in very poor condition. Much sickness; an unhappy situation. Trained as ski troops which was enjoyable, but their equipment was barely adequate. Overseas to Aldershot. Experienced several moves, defended the south coast of England. Battle drill course. (30:00) Promoted to captain. Liaison officer at Divisional headquarters. In May 1943 Lieut.-Col. Cabeldu took command. Combined operations in Scotland. Amphibious exercises on the south coast of England. Commanded a company in a reinforcement unit. Rejoined the regiment as one of the reinforcement officers. Present at D-Day, although landed after the first waves ashore. (45:00) Moved inland, called up to become second-in-command of a company. Fairly quiet at first, but on the night of July 6, during an attack on Caen, he was wounded by shrapnel. Evacuated to a field near the beach, then to England, and after a month in hospital he was returned to a reinforcement unit. Returned to Canada to A-37 Canadian Infantry Training Centre at Petawawa. Some confusion evident in the immediate postwar army. In Oct. 1946 posted to the P.P.C.L.I. in Calgary, then to Alaska as an observer to Operation Frigid, a six-month involvement in testing Arctic equipment of every kind. Appointed chief instructor in Arctic conditions at Churchill, Man. Much emphasis on survival. Comments
on equipment and the necessity, in case of fire, of quick release from a sleeping bag. Many bags are still not adequate in this regard. (38:00)

(Side 2) Returns to a discussion on training in England; 1st Battalion, Canadian Scottish Regiment in Victoria. Appointed to command a company of the Royal Canadian Regiment. Arctic exercises. School of Infantry, Camp Borden. (15:00) Then to 3rd Battalion, P.P.C.L.I. at Fort Lewis, Wash.; lack of equipment for training. Sent to Korea; good morale of Canadian troops. (30:00) In 1953 was acting C.O. of the battalion. Major attack by the Chinese on the night of May 2/3. Naech'on feature, Hill 355. Accidentally bombed by the U.S. Air Force. Truce. Flew back to Canada to attend the Canadian army staff college at Kingston in 1954. (45:00) Staff appointments included G-2 (G.S.O. II) at Churchill, Man. In 1956 he was an exchange officer with the Australian army. Lectured on Arctic equipment. Observed jungle warfare. Instructor in tactics (especially nuclear) at Camp Borden. Exercise TOXIN, nuclear war exercise, including most of the Canadian government from Ottawa. Retired in Dec. 1961. (18:00)

Flight Lieutenant Donald Lauchlin McNeil (M.D.)

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000101
McNeil, Donald Lauchlin, F/L, M.D., 1914-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Donald Lauchlin McNeil ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 26, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Born on May 7, 1914 in Estevan, Sask. He was a sea cadet for a number of years and a member of the C.O.T.C. as a medical student at the University of Manitoba. In 1942, a newly married general practitioner in Calgary, he chose the R.C.A.F. for two reasons: he would be more likely to maintain a home life and many friends and acquaintances belonged to that service. Commissioned as an acting flight lieutenant and underwent a modest regime of officer training, discipline, etc. (10:00) Sent for one month to an I.T.S. (initial training school) in Toronto, in an all-physician class. Taught the theory of flight, drill, some weapons training, medical officers' place in the R.C.A.F., physical problems associated with flying, flying clothes, temperature problems, decompression tank experiences, etc. Advised of the treatment of persons who were averse to flying. (25:00) Appointed to the service flying training school at Fort Macleod, Alta. Good station hospital of about forty beds. Describes accommodations, treatments required, including those for infectious diseases such as scarlet fever. No penicillin at that time. Began to see early cases of schizophrenia. Comments that personnel of the Women's Division provided excellent service in administrative positions. (45:00) As a learning experience medical officers were encouraged to fly whenever possible. In July 1944 he was posted overseas. Travelled in the
Mauretania and worked in the ship's hospital during the voyage. Considerable "strep" throat and some serious seasickness were the major medical problems. Describes wartime England: blackout conditions, civilians, etc. (15:00) Experienced a number of R.C.A.F. postings including R.C.A.F. headquarters and No. 6 Bomber Group. After the end of the war he was the medical officer at R.C.A.F. headquarters in London. There he had a small staff, but no infirmary, and the patients were usually of fairly high rank. Remained until summer 1946. Notes a considerable change in outlook after the war ended. Physicians returning to Canada had much trouble obtaining a residency in medicine. He felt that this was required in order to improve professional skills. (30:00)

Maj. John R. Madden
1st Canadian Parachute Battalion

Record ID: 00000102
Madden, John Russell, Maj., 1924-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Russell Madden
2 sound cassettes (ca. 135 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 135 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mon. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel, 1987 in Victoria

(Side 1) A member of the University of Manitoba C.O.T.C. at seventeen years of age. Volunteered for the Winnipeg Rifles, but changed to the Parachute Regiment in Jan. 1943. (10:00) Anecdote. Trained at Fort Benning, Ga. Graduated, returned to Camp Shilo in March 1943. Discusses the conduct of "refusing to jump". Early parachutes were somewhat rough to use. Commanded a platoon of the "demonstration company" which toured as part of a war bond campaign. Overseas in July 1943; impressions of England. Joined the 6th British Airborne Division. (40:00) Compares the British and American attitudes toward training. Tough battle drill, re-qualified under the British system. Loyalty to the group was all important; they had to want to belong for it was very easy to be returned to their original unit. (45:00) Comments that there seems to be some feeling against being elite in the modern forces, but being special has its advantages. Comments on some brother officers: a certain degree of predictability desirable when dealing with the troops. Transit camp. (15:00) Describes the drop into Normandy on D-Day. Worried because there seemed to be only five others of his "stick" who landed near their target, a bridge over the Orne River. On D + 1 marched back to divisional headquarters, picking up stragglers on the way. No major attacks during his ten days in Normandy, but constant attrition due to shelling. Discusses patrolling. Battle discipline explained. Much co-operation in action between all ranks. Fighting patrols. (48:00)

(Side 2) A platoon officer's assessments both before and during battle. Criticism of the battalion commanding officer; lacked hands-on control. In contrast their brigade commander (Brig. Hill) frequently visited the company position. Called upon to reinforce the Black Watch of the 51st
Highland Division which was not in good operational shape. Defended the battalion headquarters. Heavy mortaring; platoon sergeant killed. (20:00) Accidentally wounded by the discharge of his own machine-gun during a heavy mortar attack. Wound in the hand became seriously infected; eight weeks in hospital. Later was involved in the fighting in the Ardennes and at the Maas River. (33:00)


Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000103
Magnusson, Norman L., Maj.-Gen., C.M.M., D.F.C., 1918-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Norman L. Magnusson ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 28, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 15, 1918. Employed by Lever Bros. in Winnipeg in 1939. Joined the Winnipeg Rifles (militia) in 1940. Applied to the R.C.A.F. as air crew and was accepted early in 1941. After manning depot in Brandon and Initial Training School in Winnipeg he was accepted as an observer. After specialist training he proceeded overseas in spring 1942 as a sergeant observer. Advanced flying school in Scotland and an operational training unit (O.T.U.) in Rutland. There he flew in Handley Page Hampden (bomber) aircraft which, unless flown by a skilled pilot, was likely to produce more than its fair share of casualties. (25:00) Sent to No. 4 Group, R.A.F. Bomber Command where they flew Vickers Wellington bombers. An original member of No. 428 Squadron, R.C.A.F. in Nov. 1942. Operations began in Feb. 1943. Participated in many raids, including the first thousand bomber raid against Essen, while he was still at the O.T.U. Mine-laying. Most large cities in Germany, especially the Ruhr. Sometimes badly shot up. Participated in incendiary raids on Hamburg in 1943, limped home, the aircraft a write-off. Converted to Handley Page Halifax bombers. Crash landed in one due to heavy enemy fighter damage. (45:00) Earlier, during an attack on Brest, their Wellington flew so low taking evasive action that they hit an object and lost the port propeller, crash landing in England. First crew in No. 428 Squadron to survive a full tour (Aug./Sept. 1943). Commissioned. Comments on the name "Ghost Squadron". Flew from Middleton St.George after converting to Halifaxes. Navigational errors sometimes caused crews to be lost. Explains the "G" radar navigation aid. Gas consumption had to be nicely calculated against the bomb load. Berlin represented maximum range and required accurate fuel calculation. Navigation aids improved with the new H2S radar. (20:00) Dense fog at landing fields could be burned off through the use of "FIDO", heavy burning of kerosene. Debriefings by the intelligence officer during which the navigator's log was used as the basis for questions: places, events, flak, night fighters, etc. Bad weather might cause "stand-downs" for up to two weeks. Then they took courses, went on leave, and so
on. On the other hand, they might make several raids in succession. This was hard on air crew; often they flew on nerves alone. No. 428 Squadron converted to Avro Lancasters in 1945 which performed better. The Halifax had been a real workhorse of considerable reliability. Lancasters with radial engines were very effective. (40:00)

Sgt. John Main

The Seafort Highlanders of Canada

The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment)

The British Columbia Dragoons (9th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000104
Main, John, Sgt., 1915-1963?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Main ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 29, 1978, Coquitlam, B.C.

Born in 1915 in Scotland. His father was a member of the 72nd Battalion, C.E.F. (Seafort Highlanders) and the family moved to Vancouver in 1919. Sgt. Main joined the Seafort Highlanders in May 1940. Basic training at Currie Barracks in Calgary where he eventually became a physical training instructor. Comments on camp conditions and the need for personal discipline to become a successful soldier. Volunteered to join The Calgary Regiment when it was mobilized in 1941. Camp Borden in May 1941, overseas in July. Promoted to corporal. Tank training on Salisbury Plain, issued with Churchill tanks then stationed on the south coast of England. (20:00) Extensive sea assault training before Dieppe. Posted to Aldershot as a sergeant gunnery instructor the day before the unit left for the raid on Dieppe. Rejoined the regiment six months later. Spent four weeks on duty at Gen. Montgomery's headquarters. Great admirer of Montgomery and of Gen. Alexander whom he later met in Italy. Claims there was no resentment among the troops about the Dieppe raid. The regiment was rebuilt and equipped with Sherman tanks in Scotland. Loaded aboard landing ships, tank (L.S.T.) for the twenty-eight-day voyage to Sicily, one squadron aboard each ship. (35:00) A member of C Squadron. Impressions of Sicily, fairly quiet. Italy: in support of the 8th Indian Infantry Division. Great troops who commanded the respect of the Canadians. Describes some tank/infantry actions. A hard-fought battle at "Vino Ridge" outside Ortona. (45:00) Came down with malaria, ordered to return to Canada as an instructor, but his transit papers were lost and he missed his boat. He next found himself as a reinforcement for the British Columbia Dragoons on the Gustav Line (after suffering another attack of malaria). Anecdote about new troop officer. While a member of the reconnaissance troop of the B.C.D.'s (15:00) he captured a number of German prisoners and shot and wounded an Italian who attacked his prisoners. Interesting methods of interrogation of P.O.W.'s by their
Polish intelligence officer. (25:00) Anecdotes about life and personalities in the unit, including "Trapper" Martin, his gunner, who with great accuracy and at considerable range destroyed a scout car of the Indian army. In late winter 1945 he was due to be returned to Canada for health reasons, but was "waylaid" in England, promoted to acting sergeant-major, and finally was sent home in his substantive rank as sergeant. A great experience: a mixture of both great boredom and great excitement. (43:00)

Lt.-Col. Richard Gosse Maltby

The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment)

Royal Canadian Ordnance Corps

Record ID: 00000181
Maltby, Richard Gosse, Lt.-Col., 1921-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Richard Gosse Maltby ; interviewed by Morgen Witzel
4 sound cassettes (ca. 225 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 225 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Jan. 18 and Feb. 7, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Aug. 6, 1921 in Vancouver, B.C. In 1940 he joined the Seaforth Highlanders of Canada and went into barracks behind the Seaforth Armoury. Infantry training at Currie Barracks, Calgary where he became a lance corporal. Volunteered to join The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment) and moved to Camp Borden where the unit trained on Great War Renault tanks. Overseas to Salisbury Plain where they were issued the Matilda tank. Living conditions. Issued with Churchill tanks. Returned to Canada for officer training, first at Gordon Head, then Camp Borden. Overseas to Aldershot, then sailed to Italy as a reinforcement for the 1st Canadian Armoured Brigade and rejoined the regiment near Cassino. Recounts experiences in his tank. Wounded by shrapnel when at rest outside his tank. Evacuated to No. 14 General Hospital. Convalescence at Salerno. Rejoined the regiment at Arezzo, just south of Florence. Discusses tactical situation, German troops. Acted as artillery in support of Indian divisions. Winter in the Apennines was hard, both in weather and terrain. For a time the regiment operated a farm which entailed helping themselves to livestock and feed. Moved to France and Belgium. Fought in Holland, at Arnhem, and in support of British infantry. (93:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) War winding down, German prisoners. Appointed intelligence officer. General comments on the war, wounds, friends, operational conditions. (15:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Attended U.B.C. Became involved in the C.O.T.C. as assistant adjutant. Joined the British Columbia Regiment (militia). Regrets the demise of the C.O.T.C. program as it provided very good training. Aided the civil authorities during the Fraser River floods of 1947.
Graduated with an Arts and Commerce degree and was offered a regular commission in the Royal Canadian Ordnance Corps. Heavily involved in the maintenance and expansion of Camp Wainwright, Alta. Central Ordnance Depot in Montreal (technical stores). Staff college for ten months in 1955. Posted to Eastern Command (Quebec City) as staff captain (Q). Gradually became bilingual. Involved in overseeing the maintenance of many ancient buildings. Valcartier Camp. Returned to Montreal to the Ordnance School where he had much to do with officers' professional exams. Ottawa 1960-63 in National Survival operations. Canada wide communication systems, "nuclear proof" bunkers, etc. "Fall-out" was a concern of the Defense Research Establishment and later on their "probability maps" were largely confirmed by the eruption of Mount St. Helens and the distribution of the resulting ash. The impossibility of planning for all the population was recognized, but even at reduced levels they were not financially possible. Took a large display on tour for educational purposes. Armed forces trained in survival techniques, evacuation, re entry, rescue. Difficult to get the public involved. Some quiet opposition to planning and training and had to live with the politically acceptable fact of under-funding. Technology (1984) has made such operations more difficult. Armed forces were put on the alert during the Cuban Missile Crisis. The Canadian group gave lectures at the Pentagon, NORAD, and U.S Strategic Air Force headquarters. Much impressed with American military preparedness. Survival training not particularly popular with the army. Civil Defense College. Emergency Measures organizations were set up, but with considerable politicking which Col. Maltby feels was inevitable, but a pity. Canadian targets were not prime objects of Russian attack, but errors or aborted missions were a danger. Posted to London, Eng. where, because of his bilingual status, he became involved in N.A.T.O. standardization problems. Describes personnel and committees within the organization. Standardization of clothing considered in depth. Different nationalities had considerably different physical attributes; measurement systems differed, so it was not easy to resolve. Ammunition and weapon standardization difficult to create, partly due to varying manufacturing methods. It was a great experience in co-operation between military people. Arguments against standardization centered on industry, ambitions and pride, practicalities of engineering, honest disagreements. (45:00) Canadians interested in A.F.V.’s (armoured fighting vehicles), Arctic clothing, communications. Returned to Ottawa in 1966, promoted to lieutenant-colonel. Was base administration officer in Montreal for Expo '67. (05:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Provided transportation, accommodation, security, communications to visiting forces. To make matters more difficult, integration was in full swing; regulations were in disarray. Involved in standardization of the three forces in the Montreal area. Appointed to 25 Canadian Forces Supply Depot in Montreal. Retired in 1970 to work in a consulting capacity in Pakistan and elsewhere for a period of ten years. Remains very satisfied with his military career. (20:00)

Wing Commander Stanley H. Mansbridge

Royal Air Force
Record ID: 00000105
Mansbridge, Stanley H., W/C, 1918-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Stanley H. Mansbridge; interviewed by Tom Torrie
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 15, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on May 29, 1918 in Folkestone, England; father a member of the Canadian Expeditionary Force. In May 1939 he joined the R.A.F. Voluntary Reserve, but was not called up until spring 1940. Began the usual air crew training program with an aside in ground defence duties at an airport near Edinburgh. At Prestwick in 1941 he was asked to volunteer as an Observer since there was a shortage of personnel with that specialty. After courses in navigation, bombing, and air gunnery he was commissioned and posted to an Operational Training Unit where he was crewed up with a South African pilot. Posted to No. 49 Squadron of 5 Group, Bomber Command. "Easier" first operational flight turned out not to be! Describes preparations for a raid. Used Handley Page Hampden medium bombers in 1941/42. An unusual aircraft. The effect of briefings, preparations, then cancellation of operations on air crew. Conditions, recreational and otherwise, available to air crew during stand-downs. Promoted to flying officer after six months. First tour was two hundred hours of operational flying (in his case thirty one flights). Appointed a navigational instructor at an O.T.U. (operational training unit) which he found tedious. Returned to No. 49 Squadron after nine months. During first thousand-bomber raid on Cologne he was temporarily crewed up in an unfamiliar Vickers Wellington bomber. In Feb. 1943 posted to a conversion unit for radar operators. Promoted to flight lieutenant and squadron bombing leader which meant he could pick his raids and aircraft (as a staff officer). Often flew with the squadron commander. Attacked the radar works at Friedrichshafen, a small, directed attack of fifty-eight aircraft. Flew on to Algiers, a twelve and one-half hour flight to an American air base which turned out to be awkward as the Americans did not expect them. (45:00) On the return they attacked the Italian naval base at La Spezia. Participated in the first major attack on Peenemunde where the Germans perfected and manufactured their flying bombs. The third wave of bombers, of which he was part, suffered a considerable number of casualties. Second tour ended. As a squadron leader he was involved in the problems caused by target markers drifting with the wind and thus contributing to inaccurate bombing. Explains. Selected for the R.A.F. Staff College in Aug. 1944. Promoted to wing commander. Posted to the planning staff at R.A.F. bomber headquarters. Involved in planning the well-known attack on the rail centre of Dresden (at Russian request). Postwar mass flights over Germany "to show the flag". Major operation returning P.O.W.'s from Europe using Avro Lancaster bombers. Planning for small bomber force for the Pacific, but difficult to persuade the Americans that this was necessary. Declined a permanent R.A.F. commission. Demobilized in Feb. 1946. Comments on Brest harbour attack during first tour. (47:00)

(Side 2) Mining operations. Comments on national "mix" of air crews and their great comradeship. (09:00)
Dr. Malcolm A. Micklewright

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000106
Micklewright, Malcolm A., Gnr., Ph.D., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Malcolm A. Micklewright ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 5, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Sept. 22, 1920 in Winnipeg, Man. In 1939 unsuccessfully tried to join the R.C.A.F. as a photographer. Instead joined the 1st Survey Regiment, Royal Canadian Artillery as a gunner. Unfortunately no equipment was available for training, consequently morale in this Montreal artillery regiment was quite low: a deemed lack of purpose. Overseas in Dec. 1940. Transferred to the British army radar establishment (10:00). Eventually became part of the 1st Anti-Aircraft Division in the defence of London. Explains radar school and how target information was sent to the guns. Radar equipment was under heavy security. Good morale in the unit. As new radar became available gunnery accuracy improved. Comments on the theory of anti-aircraft protection. (30:00) After several months he became a radar mechanic and explains some of the problems of the calibration of radar sets: Canadian made sets were difficult to adjust. (40:00) At the end of 1943 he transferred to Canadian Military Headquarters. Some comment on the difficulty encountered when shooting at the V-1 flying bomb. (47:00) At Canadian H.Q. he was employed in the printing office. Returned to Canada in Feb. 1946. In due course moved to Seattle, Wash. and, while involved in mapping, attended the University of Washington where he completed a doctorate in geography. (08:00)

Lieut. Cdr. George Milne

Royal Canadian Naval Volunteer Reserve

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000107
Milne, George Ralph, Lieut.-Cdr., 1916-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by George Ralph Milne ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) :
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 8, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Oct. 22, 1916 Regina. Joined the R.C.N.V.R. in Apr. 1939 and underwent two weeks training on the west coast that summer. On Sept. 4, 1939 sent from Regina to Victoria for basic training. Transferred to Halifax. Describes life as a married ordinary seaman. Ottawa, then to St-Hyacinthe, the communications school. Promoted to petty officer. Went to sea in H.M.C.S. Malpeque (minesweeper) on the east coast convoy runs. Discusses naval conditions on the west coast. (20:00) Posted to H.M.C.S. St. Catharines (frigate) of the Second Escort Group on convoy duty from St. John's to Londonderry. For a time on mid-ocean escort duty. Transferred to the R.C.N. in 1943 and appointed an instructor in visual communications at St-Hyacinthe. Served aboard H.M.C.S. Crescent (destroyer) in 1949 as part of the 8th Destroyer Flotilla, Royal Navy at Hong Kong. The ship provided a communications link between Nanking and Ottawa. Relates something of the incident concerning H.M.S. Amethyst (sloop). (45:00) Crescent herself came under fire from Communist artillery as she went down the Yangtze River, but without damage. Chief petty officer. Sent on a course for promotion to commissioned communications officer. Served at H.M.C.S. Shearwater, the naval air branch base. Signals school at Halifax. Comments on Russian activity in the Atlantic. (11:00) Great communication step forward as the new destroyers joined the fleet in the 1950's. Promoted to the wireless station with worldwide capability. Left the navy in 1965 at the start of the integration process. (20:00) Government job in Ottawa in communications. Offers his feelings on integration and unification. (27:00)

Brigadier Stephen E.E. Morres
Royal Canadian Horse Artillery
Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000108
Morres, Stephen E.E., Brig., 1907-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Stephen E.E. Morres; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 12 and 19, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Sept. 4, 1907 in Plymouth, Eng. His father was one of the Royal Navy officers aboard H.M.C.S. Niobe in 1910 when she was acquired by the Royal Canadian Navy. Sent to prep school in England, then Shawnigan Lake School on Vancouver Island in 1920. Entered the Royal Military College in Sept. 1924. Describes the strict discipline, uniforms, senior cadet ranks, barrack conditions, fees, etc. (10:00) For two summers he was involved in the provisional
pilot officer training program of the R.C.A.F. at Camp Borden. Preferred horses to aircraft and upon graduation from R.M.C. in 1928 was accepted into the Royal Canadian Horse Artillery as a lieutenant. (25:00) A lieutenant was paid four dollars per day of which one dollar was deducted for extra messing. Uniforms, obtained through the regimental tailors, Hawkes of No. 1 Bond St., London, were a major expense. A comfortable life in the officers' mess in Kingston: a batman looked after his clothes and a groom looked after his horse. Dressed for dinner four times a week. Thursdays were guest nights with the regimental band in attendance. Once a month all officers "dined in". No government furniture or equipment; all belonged to the regiment. Comments on the composition of a horse artillery battery. As a section (troop) commander he was responsible for training both horses and men. At the beginning of the depression they obtained Leyland and Crossley trucks from England and lost their horses. Very short of ammunition during this period. Militia batteries were allowed five rounds per gun for summer training at Petawawa. (40:00) As a captain he was sent to Woolwich, Eng. on an advanced gunnery course, finishing at Christmas 1939. (45:00) Returned to Canada in Apr. 1940.Posted to Ottawa for nearly a year. Returned to England after working with Maj.-Gen. F.F. Worthington on the armament of the Canadian-built Ram tank. A member of the Ordnance Board. Appointed Director of Artillery in Ottawa in the rank of colonel. In order to proceed overseas again he reverted to lieutenant-colonel and in late 1943 was appointed to the weapons technical staff at 21 Army Group. Anecdotere anti-aircraft guns on Mulberry harbours. His duty was to see that weapons systems worked correctly and to this end the staff could circumvent all normal government or military channels and deal directly with the manufacturers if modifications to equipment were necessary. Describes some problems: premature explosions in twenty-five pounder guns, fuse problems with 5.5-in. medium artillery shells, etc. (27:00)

(Side 2) Went to Normandy toward the end of June 1944 to a British headquarters as an artillery equipment specialist. Later, as part of 21 Army Group H.Q., he visited all artillery units in France, Belgium, and Holland. Still had direct access to the Ministry of Supply for design or manufacturing change. At the end of the war he was posted to the Experimental Establishment in England. Returns to an interesting account of experiences with the Dutch underground the day before the war ended. Posted to Ottawa in late 1946. Colonel on the Joint Staff in London. In Canada promoted to brigadier and was concerned with design and development for the army as a whole. (20:00) N.A.T.O. standardization problems were very frustrating. Formed the opinion that the Americans objected a great deal. The problem with Canadian development was usually financial. In 1957 was appointed area commander in Newfoundland. Unification and integration caused much disruption in the services, although least in the air force. Canadian Forces today entirely different; discipline probably easier. Equipment nowadays is extremely expensive to purchase and maintain. (44:00)

Lieut.-Col. Finlay Angus Morrison

South Saskatchewan Regiment

Record ID: 00000109
Morrison, Finlay Angus, Lt.-Col., 1917-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Finlay Angus Morrison ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in
Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 2, 1985, Vancouver, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Dec. 15, 1917 in Saskatchewan to a farm family. Apprenticed as a pharmacist. In 1940 on a diploma course at the University of Saskatchewan. C.O.T.C. Graduated in 1942. Officer training at Gordon Head Camp. Overseas as a reinforcement officer of the South Saskatchewan Regiment. After an interview in Apr. 1944 was selected as an aide de camp to Gen. Crerar, the commander of 1 Canadian Army. (20:00) Reported in mid-May as one of two A.D.C.'s, one of whom handled the social (or "outside") aspects and one the tactical (or "inside") aide duties. To Normandy on D + 10 to establish the tactical headquarters. Col. Morrison began as social aide, but in two months became tactical aide. Describes accommodation: caravans and tents. Relations became somewhat strained between Gen. Crerar and Gen. Montgomery in the period before the Canadian Army command was properly established. Crerar was far more reserved than Montgomery. Part of Morrison's duty was to brief Gen. Crerar on the tactical situation at 6:30 every morning. Much time spent visiting units, down to battalion size. (35:00) Aides were required to be very familiar with the requirements of protocol. Descriptive anecdote. (45:00) Gen. Crerar was in the habit of writing full reports on all aspects of his affairs in the army. Also some tension between Gen. Crerar and Lieut.-Gen. Guy Simonds. Col. Morrison spent much of his time bringing situation maps up to date. After the war he suspected that Gen. Crerar would have liked to be the first Canadian Governor-General. (15:00) Comments on the tactical and static headquarters of the Canadian Army. In fall 1944 Simonds became acting army commander for a few weeks. Very different atmosphere. Comments on various personalities. Sure that Montgomery attempted to have Crerar removed as army commander, but hard evidence lacking. (35:00) Infantry reinforcement of much concern and Crerar did his best to apply pressure on the Canadian government. Composition of the tactical headquarters mess which was usually housed in a large tent; not a very social mess, always business. (46:00)

(Side 2) Discussion of pictures in photo album, important visitors. Returned to Canada. Remained an A.D.C. until Gen. Crerar retired in Apr. 1946. The General made a cross-country tour in Jan. that year which was very successful. Both people and the press gave him a good reception. (13:00)

Rear-Admiral Robert Waugh Murdoch
Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000197
Murdoch, Robert Waugh, R.-Adm., 1918-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Waugh Murdoch ; interviewed by Chris D.
Main.
4 sound cassettes (ca. 360 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 360 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 19, 26, Sept. 21, Oct. 19, 1978, Jan. 12, and June 6, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Feb. 21, 1918 in Vancouver, B.C., educated in Victoria. Joined the Royal Canadian Navy in 1936 as a cadet, one of a class of eight. Parents purchased his uniforms. Proceeded to Chatham to join H.M.S. Frobisher (training cruiser). Exposed to all the unskilled seaman's trades for half a day, remainder in classroom. Cruises to Scandinavia and the West Indies. (45:00) After one year promoted to midshipman. Learned flexibility and positive attitudes. Coronation naval review, 1937. Served in the Non-Intervention Patrol in the Mediterranean (Spanish Civil War). Evacuated the Grand Mufti from Haifa, Palestine. (45:00) In 1939 the war interrupted his sub-lieutenants courses.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Immediately sent to sea in a Royal Navy (R.N.) sloop. Returned to Canada, joining H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer). Attended signals course in England, instructor at the Canadian signals school at Saint-Hyacinthe, Que. until 1944 when he was posted to the 11th Destroyer Flotilla (R.N.) at Trincomalee, Ceylon. His ship accepted the surrender of the Japanese naval forces at Singapore, an extremely well-organized and disciplined event produced by the Japanese navy. Digresses here to an account of the North Atlantic. Returns to the reestablishment of the British administration in Singapore. In Sept. 1945 attended a course in air communication in Scotland, then returned to naval headquarters in Ottawa. As a lieutenant-commander was sent to the army staff college. Posted to the United States Navy/NATO headquarters at Norfolk, Va. (48:00) In command of H.M.C.S. Beacon Hill (frigate) for two years. Signals school at H.M.C.S. Cornwallis (shore base). Posted to Ottawa, dealt with bureaucrats. Captain of H.M.C.S. Sioux (destroyer). Promoted to captain. (25:00).

(Reel 2, Side 1) Additional information regarding wartime years. Signals school, air raids. Signal officer to 11th Destroyer Flotilla. Considerable action in support of shore operations. (30:00) Comments on naval intelligence, the continuous feeding of information from all sources. Comments that Canadian anti-submarine capability is not what it might be, but is sufficient to give an enemy pause. One must not allow an enemy a "free run". (50:00)


(Reel 4, Side 1) Assistant chief of naval staff for plans and intelligence. Integration brought about by the need to reduce defence overhead. Attitude of traditionalists in the forces. Defence Minister Hellyer insisted on drastic surgery for the armed forces, some of which was not very wise. Appointed to NATO headquarters. Influence of the Canadians decreased after reduction of
our military commitment. A serious symbolic effect; promoted a feeling that Canada might not be an entirely serious partner. (45:00) Country's reputation suffered. Later directed the Canadian Forces educational and career development branch. Retired on Nov. 10, 1973. (16:00)

Major Madeleine Nation (Mrs. Arthur F.)

British Columbia Women's Service Corps

Canadian Women's Army Corps

Record ID: 00000110
Nation, Madeleine, Maj., -198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Madeleine Nation ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
1 sound cassette (ca. 32 min.) : standard mono.
Mrs. Nation, wife of Arthur F. Nation, begins by reading from her family account. For three years of the war the Nation family home was in the Georgia Hotel, Vancouver, although Mr. Nation was the only constant resident during that time. Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 32 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Side 1 of original tape has interview with Lt. Albert W. Reid. Recorded on original sound tape reel June 5, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

In 1939 Mrs. Nation was asked by Mrs. John Harker to join the British Columbia Women's Service Corps, a volunteer organization established in Victoria in 1938. The object was to prepare women for service in the armed forces in case they were needed. Eventually they received training assistance from the army. In due course Mrs. Nation rose to command the Vancouver detachment. Accompanied Joan Kennedy, senior officer of the Corps, on a cross-Canada tour of similar organizations (1940). Briefed the federal government on their purpose and provided them with a copy of the regulations covering the British women's organization, the A.T.S. Their plans received a setback when the Minister of National Defence was killed in an air crash. However, in July 1941 the Canadian Women's Army Corps came into being. Her daughter, Barbara Nation, enlisted. The British Columbia Women's Service Corps became part of the Canadian Red Cross. Not an entirely satisfactory experience. Mrs. Nation was asked to join the C.W.A.C. as there was a need for French-speaking officers. Joined in 1942 and was posted, coincidently with her daughter, to the officer training unit at Ste. Anne de Bellevue, Que. This she found to be a demanding course. Appointed recruiting officer in Montreal, then a staff officer (captain) at Military District No. 3 at Kingston. This headquarters commanded a large number of C.W.A.C. personnel including those in Ottawa. Promoted to major and sent to Pacific Command, Vancouver. Travelled throughout B.C. as a liaison officer. Notes that the C.W.A.C. eventually began to work in operations rooms which, on the Pacific coast, Mrs. Nation feels was very dull work. C.W.A.C. headquarters was in the old Vancouver Hotel where members worked and lived. Great admirer of Gen. Pearkes. Retired from the army when her husband became ill in
summer 1945. Comments on some senior C.W.A.C. officers. Returns to a short discussion of the British Columbia Women's Service Corps, the beginnings, personalities, training as cooks, military stenographers, nurses' aides, etc. (32:00)

Capt. Francis H.A. Norton

Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000111
Norton, Francis H.A., Capt., 1916-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Francis H.A. Norton ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 28, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on March 7, 1916 in Victoria, B.C. Attended the University of Guelph where he was a member of the C.O.T.C. for two years following 1934. Employed in Ottawa when war broke out. Eyesight deficiency prevented him from joining the R.C.A.F. Returned to Victoria to the North-Western Creamery, and recounts how the name "Velvet" ice cream was chosen by his father. Joined the militia. After spending some time on kitchen fatigues at summer camp decided that he should take any opportunity for a commission. Sent to Gordon Head Camp for officer training, graduated as a second lieutenant, and spent the following four months as an instructor. Further training at Currie Barracks; promoted to lieutenant. Overseas in fall 1942 after a short period at Debert, N.S. (15:00) Aldershot, Eng. Several courses taken, including one on aircraft recognition in which he excelled to the extent that he was appointed an instructor at Borden, Eng. General comments on life in the U.K. (30:00). Landed in Normandy as a reinforcement officer and went to a holding unit for a few days. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment near Falaise. Terrific carnage after the battle. Hard fighting at Calais. Anecdotes. Once had the satisfaction of calling down a rocket-firing Typhoon from the "cab-rank" to destroy a German 88 mm. gun in front of his platoon. Near Leopold Canal he became ill and was evacuated. Convalescent hospital near Colchester. Leave in London and at the University of Oxford. (60:00) Returned to the continent to serve with the occupation forces. For a time worked with Canadian engineer officers commanding a two thousand-man former German Army engineer unit which was employed building leave centres for the occupation troops and tearing down or burning former P.O.W. camps. Returned to Canada in spring 1946. (15:00)

Capt. Robert H. Parkinson

Royal Canadian Army Service Corps
Born on July 12, 1916 in Victoria, B.C. and educated there and in Vancouver. A graduate of the University of British Columbia with postgraduate training in social work. Joined the R.C.A.S.C. Sent to the O.C.T.U. at Gordon Head Camp; advanced training at Red Deer, Alta. Sailed from New York for the United Kingdom in Feb. 1943. After further training sent to Italy, passing through a reinforcement unit to 1st Armoured Brigade Company (83 Coy.), R.C.A.S.C. Prepared for the attack on the Hitler Line; exclaims at the debris after the battle. Entered Rome shortly after liberation. Lake Trasimeno. Describes German thoroughness in destroying bridges and rail lines. Hepatitis - British hospital - persuaded doctors to discharge him so that he could rejoin his company rather than be sent to a reinforcement unit. During winter operations they moved hundreds of tons of ammunition to the tank regiments as well as all other necessities. His platoon was in direct support of the Calgary Regiment. Withdrawn from the Lombardy Plain to Leghorn, then Marseille. (20:00) For a while very good billets in Belgium, a great improvement over Italy. Supplied operations near Nijmegen. In command of the first platoon delivering food to the Dutch people; a somewhat nervous journey through the German lines in trucks flying the white flag. Chosen to be part of the Victory parade in Berlin, for which they prepared vigorously; drill, much spit and polish which the men found arduous after the much more relaxed atmosphere of operations. When participation in the parade was cancelled the men were greatly disturbed and there was a marked decline in discipline. Returned to Canada in Aug. 1945. (30:00) Became a social services officer in Calgary and was involved in assisting discharged soldiers, particularly with marital problems. Offered government position in July 1946. Some general thoughts on the Italian campaign. 1st Canadian Armoured Brigade, as Army Troops, operated in support of many diverse groups: Poles, Indians, American, French. Never involved with Canadians after the attack on the Hitler Line. Great esprit-de-corps in the Company. Continued to "liberate" livestock and other items from the Italians who, after all, were former (or still) enemies. Canadian soldiers in the field were very inventive: made supplemental cook stoves, a good example. Most disliked duty was the transport of live sheep to the Indian Division; the trucks were a dreadful mess. Describes the organization of a R.C.A.S.C. company in support of a brigade. Comments on the 1st Canadian Armoured Brigade and some of its personalities. (58:00)
Record ID: 00000113
Paul, Ralph T., S/L, 1913-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Ralph T. Paul; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.): 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 14, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) A native of Winnipeg, Man., born on Sept. 30, 1913. Involved in the logging business in prewar British Columbia. Joined the R.C.A.F. in 1939, called up in 1940 as air crew. Manning Depot, Toronto then No. 3 Air Observer School at Regina airport. Bombing and Gunnery School, advanced navigation at Rivers, Man. Promoted to sergeant. Discusses officer and N.C.O. proportion of graduates. Voyage overseas broken by a one-week stay in Iceland. Operational Training Unit (O.T.U.) at Andover, Hants, where he crewed up on a Bristol Blenheim (medium bomber). Transferred to a torpedo training unit where they flew Bristol Beaufort aircraft. Flew to Malta via Gibraltar where they formed No. 39 Sqn., R.A.F. in July 1941. Squadron of twelve aircraft destroyed in an attack on shipping in the harbour of Catania, Italy. His was the only aircraft to return, and they crash-landed. Crew returned to England and joined No. 86 Sqn. for about two months. Attacks against coastal shipping near the Frisian Islands. In Nov. 1941 joined No. 407 Sqn., R.C.A.F. flying Lockheed Hudson bombers. After a total of twenty-eight operations he transferred to the School of Air Navigation in Lancashire. Returned to Canada, instructed at various R.A.F. stations in the Maritimes. In Sept. 1944 joined No. 164 Transport Sqn. flying Douglas Dakota (DC 3) aircraft. In an aside discusses his part in the attack on the Scharnhorst and Gneisenau (German battleships) during their dash through the English Channel in Feb. 1942. Almost nil visibility conditions although they did sight one of the German ships. (30:00)
Additional comments on living and flying operations in England. While in Canada he was commissioned. Additional tales of flying experiences. (45:00) Philosophy of the dangers of flying. Remained in the Air Force after the war.

(Side 2 - some repeated material) (02:00) Description of staying in a London hotel during an air raid which, because of the effectiveness of the British night fighters, may have been the last major German raid. The situation regarding rations and civilian rationing provided many opportunities to operate in a "grey market" in cigarettes, which occasionally became a useful source of funds. Discusses disparity in pay scales between R.A.F. and R.C.A.F. Additional information on the Scharnhorst incident; ceiling so low that bombsight was useless, eventually "threw" the bombs in the direction of the German ship by releasing and turning sharply away. His reaction to operations, missing friends, etc. General comments. (48:00)

Major G.N. Giles Perodeau
Royal Montreal Regiment
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 4, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Dec. 31, 1919 and attended school in Montreal. When the war began he first joined the naval reserve, but found himself under-age for officer selection. Felt that a better opportunity existed in the Royal Montreal Regiment which was raising a 2nd Battalion (militia). In Aug. 1941 sent to the O.C.T.U. at Brockville and then overseas as a reinforcement officer to the 1st Battalion in May 1942. In March 1944 the battalion was broken up to provide reinforcements, but he was asked to remain as armoured car troop commander in the one company retained as 1st Canadian Army headquarters defence company. Went to Normandy on D+10 with the Tactical headquarters. (15:00) Initially they had a very quiet time as no troops were under command. Appointed A.D.C. to Gen. H.D. Crerar, the Army commander, who liked to drive his own jeep, driver in the back, A.D.C. beside him, and with two military police outriders. Crerar very occasionally rode in the armoured cars. Flew a good deal and had to be met often at his destination by the A.D.C. and jeep. This often meant an early start for his aides. Normally on the road by 8:30 A.M. with coffee and sandwiches for lunch. Comments on Crerar's style. (25:00) A well-controlled individual, a reserved man, and headquarters had a quiet, reserved mess, in which an A.D.C. was always on duty if the General was present. Crerar-Montgomery comment. (35:00) Relations with Lieut.-Gen. Guy Simonds. Reconnaissance to the Seine River. (45:00) Much time spent keeping maps up to date. Served Lieut.-Gen. Simonds when he was acting army commander. A man of very little humour. Much impressed by a visit to the U.S. 82nd Airborne Division. Gen. Crerar a great record keeper. Comments on various personalities. Was A.D.C. to the end of 1944, then posted to the staff at army headquarters, Belgium and Holland. (17:00)

Air Vice-Marshall John Lawrence Plant

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000115
Plant, John Lawrence, A/V/M, 1910-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by John Lawrence Plant ; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 23, 29, 1977, Victoria, B.C.
(Side 1) Born on Aug. 20, 1910 in Swansea, Wales. Educated in Summerland and Victoria, B.C., then Victoria College and University of British Columbia, graduating in mechanical engineering in 1931. Qualified as a pilot in 1931 after spending summers with the R.C.A.F. Permanent commission on Jan. 1, 1934. After a year of courses posted to No. 4 Flying Boat Sqn. at Vancouver. Besides flying duties he served as adjutant in order to learn administrative duties. Explanation of the early purpose of the R.C.A.F., civilian-oriented toward aerial photography. In 1934 a major thrust began toward the establishment of a fighting force. Became a flying instructor. In 1939 was employed at air force headquarters in the rank of flight lieutenant. In Sept. 1940 posted to No. 12 Transport Sqn. (No. 12 Communications Sqn.) at Rockcliffe as commanding officer. This was the first squadron in what became air transport command. Remarks on the death of Norman Rogers, Minister of National Defence. That unfortunate accident gave impetus to the provision of safe air transport for V.I.P.'s (15:00). Later 9 Transport Group became operational at Rockcliffe and developed into air transport command with several bases. Posted to command No. 413 Sqn. on its way to Ceylon in March 1942. Almost immediately the first casualties occurred in the war against Japan. The disposition of the British Fleet and Japanese attacks on Colombo harbour. This R.C.A.F. squadron provided the first sighting reports on the approaching Japanese. Appointed to No. 6 Bomber Group in England as a wing commander and on the return flight was given the duty of escorting the German prisoner Gen. von Thoma and his aide to England. They stopped at Gibraltar which was so crowded that he called on the Governor to accommodate his distinguished prisoner at Government House. Landed in Cornwall; details of train journey to London. Served for a year with No. 6 Bomber Group. Some remarks on heavy raids. Returned to Canada; staff college in the United States, then to National Defence Headquarters.

(Side 2) (45:00) At N.D.H.Q. he was air member for technical services in charge of procurement for all equipment. Worked on the Avro Arrow project in its early stages. In 1958 he left the Air Force to become president of Avro Aircraft Ltd. Remarks on the specifications for the Arrow, tooling, supersonic flight, etc. (10:00) Gives a short history of the Orenda engine, a very successful development. Tooling costs became very high. Control systems for the aircraft and for the missiles were developed by Hughes Aircraft and then redeveloped for the Sparrow II missile; R.C.A. was involved at a later date. (30:00) The complicated Astra navigation system was very expensive. When government cancelled the Arrow program there was no alternative for the company. Canada lost a tremendous industrial asset. (35:00) Their engineers flocked to the United States, many into the aerospace program. Plant left Avro on Aug. 1, 1959. Still feels that the government could have handled the Arrow. Maintains that there is a possibility that the Arrow could have been carried to completion for the shutdown costs and the price of the older McDonnell Voodoo aircraft that the government bought as replacements. (47:00)

Maj. Arthur Howard Plows  
Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000116  
Plows, Arthur Howard, Maj., 1903-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Arthur Howard Plows ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 18 and 31, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Nov. 15, 1903 in Victoria, B.C. Father and two brothers served in the Army in the Great War. Became a rural school teacher. Joined the 2nd Battalion, Canadian Scottish Regiment. Gives some details of the composition of the Canadian Scottish Regiment, how various highland regiments amalgamated to become the 16th Battalion, C.E.F. (15:00) Details of training dispersed units of the 2nd Battalion, recruiting problems in 1939/40, lack of boots, etc. (30:00) Commissioned in the mid thirties. The battalion was stationed at several camps on southern Vancouver Island before moving to Debert, N.S. (45:00) where, among other things, they began training in tactics and as ski troops. As a captain he took the advance party to England. (20:00) Admiration for the British people. Describes the old barracks at Aldershot.

(Side 2) (30:00) Living conditions in England; barrack stores, rations were a bit scanty by Canadian standards. Considerable sports activity mingled with intensive training. (15:00) Defended the south coast of England. Many were anxious to get into the war and requested transfers to the reinforcement stream to Italy. As exercises became more professional soldiers' outlook changed and grumbling became less pronounced. (25:00) Mentions Dieppe and the effect on the 2nd Canadian Division. Assault training over beaches began. (35:00) Describes the "mix" in an assault craft; usually included support services such as engineers, perhaps an R.A.F. officer, provost carrying signs, an artillery observation officer, naval wireless operator, and so on. (45:00) Every sort of equipment was made available to the troops, almost on a personal wish basis. Trained with tanks. British battle school in Yorkshire. Boarded their landing craft on June 4, 1944. Went ashore in small assault craft on D-Day. Describes sights and sounds. At the beach dropped into about eight feet of water, paddled ashore, and moved inland. Describes German opposition. Believes that the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division was used properly and was well trained. (30:00) Comments on Falaise. Company commander. On July 8, 1944 he was wounded during heavy fighting. Although his wound was not serious, he was evacuated to England as there were no proper hospital facilities in Normandy. Returned to the Canadian Scottish Regiment in Oct. 1944. (48:00)

Lt.-Col. Frederick Norman Pope

The Seaforth Highlanders of Canada

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000182
Pope, Frederick Norman, Lt.-Col., 1911-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Frederick Norman Pope ; interviewed by Chris Bell
5 sound cassettes (ca. 300 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 300 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 31, June 7, 10, 15, and 22, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Nov. 4, 1911 in England where his father was an Anglican priest. Lived in Hong Kong, then England where he attended Bedford Grammar School. School cadet corps. Later joined the London Scottish Regiment (militia) where he was required to show that at least one parent was a Scot. Emigrated to Canada after a C.P.R.-sponsored agricultural course.
Attended MacDonald College at McGill University to further his agricultural education.
Edmonton and finally to a sheep ranch in Tofield, Alta. where he worked for board and lodging.


(Reel 2, Side 1) Got along well with Vokes. Anecdote. Promoted to captain. Seaforth Pipe Band played in the village of Inverary; no locals attended because the band wore the Mackenzie tartan! Combined operations training. Troopship to Sicily. Describes the landing of the 2nd Infantry Brigade. As intelligence officer he kept maps and reports up to date. Battalion in reserve in Aug. 1943. (45:00) Invaded Italy. In mountainous country had to live off the land to some extent. Liaison duties as staff officer (G.S.O. III) at divisional headquarters. Visited the Seaforth Highlanders for their Christmas dinner in the middle of the battle for Ortona. Describes methods used in house-to-house fighting, mouse holing, etc. Returned to Charlie Company of the Seaforths as second-in-command, then company commander. In March 1944 at the Hitler Line were supported very ably by the North Irish Horse. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Returned to Canada to the staff college at Kingston, Ont. On return overseas in Feb. 1945 was stopped in Ottawa and posted to the directorate of military training. In Sept. 1945 attended U.S. Army staff college at Fort Leavenworth. Retained rank of major in the Interim Force. (35:00) U.S. Staff College. Returned to Ottawa; housing problems. Personal experiences. (47:00) Posted to the tripartite committee on equipment standardization (Canada, U.S.A., Great Britain). Moved to London, England. War Office. Sometimes acted as liaison between British and Americans, particularly as to social customs. In 1951 posted as deputy adjutant and quartermaster general at military district headquarters in Kingston. (35:00)
(Reel 3, Side 1) Anecdote, militia unit, D.A.Q.M.G. Volunteered, but not accepted for Korean War. In 1954 was posted to the U.S. Staff College at Norfolk, Va. Army headquarters, Ottawa; logistic plans. Promoted to lieutenant-colonel in 1955. In 1957 became military liaison officer at the United Nations in New York. Involved with provision of the U.N. Force for Egypt. Worked for future prime minister, Mike Pearson, whom he considered to be a great boss and an excellent Minister of Foreign Affairs. Appointed G.S.O. I (cadets) where he was heavily involved with training programs. In 1959 commandant of the National Cadet Camp at Banff. Visited by the Queen and Prince Philip. (45:00) Retired in 1962. Explains that in 1954 he was accepted into the P.P.C.L.I. as all staff officers in the regular force were required to belong to a regular force unit. Joined the personnel division of the Penitentiary Service. (08:00)

Lieut. John T. Potts

Royal Flying Corps

Royal Air Force

Record ID: 00000118
Potts, John T., Lt., 1898-198-?
My Air Force and Army recollections [sound recording] / by John T. Potts ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 18, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Born on June 13, 1898 in Lincolnshire. At the age of seventeen (1915) he joined the 2nd/5th South Staffordshire Regiment. First saw service in Dublin in 1916 during the Irish rebellion. Comments on conditions of service in Ireland. Marched from Dublin to Belfast during one nine-day period carrying 140 lbs. of equipment and weapons. Applied for a commission on his return to England. Posted to the 3rd Officer Cadet Battalion at Bristol. Volunteered for the Royal Flying Corps just after commissioning in late 1917. During his training he flew the DH-6 (de Havilland two-seater) and later in the FE 2b, a single engine "pusher" aircraft used as a night bomber toward the end of the war. Describes bombload, range, flying suit, etc. Reinforcement depot in France, then to No. 101 Squadron, R.A.F. in Apr. 1918. On operations anti-aircraft fire kept the bomber at between two and three thousand feet during raids which were performed by single aircraft dropping one bomb at a time against bridges and railways in enemy territory. Occasionally made two raids on one night. The FE 2b was a reliable aircraft, although the engine in the rear posed considerable danger to the crew during forced landings. In Sept. 1918 his aircraft engine sustained damage, caught fire and upon crash-landing he suffered fairly serious injuries. He was unconscious for a month. In hospital in London when the war ended. Discharged in Dec. 1918 as unfit for further service. Emigrated to Canada in 1922, worked in a bank in Alberta, then for the provincial government. Commissioned in the Canadian army in the
Second World War and trained recruits until discharged on medical grounds in June 1943. Moved to Victoria, B.C. where he was employed by the federal civil service. (58:00)

Capt. Reginald Ralph

Royal Canadian Ordnance Corps

Record ID: 00000119
Ralph, Reginald, Capt., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Reginald Ralph ; interviewed by James Murphy
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 26, 1977, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Sept. 20, 1920 in Victoria, B.C. In Feb. 1939 joined No. 5 Army Field Workshop, R.C.O.C. (militia) which was based on Canteen Rd. in Esquimalt. Went active on Sept. 4, 1939. The unit was organized for a static role, but this soon changed as it was broken up into smaller units: Light Aid Detachments, for example. Initially he served in the orderly room documenting the members of the unit. Trained as part of a Light Anti-Aircraft L.A.D. One officer and fifteen men joined the 2nd Light Anti Aircraft Regiment, R.C.A. in Apr. 1941 at Colchester, England. (15:00) In Nov. 1941, as a sergeant, posted to the new Canadian army headquarters at Leatherhead where he worked for the deputy director of ordnance services, a British officer. Performed various staff functions, the longest of which was for eighteen months at the railhead, Leatherhead. Warrant officer, (W.O.I) when he was sent to an O.C.T.U. in Aug. 1943; commissioned in Feb. 1944. Posted to 3rd Canadian Infantry Division where eventually in Normandy he was assigned the hopeless job (he claims) of making the division salvage conscious. Concentrated on weapons recovery. Later commanded an ammunition section, preparing dumps, etc., particularly for medium artillery. Appointed staff captain (ammunition) for 2nd Canadian Corps. Explains part of the technique of establishing dumps, road access, good verges, etc. Not easy in flooded sections of Belgium and Holland. Assisted 30 Corps (British) during Operation Veritable. There was virtually a constant stream of ammunition platoons arriving at forward ammunition dumps. At times they required levied civilian aid or labour troops. Often worked in darkness and in flooded country. At the end of the war brought German ammunition dumps under control. Especially interested in keeping 'engineer explosives and small arms ammunition out of the wrong hands. (46:00)

Lieut. (Hon. Col. [U.S.]) Albert W Reid.

Canadian Intelligence Corps
Psychological Warfare Branch, American Military Government

Record ID: 00000120
Reid, Albert W., Lt., Hon. Col. (U.S.), 1896?-  
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Albert W. Reid; interviewed by William S. Thackray  
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.): standard mono.  
In World War II Reid was a civilian with the American Military Government with the honourary rank or equivalency of a colonel in the United States Army.  
Summary of tape also in archives.  
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.  
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.  
Side 2 of original sound tape reel has interview with Maj. Madeleine Nation.  
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 23, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Reid was a newspaper reporter in 1916 when he enlisted in the 228th Battalion, C.E.F. Trained at Camp Borden where he was appointed orderly room sergeant for his unit. Shortly after arriving overseas the battalion was converted to the 6th Battalion, Canadian Railway Troops as most were experienced in mining and the operation of light railways. To France. Posted to the 4th British Army intelligence section. Sent to Italy as the British required Italian-speaking personnel. In Padua and Rome he was involved in security work. Recalled and commissioned as a lieutenant in the Canadian Intelligence Corps. He was officer in charge of "Intelligence B", counter-espionage, and as such was free to travel anywhere throughout the war zone. Part of his work involved an awareness of those who, if taken prisoner by the enemy, would be in a position to give information. Injured in a motorcycle accident. Hospital and convalescence in England, Oct. 1918. After discharge in Canada he returned to newspaper work. In 1941 joined National Defence Headquarters in communications, but was not successful in rejoining the military intelligence organization. Joined External Affairs where he was employed in psychological warfare against the Italians. Took two Italian civilians to Italy where he was attached to the American military government organization. (45:00) Operated an Italian newspaper in Rome and had considerable contact with Italian politicians in 1944. The Allies were able to regulate all newspaper publishing by the simple expedient of controlling the newsprint supply. Went to Rimini for stories on the Canadian army and later published accounts of the Italian units fighting with the Allies. At the end of the war he was made press director for the U.S. army in Austria. Offers an account of newspaper publishing in Vienna which was under joint occupation. Relations with the Russians were very good on a personal level, but officially they were very difficult. Several examples of this. (30:00) The profits of the newspaper were difficult to dispose of when he discovered that the only place they could be kept in an Austrian bank was in his own personal account! Anecdotes of Austria. Returned to Canada via the United States. (47:00) (Note: In the Second World War Reid was a civilian with the American Military Government with the honourary rank or equivalency of a colonel in the U.S. army.)
Brig. Clinton Argue Richardson, D.S.O

The Calgary Regiment (14th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000211
Richardson, Clinton Argue, Brig., D.S.O., 1908-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Clinton Argue Richardson ; interviewed by Richard Gosse Maltby
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (28 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound cassette, Aug. 1989, Montreal, Que.
Richardson, Clinton Argue, Brig., D.S.O., 1908- - Interviews

Born on Oct. 12, 1908 and presently resides in Montreal, Que.

(Transcript) Introduction. Originally joined the regiment in Red Deer Alta. and was shortly thereafter commissioned as an acting second lieutenant. The regiment "went active" in 1941. Second Lieutenant Richardson was sent to the Officer Cadet Training Unit Brockville, Ont., but after about a month he was recalled to the regiment as they were about to proceed overseas. In England he was appointed quartermaster, but had to learn the job by doing it. Regular promotions brought him to squadron commander, second-in-command, and finally commanding officer.

The regiment left Camp Borden for England in June 1941 and quickly began intensive training on Salisbury Plain. Originally issued with Matilda tanks, then with the heavier Churchill tank. Soon began "infantry-cum-tank" training. In Jan. 1942 finally qualified as lieutenant while carrying on as quartermaster. Many exercises and firing practices in 1942, followed by combined operations exercises on the Isle of Wight. Carried out many experiments in waterproofing tanks. In August they were notified that they were to be part of an assault against Dieppe. As quartermaster he served in the regimental headquarters ship which was sunk, but luckily he was rescued. Due to losses in men and equipment much effort had to be made to rebuild the regiment to its previous standard. Comment that a major difficulty for the tanks at Dieppe was the seawall which was in fact higher than the one built for the pre-invasion exercises on the Isle of Wight. The rock on the beaches was discovered to be quite unsuitable for tracked vehicles. Intensive training carried out at Seaforth and Worthing. The regiment, as part of the 1st Canadian Armoured Brigade, was inspected by the King in Feb. 1943. Issued with Canadian built Ram tanks and, short time with Sherman tanks. After intensive training with the tanks they embarked on landing ships, tank (LST's) and sailed from the Clyde to a destination only announced some time later. Landed on Sicily, July 13, 1943, but saw little action in the early stage of the invasion. Landed in Italy and quickly moved to the eastern side of the country. Advanced across the Foggia Plain and were seen in action against the Germans. Supported the 8th Indian Division. In heavy fighting the supply situation deteriorated. Mule trains were organized, sometimes moving forty miles to reach the unit. By now in command of B Squadron, counting himself fortunate that
he was no longer quartermaster. In Dec. 1943 appointed second-in-command of the regiment. Experienced terrible weather in winter 1944 with the result that the tanks had to occupy static positions. At the end of Jan. they mounted two attacks, under constant shellfire, and both were repulsed. Possibly the hardest fighting occurred in May 1944 in the Liri Valley. With the 8th Indian Division they crossed the Gari River and helped break the German Gustiv Line. Advanced to the Hitler Line against heavy opposition. Many losses in tanks and men. On June 11, 1944 assumed command of the regiment. Rest and training south of Rome, then on to the attack on the Trasimeno Line. Very rough and muddy country. Outran their supplies, obtained food from civilian sources. Own tank mined and put out of communication for some time. The enemy dug in on the Arezzo Florence road and the advance was stopped. In mid-July they advanced again, in support of the 8th Indian Division to the lower Arno River, not far from Florence. Rest area, training, leave in Rome. On Aug. 25, 1944 the regiment crossed the Arno under heavy shelling and with the 1/5 Ghurka Regiment advanced as far as the enemy, the poor weather, and worse terrain permitted. As the commanding officer, he visited all the forward positions every day. The battle resolved itself into problems of supply --food and ammunition -- and the rough terrain, with the enemy as badly off. Fortunately the Canadians and the Indians retained their high morale. No real tank warfare in the mountains, rather they acted as a form of mobile artillery. Reads excerpt from the regimental war diary. Intensive training period. they ran reconnaissance, gunnery and driving schools. In Jan. 1945 in action in support of the 56th (London) Division of the 8th Army. Left Italy in March 1945 as part of Operation Goldflake, concentrating in Belgium. Much effort expended in bringing the regiment back to acceptable standards of neatness, drill, and saluting! In April they advanced on Arnhem, through there, and to much confused fighting in support of the British 49th Division. On the move continuously. By April 26 firing had stopped on their front and they realized that the war was over for them. Within a few days they were engaged in cleaning up there area, burying dead animals, opening roads, guarding German prisoners. All tanks and vehicles were freshly painted for the Victory Parade in the Hague on May 21. Subsequently they were engaged in moving prisoners from the Zuider Zee area and in practising for a great many ceremonies and parades. Anxiety to return to Canada and too much free time combined to produce some lack of discipline, but increased training time alleviated the problem somewhat. On May 20, 1945 all their tanks were turned into the Ordnance Corps. All key personnel were "frozen" in their jobs pending repatriation. Much sports activity together with frequently held drill sessions kept the troops busy. They began their own newspaper, The Calgary Eye-Opener. On Aug. 19, 1945 the regiment went to Dieppe for a memorial parade. In Sept. ordered to turn in all vehicles and on the 27th the remaining members started for Canada. At Calgary about two hundred, all ranks, marched through the streets to a very warm reception. Offers some statistics, including having received more than a thousand tanks from the Ordnance Corps, fought more than 400 days out of a possible 668 days in an operational theatre, and two tanks survived to complete the whole operational period. (90:00)

Capt. J. Emerson Robinson

Saskatoon Light Infantry (M.G.)
Record ID: 00000121
Robinson, J. Emerson, Capt., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by J. Emerson Robinson; interviewed by Tom Torrie
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 18, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Oct. 22, 1915 in Radisson, Sask. Belonged to the 14th Canadian Light Horse
(militia) in 1935, followed by the C.O.T.C. at university. Joined the Saskatoon Light Infantry on
Feb. 2, 1940. After modest training sent overseas in fall 1940. An account of the long voyage to
England (about two weeks). Through friends in the Canadian Press he always had an enjoyable
time in London. Remembers sleeping through one heavy air raid during which his hotel was set
afire. Reinforcement unit at Borden. Posted to the battalion in 1941. During training the Saskatoon
Light Infantry changed its role to a heavy support unit, (30:00) adding to their existing Vickers
machine guns, mortars and 20-mm. Oerlikon anti-aircraft guns. Promoted to captain. (45:00)
Completely re-equipped before leaving for Sicily in 1943. They landed some days after the
original landings and were soon involved in their support role. A quiet time immediately after the
invasion of Italy, but this soon changed as Ortona was approached. (20:00) Came down with
infectious hepatitis; after hospital spent several months as commander of a reinforcement
company. Rejoined the battalion before the battle for the Liri River. Spent a miserable winter
near the Po River. Commanded Headquarters Company. Reinforcements in very short supply.
Relieved an infantry unit for a short time; an account of a small action. (Here Robinson refers to
a Col. Snow of the Loyal Edmonton Regiment. Possibly he meant to refer to Lieut.-Col. J.R.
Crossed the Rhine into Germany, then recrossed and moved into Holland. At the end of the war
drove into several Dutch villages to a very warm greeting. Remembers columns of heavily armed
Germans marching to concentration points. (50:00)

(Side 2) Story of the liberation of a Dutch village and the release of four Jews who had been
hidden in a basement for years. Entered Rotterdam the day after the end of the war. Describes
living conditions of the Dutch, many of whom starved to death. Moved truckloads of hardtack
from the first ship to enter the harbour. Argument with a representative of the Dutch
government-in-exile who thought that some of the food might fall into the hands of the black
marketeers. With the aid of his revolver Robinson persuaded the Dutch representative that he
was mistaken and carried on unloading the freighter. (12:00)


Canadian Scottish Regiment

Royal Hamilton Light Infantry
Record ID: 00000183
Rockingham, John Meredith, Maj.-Gen., C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1911-198-?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Meredith Rockingham ; interviewed by
Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 143 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 143 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives
holds an additional interview with Maj.-Gen. Rockingham. Reel includes a 102-min. interview
conducted by Dr. Reginald H. Roy, July 11, 1979, Qualicum Beach, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 16, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000184
Rockingham, John Meredith, Maj.-Gen., C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1911-198-?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Meredith Rockingham ; interviewed by
Reginald H. Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 102 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 102 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds an additional interview with Maj.-Gen. Rockingham. Reel includes 143-min.
interview conducted by Chris D. Main, June 16, 1979, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 11, 1979, Qualicum Beach, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by C. D. Main) Born on Aug. 24, 1911 in Sydney, Australia.
Emigrated to Canada in 1930. Educated in Barbados and Australia. Employed by the B.C.
Electric Co. Joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment (militia) and was soon commissioned.
Captain of the Canadian Scottish rugby team. Prewar unit paraded on Monday and Thursday.
Machine gun platoon. Prewar morale in the unit was high; a commission was considered a
privilege. Officers required to learn highland dancing, originally taught by his future wife! The
regimental mascot, Wallace I, the dog, was smuggled overseas in 1940. Prior to that Capt.
Rockingham reverted to lieutenant to join the 1st Battalion moving overseas. Approached
Glasgow with the pipe band playing on the bow of the troopship. Commanded the guard of
honour for the King and Queen at Aldershot. Company commanders school; tactics, weapons.
Promoted to major and company commander in the Royal Hamilton Light Infantry. In 1943
became the commanding officer of the R.H.L.I. (45:00) Sent to staff college. Shortly after D-Day
he was removed from college and rejoined his unit in Normandy as C.O. In two weeks he was
promoted to brigadier and in command of 9th Canadian Infantry Brigade (Aug. 1944). During
his time as C.O. of the R.H.L.I. he put in a heavy attack toward Verrieres. Remained in command
of the 9th Infantry Brigade until the end of the war. Discusses command structure, including
tactics and logistics. Specialties of the 9th Brigade were river crossings and waterborne advances.
Fought south to Falaise. Offers reasons for perceived delays in closing the Falaise
Gap. Opinion of Montgomery. Captured the port of Boulogne after skilful use of Royal Air Force
bombers. Personally believes that brigade commanders should be well forward in order to
exercise better control. Considerable responsibility for casualties and often the commanding
officer's fault if too heavy. A brigade commander plans the attack, knows the capabilities of his
troops. Some unit commanders were cautious, some flamboyant; a unit always reflected the individual style. Normally three or four days required to position troops. Always believed in reinforcing success in battle. Surprise very important; night movement often necessary; possibility of enemy counterattacks. Awarded the D.S.O. at Verrieres and again at the crossing of the Rhine. (50:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Under command of 51st Highland Division (British) for the Rhine crossing. In Emden when the war ended. Impressed by the excellent morale of the German troops. Appointed to command an infantry brigade for the Pacific war. After the war he returned to the B.C. Electric Co. When the Korean War broke out he was in charge of Pacific Stage Lines. Asked to command the 25th Infantry Brigade in 1950. A completely independent command; sometimes had an abrasive time with the Americans. Brigade group lands in Korea. (23:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1, interviewed by R. H. Roy) Despite his wish to command the R.H.L.I. on D-Day he was sent to staff college. Reappointed to command the regiment in mid-July. Twice bombed by friendly aircraft. Comments on attack on Verrieres. Heavy casualties; every officer in one company. Tank support suffered heavily. Great admiration for the German infantry. During a counterattack one German tank stopped directly over Rockingham's slit trench. Driven off by P.I.A.T. (projectile, infantry, anti-tank) fire. Shelled by own artillery and mortars. Promoted to brigadier, 9th Infantry Brigade. (45:00) Anecdote. Lt.-Gen. Guy Simonds. Familiar with relief of Maj.-Gen. George Kitching from command. Brigade commander must maintain enthusiasm of troops. Falaise, Operation Tractable. Describes the three battalions in his brigade. All were very good for certain operations. Philosophy of soldiering. Age of fighting troops. Mentions Brig. Churchill Mann, an excellent staff officer.

(Reel 2, Side 2) Returns to Falaise, dust conditions, troops involved. Later in August at Trun the Germans were decimated. Heavy defenses at Boulogne. Anecdote. Captured twelve hundred Germans in one morning. City surrendered to Brig. Rockingham. Comments on the general attitude of the French people. Sometimes not happy to be liberated by the Allies because of the general destruction that entailed. Morale of the troops, excellent support services. (42:00)

Capt. H.J.F. Rose

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000122
Rose, H.J.F., Capt., 1910?-198-?
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by H.J.F. Rose ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 6, 1978, Victoria, B.C.
Born ca. 1910 in Oshawa, Ont. prior to the Great War. Lived in England for part of that war and returned to Victoria, B.C. where he was educated. An employee of the Bank of Montreal he joined the 5th British Columbia Coast Brigade, R.C.A. on Sept. 14, 1939. Commissioned at the end of 1940. Initially he was one of those manning the guns of an examination battery at Victoria harbour. Anecdote. Overseas in 1942 after a short stop at Petawawa where he joined the 3rd Medium Regiment, R.C.A. Describes equipment and personnel in a troop of medium artillery. (22:00) In England they had to guard against boredom caused by overtraining. Landed in Normandy in the latter part of June 1944. Was a forward observation officer with the 2nd Canadian Armoured Brigade near Falaise. Not many targets of opportunity; most often they fired in accordance with previously laid down fire plans. In action at Cape Gris Nez against enemy anti-aircraft gun positions which produced a marked reduction in enemy fire during a raid by the R.A.F. Supported 2nd Canadian Armoured Brigade during Operation Totalize. Later most often in support of the 4th Canadian Armoured Division. Belgium, Holland, and Nijmegen. Seconded to the 6th British Airborne Division in late 1944 in the special communications section (an innovation after the battle for Arnhem) as an artillery liaison officer. Participated with that unit in the crossing of the Rhine. Favourable comment on German tank quality. Criticizes the American supply system: sometimes their excellent rations were more plentiful than ammunition. Anecdote. (48:00) Outside Wilhelmshaven at the end of the war. Returned to Canada in Sept. 1945. Describes the German forces as producing very good soldiers, excellently equipped in many ways. (60:00) Back to the Bank of Montreal in Jan. 1946. (04:00)

Brig. John Stewart Ross, D.S.O.

Royal Canadian Horse Artillery

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000123
Ross, John Stewart, Brig.-Gen., D.S.O., C.D., 1911-1989
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by John Stewart Ross ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 22 and 29, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born in Halifax on June 23, 1911 (died on March 1, 1989). His father, a physician and member of the militia, died when Brig. Ross was five years old. He remembers the Halifax Explosion of 1917. He and his mother were blown off their feet at a distance of three miles from the site of the blast. Came to Victoria in 1919 where his mother married an Ordnance Corps officer (later Maj.-Gen.) and lived at Work Point Barracks. Later attended schools in Calgary and Toronto. Entered the Royal Military College in 1929. Describes academics and discipline at the college, both of which he found to be tough. A heavy sports schedule which, with a student body of only two hundred, produced very good results at the intercollegiate intermediate level,
particularly in hockey and football. Due to academic problems he spent five years at R.M.C., graduating in 1934. Granted a permanent commission in the army and joined B Battery, R.C.H.A. in Kingston. The pay for a lieutenant was 108 dollars per month out of which, during the first year, one month's salary was deducted as an initiation fee in the officers' mess. Other deductions included a per diem charge for extra messing and the total of a bar bill, limited in the case of subalterns, to thirteen dollars per month. A formal mess where officers dressed for dinner four nights a week. Later posted to Winnipeg where the garrison mess was less formal with mess kit worn only one night a week. (60:00) In fall 1938 he returned to Kingston and very shortly thereafter was chosen to be a two-year exchange officer in England. Posted to the 9th Field Regiment, Royal Artillery, at Larkhill. On Sept. 16, 1939 he found himself in France with the British army. In June 1940 he was to be one of only two Canadian officers to be evacuated from Dunkirk. Promoted to captain by the British. Gives details of the procedure required of a lieutenant to obtain permission to marry. In France he participated in many large-scale exercises during the "phony war". In May 1940 the regiment moved into Belgium and into action which did not stop until they were evacuated. (15:00) Explains the evacuation: supply system broke down, no sleep, in action all day, moved at night. At the end their guns were destroyed by the engineers while they destroyed their vehicles. On the night of May 31/June 1 they marched thirty-four miles. Returned to England dead tired aboard a minesweeper. Points out that morale remained high. For better control every officer commanded a group of fifty men. Great reception in England. (30:00)

(Side 2) In May 1940 he finally had his pay problems with the Canadian army resolved when the British paid the Canadian government the difference of pay when they promoted Ross to captain. Received instructions to join 1st Field Regiment, R.C.H.A., then was promoted to major and to command a battery of 2nd Field Regiment, R.C.A. Posted to Canada as chief instructor at the Artillery Training Centre at Winnipeg, then as a staff officer at Petawawa. Staff College at Kingston for four months. (25:00) Posted overseas as brigade major (artillery) with 5th Canadian Armoured Division. In March 1943 commanded 3rd Field Regiment, R.C.A. (1st Canadian Infantry Division). Training in Scotland for the invasion of Sicily. Explains how artillery commanding officers are closely associated with infantry regiments they are supporting. Invasion of Sicily. (35:00) Lost one battery at sea due to enemy action. For a short time they used a battery of captured horsedrawn Italian guns, but soon discarded them due to their short range. Impressions of Sicily, a backward country in many respects. (40:00) Comments on various army commanders. (45:00) British tank regiments support Canadians. Awarded D.S.O. Explains ways that they were awarded. Forward observation officer duties. (15:00) Great flexibility in the use of Canadian artillery. Promoted brigadier in Dec. 1944 and commander of 5th Armoured Division artillery. Move to Belgium and Holland. Comments on relations with the Russians; immediate postwar impressions. Reverted to the rank of colonel in the Interim Force and became Director of Artillery. Regained the rank of brigadier in 1959. Command structure explained for western Canada; commanded the Alberta area, then eastern Ontario. Retired in Apr. 1966. (50:00)

Maj.-Gen. Norman H. Ross

The Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders of Canada
Record ID: 00000185
Ross, Norman H., Maj.-Gen., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Norman H. Ross ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
4 sound cassettes (ca. 296 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 296 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives holds additional interviews with Maj.-Gen. Ross. The two reels include 261 min. of interviews conducted by William S. Thackray, May 27, June 16, and July 4, 1980, Victoria, B.C. Recorded on original sound tape reels July 20 and Aug. 16, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000186
Ross, Norman H., Maj.-Gen., 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Norman H. Ross ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 261 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 261 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives also holds additional interviews with Maj.-Gen. Ross. The two reels include 296 min. of interviews conducted by Chris D. Main, July 20 and Aug. 16, 1979, Victoria, B.C. Recorded on original sound tape reels May 27, June 16, and July 4, 1980, Victoria B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by C. D. Main) Born on June 5, 1915 in Winnipeg. Educated in that city. Cadet corps at school, C.O.T.C. at University of Manitoba. Joined the Cameron Highlanders as a second lieutenant. Discusses uniforms, militia pay, aid to members of the unit during the Depression. Considerable time spent on the rifle range. (45:00) Pipe band emphasized; good public relations. Some anti-military feeling in Winnipeg during the 1930's. Summer camp at Shilo. Military attitude, of themselves and by others. (28:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Offered a Permanent Force commission in 1939, but decided to stay with the Cameron Highlanders as he felt that war was near. Mobilization and direct recruiting took place in Sept. 1939. Luxury of selecting the best recruits. New ethnic mix. First winter spent on basic training; weather prevented tactical training. Battalion moved to Camp Shilo in late spring, 1940. Took the advance party to England on June 5, 1940. Experience taking over the British barracks at Cove. (45:00) Great need to be alert! Became a staff captain (learner) at 2nd Division headquarters administration staff school at Oxford University. Administration officer at bomb reconnaissance school. Promoted to major and officer commanding A Company in the Cameron Highlanders. During 1942 it was ordered that no one over the age of forty-five years could serve in a field unit. Many officers, including the C.O., had to return to Canada. In his opinion their new commanding officer was not a good choice. Combined operations training on the Isle of Wight. Anecdot about Adm. Hughes-Hallett, then a captain and naval force commander at Dieppe. (40:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Explains purpose and tactics of raid. Main task of the battalion was to pass through other troops and capture German documents. Felt that preparation for the raid was
thorough. False start in July; actual raid in Aug. 1942. Landed at Pourville through the South Saskatchewan Regiment. Heavy defensive fire caused plans to be altered. Moved well inland against increasing resistance. Ordered to withdraw, pinned down on the beach for a while. Eventually evacuated, but had to swim to a landing craft, assault. (45:00) Returned to Newhaven to a well-organized reception. Several days sorting out troops, intelligence reports, etc. To his knowledge there was no dissatisfaction or recrimination within the Cameron Highlanders. Supports Maj.-Gen. Ham Roberts, the raid commander. By the summer of 1943 they had replaced casualties and were again well-trained. Attended senior officers school; second-in-command of the battalion. In 1944 became the commanding officer. Necessity of replacing some long-serving members of the unit. Prior to D-Day the 2nd Canadian Infantry Division became part of the deception force deployed opposite Calais. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2, interviewed by W. S. Thackray) Landed in Normandy on July 8, 1944 as part of the 6th Infantry Brigade commanded by Brig. Hugh Young. First in action after passing through Caen. Battle anecdotes. Excellent artillery support; engaged enemy tanks close to the Orne River. Jeep destroyed by German shellfire; badly wounded in the leg. Operation at British field hospital (45:00), then evacuated by hospital ship to civilian hospital in England. Later at 22 Canadian General Hospital at Bramshot. After about a month he was returned to Canada in the hospital ship Lady Nelson. Anecdotes. Winnipeg; cast on leg for two years. While at hospital he volunteered to work for local military headquarters, then on a review board in Ottawa. Short resume of subsequent career; accepted by Permanent Force. Staff college. (48:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Administrative job in Ottawa. Washington, D.C. for four years as general staff officer, grade I. Liaison officer to Pentagon during the Korean War. Training area for 25 Canadian Infantry Brigade. Excellent co-operation by the Americans; much equipment required. Americans puzzled by Canadian insistence on paying for the brigade on a per man per day basis, and on time every month as well! Promoted to colonel and director of manning. Difficult time maintaining the strength of the army. Started psychological testing at this time. Standards of recruiting were raised. Introduced more effective leave schedule for the armed forces; morale booster. Three years as military attache in Tokyo. Hard work maintaining Canadian independence working closely with Americans and British. (45:00) Became chief of staff, Western Command. Explains command structure. Unification changed the command system for the worse. Promoted to brigadier, area commander, New Brunswick. National survival. Camp Gaetown problems, usually due to lack of proper funding. Imperial Defence College. Deputy chief of general staff. Concerned with equipment and the operational control of the army. The air force system of command not good for the army, but originally supported unification because believed that savings could be realized. Feels that, on the whole, until 1970 the army supported the concept. At that time they did not realize that there would be a serious deterioration of the effectiveness of the land forces. The air force had the organizational inside track. Disdain for the Minister of National Defence. Blames the air force for successfully exerting influence in the loss of area command in the Army and for the failure to improve the logistic system (45:00). Basically the air force method does not work well except for their command and operational structure which, Ross points out, is very good indeed.

(Reel 3, Side 2) The army did not come out well -- see the McKinnon Report during the short-lived Clark Conservative government. Partly the fault of senior army officers who lacked a
cohesive policy. Worries that the army cannot field an operational force without depriving the static staff in camps and other facilities. A loss in operational efficiency, perhaps of major proportions, is in effect. In 1968 commanded the intelligence and security branch where he was quite independent. This service has done well under unification. (33:00)

Lieut. Cdr. Stirling MacNeil Ross

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000124
Ross, Stirling MacNeil, Lieut.-Cdr., 1929-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Stirling MacNeil Ross ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July21, 1986, Victoria B.C.

Born on Dec. 4, 1929. Came from a military family; father was a trooper in the 2nd Canadian Mounted Rifles in South Africa and later in the Canadian Expeditionary Force for four years, returning to Canada as a major. In the Second World War his father was a government postal expert who organized the Canadian postal services for the Army in England and later in Italy. Lieut. Cdr. Ross joined the Navy through Royal Roads Military College in 1948. Chose to join the Ordnance Branch in 1950 and attended the Royal Military College for one year before changing to the Marine Engineering Branch. Midshipman in 1951 and posted to H.M.S. Indomitable (fleet aircraft carrier). Discusses the rank of midshipman, living conditions, status, etc. Previous seetime had been in H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser) as a cadet. Comments on the influence of the Royal Navy on the R.C.N. which at the time was undergoing a considerable expansion. (20:00) Enrolled in the Royal Naval Engineering College, H.M.S. Thunderer. This course consisted of two years of engineering basics, followed by one year at sea to obtain an engine room watchkeeping ticket, then one year of specialization. The year at sea was spent with the Mediterranean Fleet where, for two cruises, Lord Mountbatten was aboard his ship. In 1955 returned to the R.C.N. and appointed to H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier) as a lieutenant. Anti-submarine role developed during this period. Became a training officer aboard H.M.C.S. Cape Breton (fleet support vessel) which was the apprentice training ship. In 1959 returned to sea in H.M.C.S. Ste. Therese (frigate) in which officer cadets were given experience. Posted to the Fleet School in Halifax. (55:00) Last sea appointment in H.M.C.S. Terra Nova (destroyer).
(60:00) Returned to university to obtain M.B.A. and posted to Ottawa to the Directorate of Ship Maintenance. Effects of integration: some aspects began early and were reasonably acceptable. Unification, however, upset all ranks. Remarks about Adm. Landymore who, he believes, did his best for integration, but could not support unification. (15:00) Canadian Defence Liaison Staff in Washington, D.C. Explains purpose and turbulence of U.S. political scene in the early seventies. In 1973 posted to Victoria as quality assurance officer at Dockyard. Retired in 1974. (30:00)
Lieut. (Dr.) Reginald H. Roy (Ph.D.)

The Cape Breton Highlanders

Record ID: 00000125
Roy, Reginald H., Lt., Ph.D., 1922-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Reginald H. Roy ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 6 and 15, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Dec. 11, 1922 in New Glasgow, N.S. Some details of family military history including that of his father who was a member of the Canadian Expeditionary Force and the Royal Flying Corps. Lived in Sydney, N.S. for several years until at age sixteen he joined the Cape Breton Highlanders (militia) shortly before the war. Trained as a signaller. Ordered to report to the unit on Sept. 2, 1939. Uniform a kilt, Great War tunic and webbing; no boots or socks. Went "active" as a boy soldier. Notes the almost complete lack of military preparations in the unit, lack of weapons, even rifles. Discusses the mobilization and equipping of militia units; priority being given to units assigned to divisions. Everyone in the unit at Sydney lived out as there were no barracks. (15:00) Much of their basic training took place in an old church until barrack accommodation was built. Training was not too strenuous, partly due to a lack of boots. Sent to St. John, N.B. for garrison duty in winter 1940/41. (35:00) Still no modern equipment was made available to them. In early 1941 they were chosen to form part of an overseas division. (41:00)

(Interview 2) Describes the H-huts usually provided to the troops, interior equipment, place for personal effects, etc. (45:00) Promoted to private and, six months later, to corporal. Moved to Connaught Ranges, then to Camp Borden where he became sergeant in the pioneer platoon. Saw modern weapons for the first time. In May 1941 became part of the 5th Canadian Armoured Division. Training equipment poured in and the battalion was brought up to war establishment. Describes his general impression of Camp Borden. Moved to Debert, N.S. where the first exodus of veterans of the Great War left the battalion and where most of the units of the division concentrated before proceeding overseas. (20:00) Landed in Scotland after a rough crossing in the Aquitania. Maida Barracks at Aldershot, old two-story brick buildings. Living conditions were spartan and the Canadians thought that English rations were a bit thin. The battalion became upset and a "strike" occurred when the remaining officers and men who had served in the Great War were replaced by personnel from the Black Watch. Leave in London was a novel experience for a nineteen year old from Nova Scotia. (35:00) The London scene. England was a fascinating place: the country, theatres, museums, etc. (40:00)
Bombardier Norman Rubenstein

Royal Artillery

Record ID: 00000126
Rubenstein, Norman, Bdr., 1919-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Norman Rubenstein ; interviewed by James Cross
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds an additional interview with Bdr. Rubenstein. Cassette includes 40-min.
transcript.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 7, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Jan. 10, 1919 in Swansea, Wales. Joined the Territorial Army after the Munich Crisis
and was called up for active duty on Aug. 24, 1939. In a searchlight unit service was boring in
the first few months of the war. In Jan. 1940 he volunteered for overseas service and on March
17, 1940 found himself in France. Stationed near Calais, but when the Germans invaded France
they moved to Arras. Returned to the Calais area where they were captured by the German army.
Escaped for a few days, but eventually recaptured by the S.S. (25:00) Train to Germany, then to
Poland in crowded freight cars with little food or water. Describes living conditions and rations
in prisoner of war camp. Moved to a camp where the guards were more professional and
conditions were better. Began to learn that one got along better with Germans if one was firm
and confident. Felt that he had to succeed to show that a Jewish soldier could cope with harsh
conditions. Received Red Cross parcels every two weeks. In charge of a small group working on
farms; not an unpleasant time. Through 1942 he was an interpreter at a medical camp. (45:00)
Transferred to a camp in an unfinished school in Poland where conditions were bad, but after
much effort they slowly improved. Next sent to a fortress camp which was so damp and cold,
and the food so bad, that the Red Cross eventually forced its closure. Bought a crystal radio set
and listened to the Allied radio broadcasts for ten hours a night; during the day he slept and
wrote a newsletter which he read aloud in four areas of the camp. (15:00) After Italy capitulated
Italian generals were brought to the camp and Rubenstein was ordered to teach them how to cook
and look after themselves in prison. Moved again and joined an escape committee which was a
particularly dangerous operation for a Jew. Conducted several successful escapes, but had to suffer
through several thorough and lengthy searches of the camp by the Gestapo. Moved again
to a large camp where there were "officially escaped" British who remained hidden in the camp
awaiting a safe opportunity to get out. Due to informers the Germans were aware of these
persons, but only very rarely able to capture one of them. Rubenstein and another escaped
themselves, but were recaptured and sent to a concentration camp in Czechoslovakia where on
May 5, 1945 they were released by partisans. The American army arrived shortly after that and
some of the German guards were shot out of hand. Back in England on May 13, 1945 after five
years a prisoner of war. (40:00)
Capt. George Edward Moodie Ruffee, M.C.

Royal Canadian Artillery

Record ID: 00000128
Ruffee, George Edward Moodie, Capt., M.C., 1922-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by George Edward Moodie Ruffee ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
2 sound cassettes (ca. 105 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 105 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 28, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Feb. 3, 1922 in Wolfville, N.S. His family was of a military bent, father serving in both World Wars and in the militia between. He joined the King's Canadian Hussars (armoured car), a militia regiment, at the age of fifteen as a bugler, then became a boy soldier at Camp Aldershot, N.S. Discusses militia training, uniforms, etc. The regiment was called up on Aug. 29, 1939 and immediately began guard duty in the Annapolis Valley. The unit was demobilized in Dec. and eventually converted to an artillery unit in May 1941: the 87/88th Field Battery, R.C.A. As a second lieutenant he proceeded overseas in Sept. 1942 after training at Camp Borden and Petawawa. Posted to 34 Battery, 14th Field Regiment, R.C.A. of the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Defense of the south coast of England. Describes Exercise Spartan, an international affair of considerable value. Firing, deploying the guns, and combined operations in Scotland where they first mounted guns in landing craft. Taught to fire in a rolling ship. He trained with commandos who were originally slated to land in France from a submarine, but later appreciation of the beach defenses cancelled that operation. Finally they were issued with 105-mm. self-propelled guns (Priests) for which gunners and drivers had to be retrained. Vehicle accidents. Waterproofing vehicles. (35:00) In June 1944 they boarded their landing craft, tank and remained there in very crowded conditions for five days. Sailed on June 5, 1944, a tremendous sight. Went into action in support of the infantry landing on the beach, then pulled off, to land at about 9:00 a.m. Heavy traffic congestion. Inland three of the Priests and the command post tank were hit by a German 88mm. gun which fired only four rounds. Heavy fighting: at one time the Germans were on three sides. Re-issued with twenty-five-pounders. The unit was bombed by our own Air Force, wagon lines seriously damaged, but no casualties. The Polish Armoured Division was not so lucky. In action at Boulogne, Cape Gris Nez, and the Seine. Moved into Belgium where considerable fighting occurred. (20:00) Nijmegen. Incident at the observation post. Holland, Germany, crossed the Rhine, Hochwald Forest. Personally found zombies (N.R.M.A. men) well trained and useful. In Emden at the end of the war. Anecdote about a gun position and the capture of a large number of German prisoners. Returned to Canada. University where he took a M.A. in history. Rejoined the army. 1st Light Battery (Para), R.C.A. Joined 81st Field Regiment as a captain. Korea. (45:00) Heavy Chinese attack on May 2/3, 1953. Brought fire down on his own position more than once. Many casualties on both sides. Awarded the Military Cross. Upon return to Canada contracted polio, but was able to stay in the Army as a personnel officer. Directorate of ceremonials, National Defence Headquarters. Staff officer at NORAD, Tacoma, Wash. Retired. Employed by the provincial government. (15:00)
Hon. Capt. (Most Rev. Bishop) Robert Lowder Seaborn

Canadian Chaplain Service

The Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000129
Seaborn, Robert Lowder, Hon. Capt., Most Rev. Bp., 1911-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Lowder Seaborn ; interviewed by
Cameron Falconer
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 23, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born the son of an Anglican priest on July 9, 1911 in Toronto. Took a degree in classics at the
University of Toronto, followed by Divinity School in 1932. Worked in various parishes,
including the Anglican Cathedral in Toronto. After a year as incumbent at Cobourg, Ont. he
joined the Army in 1942 when a new battalion of the Queen's Own Rifles was raised. Posted to
Debert, N.S. for training and in spring 1943 posted overseas. Shortly thereafter appointed padre
to The Canadian Scottish Regiment. Explains some of his duties: the moral and spiritual well-
being of the regiment. Much time spent in getting to know the men during their training.
Participated in route marches. Gave straightforward services of about thirty minutes. Learned
first aid. Padre was expected to know how to participate in assault landings. Landed on D-Day
armed with a haversack full of first-aid supplies. Returns to an account of his duties which
included much of what would now be called social work. When he first joined The Canadian
Scottish Regiment he felt that he was greeted with caution as an easterner in a British Columbia
unit, but after a couple of months he found himself fully accepted. Held a service in each landing
craft carrying the unit to France and a short prayer in the assault craft taking them to the beach.
Landed with B Company accompanied by two medical orderlies. Helped with the wounded, then
moved inland to rejoin the battalion. During battle he always stationed himself at the regimental
aid post where he was able to be of assistance and to encourage the wounded. Sometimes he
brought wounded to the R.A.P. in his jeep. First burials were undertaken with the assistance of a
French horse and cart and the sergeant from the officer's mess. Spent a good part of the first two
weeks burying the dead; a tough job. Had to write letters to next of kin which was very difficult.
If he could not contact a Roman Catholic padre he would say the appropriate prayer for the dead
of that faith. Finding bodies sometimes difficult; always attempted to pinpoint the graves so that
they would not become lost. By autumn the unit was very tired and he wrote a report on morale
that was not gladly received at Corps Headquarters; as a result he was nearly removed from the
regiment. Always held Sunday services. Explains his ideas on faith and how to put it across to
the troops. Anecdote about a certain company sergeant-major encouraging his men to attend
services. The day the war ended he asked a German Lutheran pastor for the use of his church for
a thanksgiving service. Refers to a book by Lord Moran (Churchill's physician) on courage.
Anecdotes about Falaise, his batman, and the crossing of the Seine during which he, his driver, and jeep were the last of the unit to cross and the only ones to be dunked. (45:00)

Wing Commander Thomas Sehl

Royal Flying Corps/Royal Air Force

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000130
Sehl, Thomas, W/C, 1899-198-?
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Thomas Sehl ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassette (ca. 110 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca.110 min.) : standard momo. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 22, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Both parents were born in Victoria in the early 1870's followed by Thomas Sehl in 1899. Educated in parochial schools in Victoria and Portland, Ore. Joined the Royal Flying Corps through their recruiting office on Government St. in July 1917. Three weeks of basic training followed at Long Branch, Ont., then the School of Military Aeronautics at the University of Toronto. (15:00) In fall 1917 he went to the flight school at Deseronto, Ont. where the class was instructed in Curtiss JN- 4 training aircraft; after five hours of instruction they were expected to fly solo. Did not control the effect of engine torque on his second solo flight and crashed on take-off. Overseas in Jan. 1918 as a second lieutenant. After advanced flying training at Uphaven he received his wings (35:00). Describes life in England. Flew the de Havilland 5 (DH-5 trainer) which he did not like and the Sopwith Camel (fighter) which he did. The latter was a very sensitive aircraft to fly and required a light hand at the controls. (45:00) Advanced flying courses, ferried aircraft in England, and one to France. In France he was posted to No. 203 Squadron commanded by Raymond Collishaw. First engaged in attacking German artillery-spotting aircraft which were located by early radio direction-finding sets. Recounts flying experiences; his aircraft was holed by enemy action on fourteen different occasions. One enemy aircraft confirmed as shot down. Posted to No. 201 Squadron. Considerable ground strafing which was so hard on aircraft and pilots due to vigorous enemy action that it had to be stopped for a while. Comments that he did not notice any particular slackening of the German air war as the Germans retreated toward the end. (46:00)

(Side 2) The Fokker D VII fighter aircraft was very effective against Allied machines. Offers personal thoughts on aerial fighting. Part of the army of occupation. (10:00) Returned to Canada and was demobilized. After approaching the Air Ministry early in 1939 regarding his status if war came he joined the R.C.A.F. in 1939 as a flying officer, rising to the rank of wing commander. (20:00)
Capt. Colin H.P. Shaw

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000131
Shaw, Colin, H.P., Capt., 1925-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Colin H.P. Shaw ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 27 and Aug. 22, 1978, Victoria

(Side 1) Born on Apr. 8, 1925 in Portsmouth, England. Came from a Royal Navy family.
Attended Westminster Abbey Choir School for four years and sang at the Coronation of George
VI. In 1940 he was sent to Ottawa, Ont. to finish his schooling (Lisgar Collegiate). In Sept. 1942
entered the Royal Canadian Naval College, H.M.C.S. Royal Roads as a member of the junior
term. Both terms lived in the "Castle". Capt. John Grant was a firm, strict, disciplinarian (20:00).
Heavy course load: about a dozen academic and naval courses, compulsory sports. Rose at 6:30
A.M., lights out at 9:30 P.M., with little free time available. Discusses leave "ashore", pocket
money, fees of $250 per annum paid by parents, occasional cruise. Finished training in 1944,
disappointed that the class missed D-Day. Promoted to midshipman. Explains that permanent
force officer training proceeded almost without any influence being exerted by the war. About
half the class went to H.M.C.S. Uganda (cruiser), but he was sent to England in Aug. 1944. An
aside here about the unification of the Canadian Forces. Minimum effect upon him. In England
appointed to H.M.S. Norfolk (cruiser), but as she was in refit he served for two months in motor
torpedo boats on east coast convoys. Returned to H.M.S. Norfolk which patrolled the Norwegian
coast. Liberation force at Bergen, Norway. Returned the King and Queen of Norway to Oslo in
June 1945. Explains some duties of midshipmen. Spent six months in minesweepers in the Far
East. standard promotion pattern. In 1947, as a lieutenant, he returned to the R.C.N. By 1948
began to show some changes from the Royal Navy method of organization. Comments on the
expansion of the R.C.N. at the time of the Korean War. (45:00)

(Side 2) Appointed to H.M.C.S. Micmac (Tribal class destroyer), but almost immediately a
collision at sea put her in dry dock. Posted to H.M.C.S. Warrior (light fleet carrier) where he
obtained his carrier watchkeeping ticket. In due course H.M.C.S. Warrior, which was not
winterized was exchanged for another carrier, H.M.C.S. Magnificent. In their day the carriers
were effective anti-submarine vessels, but perhaps not so much so today as new weapons and
technology come into service. (25:00) Appointed a squadron commander at the Royal Military
College, Kingston. Feels that the course now, with more emphasis on academics, might turn out
better future senior officers, but to the detriment of the "man management" side which was an
extremely beneficial facet of the midshipman's experience. (35:00) Air operation control course
in England. Posted to H.M.C.S. Shearwater (naval air station) as an air controller. Comments on
present day manning situation and the responsibilities of officers and men. (45:00) Posted to
H.M.C.S. Algonquin (destroyer) in the reactivated 1st Canadian Escort Squadron. Lieutenant commander in the navigation directorate in Ottawa. Changing role of maritime forces; problematic economy of keeping old ships operational. Canadian Joint Staff in Washington, D.C. (30:00) Excellent Canadian-American relationship. Appointed captain of H.M.C.S. Lanark (frigate). Advantages of having a good executive officer. First command is always a special case. Later commanded larger vessels. General comment on satisfactory naval career. Integration and unification took up a great deal of time and work. Personally felt able to reduce the emotionalism factor which was prevalent. (48:00)

Maj. Ronald Gendall Shawcross

Regina Rifle Regiment

Record ID: 00000132
Shawcross, Ronald Gendall, Maj., 1916-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ronald Gendall Shawcross ; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 14 and 19, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Feb. 4, 1916 in Regina, Sask. and educated in that city. Joined the Regina Rifle Regiment (militia) in 1936. General comments on militia life, training, etc. A corporal in 1938 and was asked to become an officer. Second lieutenant in 1939 when war declared. Regiment mobilized in 1940 at Dundurn, Sask. Qualified as a lieutenant, moved to Debert, N.S. (15:00) Overseas in 1941 as part of the 7th Infantry Brigade, 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Impressions of England. (30:00) Heavy training schedule, new weapons introduced. Mentions the Boyes anti-tank rifle: useless against tanks, but he found them very accurate and thinks they might have been useful against snipers. Assault training in Scotland. Attached to a British commando unit at Fort William. Organized a training school when he returned to the regiment. (45:00) Promoted to captain in 1943. Describes pre-D-Day concentration areas in southern England. Boarded cross-channel steamer at Southampton. Both officers and men of the assault troops carried a rifle and small packs with bare necessities (e.g. no blankets). From their landing craft, assault they had to cross two hundred yards of Juno Beach under heavy fire. Twenty-eight out of 140 men of "A" Company, now under his command, reached the protection of the seawall. (30:00) Discusses the German soldier: probably the S.S. were better than the average soldier of any army in Normandy. They slowly moved inland; heavy tank attacks, German mortar, and machine-gun fire particularly effective. Carpiquet Airport, Caen. (46:00)

(Side 2) Crossing the Orne. Allied air-ground co-operation resulted in a very effective anti-tank role. Best of all was the German 88-mm. gun. (Interview 2 begins.) Constant shortage of reinforcements. Company had a maximum of one hundred men, most often between sixty and
eighty strong. Those left out of battle contributed to the shortage. Reinforcements were sometimes poorly trained. Comments again on the quality of the German troops and that some Canadian reinforcements lacked experience and skill. Falaise. Sherman tanks had many faults. So many prisoners that they were sent to the rear without an escort. Quesnay Wood. (20:00) Inexperienced American troops at Elbeuf. Crossed the Seine. In his opinion, line of attack by infantry as sometimes laid down was too rigid. No complaints about conscript reinforcements. Cape Gris Nez, Calais, (35:00) where the Germans well dug in. Injured by a shelled collapsing house. (45:00) Had to be evacuated two or three days later. Two months of excellent care in Army hospitals before returning to the regiment. Canadian attitude while waiting for the war to end. German troops of good morale. Comments that prairie soldiers seemed more resourceful than some from other parts of Canada. (12:00) Life in Holland immediately after the war. Dutch resistance forces. Repatriated in July 1945. Considerable welcome in Canada for the early arrivals. Posted to Durnden Camp; discovered that he had a broken back which is still a constant problem. Returned to his job at Simpson's. Toyed with the militia, but nothing serious. (25:00) Enjoyed his army service, learned a great deal. Canadian army today (1985) short of men and equipment, particularly the militia, therefore probably not very effective. (31:00)

Lieut. Earl Herbert Sheppard

Three Rivers Regiment

Record ID: 00000133
Sheppard, Earl Herbert, Lt., 1916-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Earl Herbert Sheppard ; interviewed by Tom Torrie
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 25, 1987, Victoria, B.C.

Born on June 17, 1916 in Saskatchewan. Father a veteran of the Boer War. Joined the militia at Durnen, Sask. in 1939; had to buy his own overalls to begin training. Went "active". Sent on a gas warfare course which, fortunately, was never required. Very aware of the lack of modern weapons. Sent to the O.C.T.U. at Brockville, then to Camp Borden where armoured training began. Overseas. Living conditions. Posted to the Three Rivers Regiment of the 1st Army Tank Brigade. Trained on Churchill tanks which he does not regard very highly. In 1943 issued with the reliable Sherman tank. Sailed for Sicily, living aboard a landing craft, tank for about a month.
Algiers. Experiences in Sicily and Italy. Returned to England to prepare tanks for the invasion of Europe. Landed a week after D-Day. Served until Ghent, Belgium was reached (does not state his unit). Returned to England as an expert in servicing and loading tanks in landing craft. Slated for a post in Australia which did not materialize. Comments on a day in the life of a tank subaltern in action; orders, tactics, "point troop" which was a dangerous job. Shermans, while reliable, "brewed up" too easily. German prisoners praised the Canadian infantry; not so
impressed with our tanks. Back in Canada he was offered a position with the Armoured Corps at Camp Gagetown, but decided to leave the Army in 1945. (45:00)

Cdr. Robert Allen Shimmin

Royal Canadian Navy

Record ID: 00000134
Shimmin, Robert Allen, Cdr., 1924-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Allen Shimmin ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 180 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 180 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 24 and June 1, 1979.

Born on June 20, 1924 in Vancouver and educated in that city. In 1942 he became a member of the first senior term at Royal Canadian Naval College, H.M.C.S. Royal Roads. Went overseas in 1943 as a midshipman to serve with the Royal Navy at Scapa Flow. The account returns to the regime at Royal Roads, discipline, academics, etc. (15:00) At Scapa he joined H.M.S. Jamaica (Colony class cruiser) which was engaged in protecting convoys to Murmansk. Royal Navy clothing was not, in his opinion, fully adequate for Arctic operations. Feels that formal training for midshipmen was a little skimpy due to the war, but operational experience very valuable. Enemy activity largely consisted of aircraft attacks during the long daylight hours of summer and attacks by surface vessels during the darkness of winter. Enemy submarines were more interested in attacking merchantmen than naval vessels such as his. The heavier convoy defenses, usually three cruisers supported by a battleship, were somewhat remote from the convoy itself in order to intercept German surface ships, the Scharnhorst (battleship) in particular. He was present at the sinking of the Scharnhorst during which the Jamaica was in action and, near the end, delivered a torpedo attack at a range of about eighteen hundred yards. (45:00) The next day the whole ship's company suffered from stiff ankles produced by the constant shocks to the hull by much firing of their main armament. Comments on the lack of icing on the ships, but the real danger was the effect of the freezing water on humans who were unfortunate enough to be in it. In winter 1945 he was posted to destroyers on the east coast of England. (15:00) Sub-lieutenants' courses. Volunteered for the Fleet Air Arm. Returned to Canada. In Feb. 1946 began flying training with the Royal Air Force. Graduated to North American Harvard trainers which were excellent: they had all the drawbacks of more powerful aircraft, but not so harshly obvious. Awarded wings in 1947. (38:00)

(Side 2) Returns to his wartime service in H.M.S. Jamaica: near disaster off Iceland due to instability in rough seas. Again much damage to the ship off Norway due to heavy winds. Comments on the equipment of the Royal Navy. Much of it was antiquated, perhaps due to a lack of interwar development. Fire control certainly not as good as it should have been. During
his flying training his course was split between fighter pilots (which he was) and anti-submarine pilots. (25:00) Describes progressively larger single-engine aircraft which he flew. While training he was not impressed with English cooking and what he felt was a lack of weapon training at the Operational Flying School. (45:00) Finally he was trained in deck-landing on an aircraft carrier. Flew Fireflies (fighters) aboard H.M.C.S. Magnificent (carrier). Cruises to the Caribbean. Served for a year in H.M.C.S. Micmac (Tribal class destroyer). Returned to No. 870 Squadron, Hawker Sea Fury (fighters). The Air Arm obtained the excellent Grumman Avenger for anti-submarine aircraft. In his opinion, during the period 1950-1955 the R.C.N. reached its peak of efficiency airwise and perhaps in the skill and technical knowledge available. He began to conclude that anti-submarine warfare was essentially a losing battle, especially against missile-equipped boats. Discusses the practicality of using the Canadian forces to open the Canadian North. (35:00) Canadian Coast Guard should be a paramilitary force. Unification destroyed much at the behest of one man with a somewhat impractical idea about economy and efficiency which were not achieved. Left the navy when his flying days were over. No interest in a "desk job". (47:00)

Master Warrant Officer (W.O. II) Robert John Simpson

8th Reconnaissance Regiment (14th Canadian Hussars)

Lord Strathcona's Horse (Royal Canadians)

Record ID: 00000135
Simpson, Robert John, M.W.O. (W.O. II), 1924-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Robert John Simpson ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 9, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Sept. 4, 1924 at Elbow, Sask. Joined the 16/22 Saskatchewan Horse in 1940, but sent home until 1941 when he talked his way into the active Army (age sixteen) at North Battleford. Sent to Kitchener, Ont. for basic training, then to Camp Borden for armoured training (as a driver). Overseas in 1942 as a reinforcement.Posted to the 8th Reconnaissance Regiment of the 2nd Canadian Infantry Division. Discusses the reconnaissance role and equipment used. He was returned to the reinforcement unit and remained there as a driver until he became of age to go to Normandy (nineteen years). Rejoined his old unit which had been serving for a time as infantry. Their armoured cars were returned to them after the Seine was crossed. (30:00) Recapture of Dieppe. Anecdot about capture of prisoners of war in Holland. Relations with civilians in occupied countries, collaborators, etc. Returned to England, then to discharge in Canada. Re-enlisted in Feb. 1946 in Lord Strathcona's Horse which at that time consisted only of "A" Squadron and a Headquarters. (45:00) Comments on Centurian and Sherman tanks. Employed as technical sergeant in Headquarters Squadron. Sergeants' mess at Calgary was a very comfortable,
if formal, organization. Returns to a general discussion of several main battle tanks. (10:00) Staff sergeant in the 1960s. Posted to Germany. After an illness returned to Canada to the training staff. Banff Cadet Camp for three summers. Decided to retire after twenty-seven years of service, coincidently at the start of integration process. Some comments on Maj.-Gen. F.F. Worthington, the "father" of Canadian armour. (30:00) General remarks, pictures, etc. for the final fifteen minutes of the tape. (45:00)

Lt.-Col. Hershell A. Smith, D.S.O., M.C.

The Ontario Regiment (11th Armoured Regiment)

The Canadian Grenadier Guards (22nd Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000187
Smith, Hershell A., Lt.-Col., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Hershell A. Smith ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 150 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 150 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with Lt.-Col. Smith. Reel includes 74 min. of interviews conducted by Chris Bell, Sept. 2, 1982 and Aug. 30, 1983, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 7, 1981, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000188
Smith, Hershell A., Lt.-Col., 1920-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Hershell A. Smith ; interviewed by Chris Bell
1 sound cassettes (ca. 74 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 74 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds an additional interview with Lt.-Col. Smith. Reel includes a 150-min. interview conducted by Dr. Reginald H. Roy, July 7, 1981, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 2, 1982 and Aug. 30, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by R. H. Roy) Born on Jan. 21, 1920 in Dauphin, Man. Attended Royal Military College in 1937, graduating after two and one-half years (due to the outbreak of war). Comments on his instructors, including the future Lt.-Gen. Guy Simonds. Posted to the Canadian Armoured Fighting Vehicles School at Camp Borden in Jan. 1940. Transferred to the Ontario Regiment in June 1940. Admires Maj.-Gen. Worthington and regrets that he was not allowed to lead armour in battle. Overseas in 1941, 1st Armoured Brigade. Churchill tanks issued; badly undergunned. Comments on British/German tanks. Issued with Sherman tanks about two months before the invasion of Sicily. In the meantime sent to North Africa to the 17th/21st Lancers of the 6th Armoured Division (British) to obtain some battle experience.
Anecdote of infantry night patrol. Returned to Britain, sailed for Sicily in landing ship, tank. Modest action in Sicily. Invaded Italy; in action around Ortona in support of the Royal 22nd Regiment. Awarded Military Cross. One of several battle-experienced officers sent from Italy to join armoured units preparing to invade Normandy. Joined the Canadian Grenadier Guards (22nd Armoured Regiment), commanded by Lt.-Col. W.W. Halpenny, as part of the 4th Armoured Brigade, 4th Armoured Division. Promoted to major and squadron commander. Operation Totalize, Aug. 8, 1944. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2, interviewed by C. Bell) Landed in Normandy in late July 1944. First fighting patrol. As war progressed they gradually obtained diesel-powered tanks; much better propulsion units. Unfortunately still lightly armoured. Explains the confusion of battle. Thinks that armour was not properly used in Normandy; too often in piecemeal fashion. Best attack is a heavy one and pushed on to the farthest extreme. Night attacks can be very effective, best about one and one-half hours before daylight. Personalities. Maj.-Gen. George Kitching perhaps did not have an entirely fair deal: perhaps not familiar enough with some of his senior officers; no chance for a proper shakedown of his division. Kitching lost touch with the action through faulty brigade organization. Recalls a battle in Italy. Canadians lacked inspired leadership, often failing to exploit favourable situations in battle. Remarks; Halpenny, Booth, Kitching. Tactical situations. (45:00) Hill 195. Rescued lost tank. Excellent system for replacing battle casualties, both tanks and crews. Operation Tractable; ideal method of armoured attack, a heavy blow. Almost immediately confusion developed within the attack due to heavy dust, created by both A.F.V.'s (armoured fighting vehicles and aerial bombardment. In his opinion they obtained a clear breakthrough of the German defences, but were not allowed to proceed beyond their immediate objective. This allowed the Germans to reorganize. Describes duel with German anti-tank gun. Bombed by the U.S. Air Force; near-miss by a 500 lb. bomb. (30:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Points out that war from a tank provided a very limited view of the surrounding world. After Falaise, pursuit. Wounded in the mouth just outside Abbeville; night movement, confusion, anti-tank fire; treated by German medical officer (prisoner); nearly captured. Later wound in face properly sewn up; returned to unit in two or three days. Considerable fighting in Belgium. Personally captured a number of Germans. Belgian civilians. Appointed commanding officer of the regiment in Dec. 1944. During an attack at the Hochwald (near Udem) his tank hit by shellfire, blew up, shattered his leg, but managed to scramble out of the tank, applied tourniquet with lace from other boot. Hospital. Evacuated by air to No. 1 Canadian General Hospital where he remained until the end of the war. In Canada, a member of the war amputees organization who talked to him in the Canadian Hospital train impressed upon him the value of an artificial leg which was later fitted at Deer Lodge Hospital, Winnipeg. Describes process of fitting the wooden leg. (45:00) Discusses the regular use of his bicycle every day; in fact has ridden 63,000 miles to date (1983). Philosophy of bicycle exercise. (14:00)

Rear Admiral Michael Grote Stirling
Royal Canadian Navy
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on June 29, 1915, Stirling joined the R.C.N. in 1933 by direct entry from Shawnigan Lake School, Vancouver Island. Joined H.M.S. Frobisher (training cruiser) in England. Explains routine. Cruises to the Mediterranean, Caribbean, and Baltic Seas. Final examinations established seniority in rank. Process of selecting naval specialty. Joined H.M.S. Sussex (cruisers) as a midshipman. Describes uniform and duties which sometimes required careful and discreet handling. (45:00) Gunroom life aboard Sussex. Details and extreme care of ship when they transported the Duke of Gloucester to Australia. Remained in Australia for a year. As a descendent of the first governor of western Australia, Midshipman Stirling took part in centennial celebrations. New Zealand. Civil Administration of South Pacific Islands. Suez Canal Zone; ship uncomfortably hot. Ethiopian War in progress. Haifa, Palestine where he served ashore in an armoured train. Participated in the neutrality patrol off the Spanish coast during the Civil War. Feels that the Canadian government would not have approved had they known. (40:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Anecdote, contraband runners. Describes sub-lieutenant's courses at Greenwich, including busy social life. Joined his first Canadian ship, H.M.C.S. Skeena (destroyer), then visiting Acapulco, Mex., under the command of Capt. V.G. Brodeur. Became navigating officer and, for a time, gunnery officer. Comments on the small prewar Navy and the friends he made from all ranks. Gives an account of the Royal Visit of 1939, training, drill, receiving new colours, marching from Beacon Hill Park to H.M.C.S. Naden where the colour was trooped for the first time. Ordered to Halifax just before the war. Appointed to H.M.C.S. St. Laurent (destroyer); first wartime convoy from Halifax. Became first lieutenant (1940) in H.M.C.S. Assiniboine (destroyer). Posted to the long signals course at Portsmouth, Eng., then in H.M.S. Victory where the original Victory was still flagship. Heavy courses in visual and wireless communications. In Aug. 1941 moved to a large country house which became H.M.S. Mercury (training school). (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Appointed to the destroyer, H.M.S. Onslow of the Home Fleet. Terrible weather north of Scapa Flow, Iceland, etc. Participated in one convoy to Murmansk. Commando raid to Vargso and Maloy in Norway. Posted to Naval Headquarters, Ottawa in 1942. Signals staff officer in Halifax in 1943. Problems of teaching old signal hands new tricks! To Londonderry (1945) to command H.M.C.S. St. Laurent. Almost immediately into refit. Appointed to command H.M.C.S. Crusader, then building on the Clyde. Critical of Canadian government for asking the Canadian forces to volunteer for the war against Japan. Quite unnecessary political interference, in his opinion. Crusader payed off. First lieutenant of H.M.C.S. Naden and then of H.M.C.S. Stadacona (shore bases). Captain of H.M.C.S. Nootka II for a few months. Problems
with the gearing of the new Tribal class destroyers then building. Appointed communications officer with the Canadian/U.S. Joint Staff in Washington. Promoted to commander in Jan. 1949, Director of Naval Communications in Ottawa. (48:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Duties and experiences. Executive officer in H.M.C.S. Ontario (cruiser). Visits by royal personages. Discipline and powers of punishment. Day-to-day administration of the ship required constant inspection of most compartments of the ship. (45:00) Heavy use as a training ship. Cruised around South America. First visit of a Canadian naval vessel to Buenos Aires. President Peron visits. Crew exhausted by the necessity of keeping ship immaculate and the constant round of social functions. Promoted to SACLANT (Supreme Allied Command, Atlantic) at Norfolk, Va.
(Reel 3, Side 1) Relations with N.A.T.O. countries. After two years, in command of H.M.C.S. Cornwallis (new-entry training base), then to the west coast in command of the 2nd Canadian Escort Squadron, in the destroyer H.M.C.S. Crescent. Cruise to the Far East with five destroyers. Long cruises essential for effective training purposes. (45:00) Naval member of directing Staff at National Defence College, Kingston. Valuable input from the civil service. Tours to Europe. Promoted to commodore, in H.M.C.S. Bonaventure (light fleet carrier). Comments on aircraft and anti-submarine exercises. Chief of Naval Personnel as a rear admiral. Details of cost of Bonaventure refit. Greatly concerned with retaining trained men in the navy; wives were always a problem, particularly if spouses married when rather young. (50:00)

(Reel 3, Side 2) Personnel was a very taxing business, often due to the lack of qualified people. The Promotion Board was a difficult task. Navy could not believe the fact of integration. Prime Minister did not interfere with Paul Hellyer's approach. Appointed Maritime Commander, Pacific. Hellyer probably achieved his ends by confusing his opposition and, for the navy in particular, by its lack of an effective political power base. Describes his resignation over the unification issue. Worked for the University of Victoria Foundation. Asked by W.A.C. Bennett to be Agent-General for British Columbia in London, Eng. Describes work and conditions of appointment. Good relations with Premier David Barrett. Held appointment for more than six years. Retired at own request upon reaching sixty years of age. (47:00)

Col. James Riley Stone, D.S.O., M.C.
The Loyal Edmonton Regiment
Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry
Canadian Provost Corps

Record ID: 00000198
Stone, James Riley, Col., D.S.O., M.C., 1908-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by James Riley Stone ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
5 sound cassettes (ca. 390 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives. Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews. Three original sound tape reels (ca. 390 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. Recorded on original sound tape reels May 13, 20, June 3, 10, and 17, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Aug. 2, 1908 in England. Emigrated to Canada and was employed by the Alberta Forestry Dept. when war broke out in 1939. Joined the Edmonton Regiment at Grand Prairie. Promoted to corporal, sent to England on a small arms course. Sergeant, Apr. 1940. As a company sergeant major he participated in the raid on Spitzbergen. Officer training in Oct. 1941. Ship loading course, posted away from regiment, later to rejoin them unofficially after "jumping ship" during the Sicily landings in 1943. Anecdote. Account of the terrain and fighting in Italy which exhausted the troops. Down with dysentery and malaria near Campo Basso. Describes difficult movement through mountainous country against skillful rear guard actions by the enemy. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) The unit suffered very heavy casualties in the battle for Ortona. Personally captured enemy anti-tank gun. Textbook street fighting, highly developed "mouseholing" through the walls of buildings. Awarded Military Cross. His company reduced to seventeen men when the town fell. Admired the German troops; first class discipline and fighting skills. Costly war of attrition, better to outflank towns wherever possible. "Winter of discontent", boredom, troops became stale and lacked aggressive spirit. Describes a fighting patrol. British senior officers school. (45:00) Unit withdrawn for reorganization. Returned to battle near the Arno River/Florence area. Gothic Line battles. Battle training. Realized that Canadians could fight a "professional battle". Rest on the Adriatic. Canadian reinforcements not well trained. San Fortunato Ridge. Awarded the Companion of the Distinguished Service Order for efforts in breaching the Gothic Line. Broke out into the valley of the Po River. (47:00)


(Reel 2, Side 2) Pacific Force, new Loyal Edmonton Regiment which was soon disbanded. Left the army in May 1946. Built and ran a resort at Shuswap Lake, B.C. Commanded the Rocky Mountain Rangers (militia). Offered command of Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry when Korean War began. Started training in Canada, continued at Fort Lewis, Wash. and moved to Korea before training finished. In accordance with his instruction by the Canadian government, he insisted that the battalion continue training until he was satisfied. Joined a British brigade in due course. Came down with what he claims was the last recorded case of smallpox in the British forces! Kap'yong battle described, awarded United States Presidential Unit Citation. Some interesting small operations in a very uncomfortable war which contained none of the intensity of Italy. Unit withdrawn. Flew back to Canada to organize a parachute battalion. Great
admirer of the American military, although perhaps not as good in withdrawal as in offence. Marine Corps excellent. Feels that two wars (Korea and Vietnam), unpopular with the American public, have had an effect on U.S. military morale. Parachute training. Developed dehydrated rations. (45:00)

(Reel 3) Commanded the Canadians at the Coronation Parade, 1953. Chief instructor, school of infantry. Appointed Provost Marshal for the Canadian army. In four years changed the Provost image. Soldiers first, police second. Established a fund in the military police for "comforts" for blind children. Later as Deputy Commissioner of Penitentiaries (1960-1973) did much to reform the penitentiary system. (25:00)

Rear-Admiral Anthony H.G. Storrs
Chinese Maritime Customs
Royal Canadian Naval Reserve
Royal Canadian Navy
Canadian Coast Guard

Record ID: 00000199
Storrs, Anthony H.G., R.-Adm., 1907-
My Navy recollections [sound recording] / by Anthony H.G. Storrs ; interviewed by Chris Bell
5 sound cassettes (ca. 405 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 405 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Sept. 9, 16, 1982, June 13, July 8, and Aug. 30, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

RESTRICION REPRODUCTION AND PUBLICATION

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born in Apr. 1907 in England. Although his parents lived in Rhodesia, he was educated in England. In 1925 he joined H.M.S. Worcester, the merchant navy training ship, under the auspices of the P&O Line. As a cadet he spent two years in Worcester, then three years at sea, choosing to join a square-rigged sailing vessel. This offered tremendous physical and emotional tasks under hard conditions. Returned to the P&O Line after the vessel was sold for scrap in Belgium. On the China "run" ca. 1930 when he decided to leave the merchant navy. Offered a position in the Chinese Maritime Customs. Ships of that service were primarily used against smugglers. Spent five years in Amoy, eventually commanding a ship armed with a six-pounder gun and machine guns. An occasionally dangerous, but generally a not unfriendly war against smugglers. Stationed at Foochow during the Sino-Japanese war (1939), eventually
escaping the advancing Japanese army in a friendly blockade runner. Made his way to Canada where he joined the Navy.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Commanded H.M.C.S. Armentieres (minesweeper). In 1941 commanded H.M.C.S. Dawson (corvette), committed to west coast patrols and in Alaskan waters, under American command, for a year. Offers some details of the Aleutian campaign. In May 1943 joined H.M.C.S. Gatineau (destroyer) in the Atlantic. Royal Navy anti-submarine school. Main problem in the Atlantic war was fatigue. Comments on naval attitudes toward aviation. Canadian navy seemed remiss in their lack of tactical training before 1943. Describes attempts by Canadians to obtain late model British radar sets. Became convinced that it was vital for captains to obtain enough sleep, otherwise could not be alert for battle with the enemy. Attitudes of the regular and reserve navy. (65:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Comments on relief captains. Tactical school, acoustic torpedo, convoy support groups. Describes a submarine action, poor quality Canadian radar. As a lieutenant-commander was captain of H.M.C.S. Caraquet (minesweeper) and appointed senior officer of two Canadian minesweeping groups required to participate in the D-Day landings in Normandy. Partly due to inefficient minesweeping gear only one group undertook sweeping and marking channels for landing craft. Operated off Omaha Beach (United States landings) where cross tides made sweeping difficult. Despite chart problems they swept to within one thousand yards of the shore. Had excellent view of the invasion. By March 1945 was undertaking routine sweeping of the English Channel. In August returned to Canada, appointed to H.M.C.S. Antigonish (frigate) and joined the Royal Canadian Navy as a commander. Staff position in Ottawa. Commanded H.M.C.S. Nootka (destroyer). Discusses "mutinies" in 1949 and Mainguy Report. On the staff of the National Defence College with a somewhat difficult commandant in Lt.-Gen. Guy Simonds. Promoted to captain, director of plans. The role of Canadian naval aviation. (45:00) Appointed captain of H.M.C.S. Magnificent (light fleet carrier) in 1955. Naval Headquarters. Commandant of the National Defence College, as a rear-admiral. Much travel and entertaining of visitors. (43:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Retired, then employed by the federal government to reorganize the hydrographic service. As director of marine operations for the Dept. of Transport he managed the Canadian Coast Guard for nine years. Comments on search and rescue operations. New equipment: hovercraft, helicopters, ships. Arctic sovereignty discussed, especially U.S./Canadian points of view. U.S. tanker Manhattan. (45:00) Icebreakers of great importance,. Must be aware of situations that might have political connotations. Coast Guard College started in a former naval base. Was consultant to Iran on coast guard matters. Favourable opinion of the Shah; much of his former good work now lost. Impressions of Israelis and Moslems. (45:00)

Flight Lieut. S. Lloyd Swanton
Royal Canadian Air Force

Royal Air Force
Record ID: 00000137
Swanton, S. Lloyd, F/L, 1918-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by S. Lloyd Swanton ; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
1 sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 40 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
See also Swanton's account of Berlin Airlift and pictures on file in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 9, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

Swanton, born on Jan. 21, 1918 in St. Thomas, Ont. Graduated from high school in 1936, trained in a commercial radio school. In Nov. 1939 he joined the R.C.A.F. as a ground radio operator. Manning pool in Toronto. No. 1 Wireless School in Montreal. Took a number of radio courses before being posted to the radio station at Rockcliffe. In 1943, as a sergeant, transferred to No. 4 Wireless School at Guelph. Transferred to air-crew. Because of previous experience was required to take only a shortened course. Graduated in 1944, commissioned as a pilot officer. Posted to R.A.F. Landing Transport Group at Dorval airport. Part of a crew that ferried a large variety of aircraft in Canada and to Europe via Africa. (30:00) Very large base at Dorval: about two thousand air crew of all nationalities, including many civilians. Last trip to Europe in June 1945, discharged in July. Asked to join the Interim air force as a flight sergeant. In 1946, as part of a general rank reduction plan, he became a sergeant. (45:00) Received an offer of a short-term commission of four years from the R.A.F. Joined transport command and initially worked with British airborne troops. Converted to new Handley Page Hastings transports and, in No. 53 Squadron, R.A.F., supplied Berlin in the 1948 Airlift. Aircraft carried ten tons of coal to Gatow airport, was unloaded and swept out in twenty minutes. Sixty-four sorties in total. Accurate navigation required as planes flew at three-minute intervals. Transferred to No. 47 Squadron. Flew to the Far East and to southern Africa. Anecdotes of flights to the Far East and of a serious air crash. In Nov. 1951 he rejoined the R.C.A.F. in the Air Observer Corps. Established observation posts throughout the Arctic. Vigilance had to be maintained against low-flying aircraft, and trained observers were useful in locating downed aircraft. An effective system when sufficient numbers of the population were trained. Ground Observer Corps disbanded in 1964. Retired the same year due to rank and age. Enjoyed the military life, would not change it. (40:00)

Lt.-Col. Edward Drummond Taylor
Royal Canadian Engineers

Record ID: 00000138
Taylor, Edward Drummond, Lt.-Col, 1915-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Edward Drummond Taylor ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 21, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

"Peter" Taylor was born on Feb. 18, 1959 in Vancouver. Educated in public schools in England. Universities of Toronto and London. In 1934 worked in Yugoslavia with a mining company. Returned to university: Johns Hopkins, and then to Laval where he completed a Master's degree in Geology. Joined the 6th Field Company, Corps of Royal Canadian Engineers in North Vancouver, although he did not serve with them, moving directly to Petawawa Camp as a second lieutenant. Promoted to lieutenant and appointed intelligence officer. Overseas in 1940 to the British Intelligence School. Through his father's friendship with Sir William S. Stephenson (Intrepid) he found himself summoned to the War Office in London and seconded to the "Inter- Service Research Bureau", although he never met anyone in that organization. (15:00) Trained in Scotland, observed at a parachute school, studied railway sabotage. Apparently the idea was to get a "feel" for all of these facets of counter-intelligence. Returned to Canada to help start the counter-intelligence school at Whitby, Ont. where most of the students were Americans, sent from New York. (30:00) Among them were Federal Bureau of Investigation agents who were known only by their Christian names and some who could only be described as "thugs". A student body of only about ten to fifteen at a time. Formulated a scheme for a "fifth column" in B.C. should that province be invaded by the Japanese. Ordered by New York to show the scheme to the Chief of the General Staff in Ottawa, Taylor later proceeded to Pacific Command under cover as a security officer. He tramped through a large area of B.C. centred on Terrace. Comments on the armoured train. Plan finally abandoned when the danger receded. Sent to the staff college at Kingston. Overseas to regular army duty in the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Second-in-command of the 18th Field Company, R.C.E. In spring 1944 became part of the wireless cover plan to deceive the Germans regarding the invasion of Europe. He represented the 1st United States Army Group slated to invade the Pas de Calais. False movement orders and other operational wireless traffic for about two months before D-Day and for two weeks afterward. Went to Normandy as a staff officer, engineers, with 1st Canadian Army headquarters. (45:00) He was chiefly involved in writing operations orders and surveying the ground for operations. Injured in a vehicle accident and returned to Canada in 1945. (15:00) Appointed liaison officer to the U.S. Corps of Engineers in Washington, D.C. Later involved in joint U.S./Canadian winter exercises in the Yukon. Posted to Ottawa as a lieutenant-colonel. Anecdotes about the Yukon exercise. Personal philosophy toward the army. General comments. (35:00)

Flight Lieut. James Earl Taylor
Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000139
Taylor, James Earl, F/L, 1919-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by James Earl Taylor ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
I sound cassette (ca. 75 min.): standard mono.
James Earl Taylor returned in March 1949 to the Royal Canadian Air Force (R.C.A.F.) as a warrant officer, class II (pharmacist); flying officer, Oct. 1949; flight lieutenant, 1952. Left the R.C.A.F. in July 1953.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. Also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 25, 1986, Victoria, B.C.

Taylor, Born on May 26, 1919 at Grandview, Man. He was a member of the militia in Edmonton before the war, but when his unit "went active" he felt that his future lay with the air force. Accepted for air crew and posted for flying instruction at High River, Alta. "Washed out" and remustered as an air gunner at Trenton, Ont. Sent overseas in July, 1942 upon graduation from the gunnery school at Mountain View, Ont. Advance gunnery school in Wales. Heavy bomber conversion unit. As a flight sergeant he crewed up after Christmas 1942. Describes the method of doing so as casual, but very effective in producing a tightly-knit group. Practiced all aspects of bombing and gunnery in Avro Lancaster bombers. (15:00) Posted to No 207 Squadron, R.A.F. in Nottinghamshire. Began operations in the usual way, mining coastal waters. Later bombed U-boat pens, Ruhr Valley, Essen, and other locations. No personal feelings about bombing: the job at hand was to unload the bombs and get home safely. Concern for enemy civilians, for instance, was not a factor. On March 29, 1943 was shot down over Berlin. Coned by searchlights after bombs had been dropped and while on the obligatory photo run. Hit in two engines by flak and by an enemy fighter. Well on fire when he bailed out. Describes bailing-out procedures. Entire crew survived. (35:00) Luftwaffe interrogation centre at Frankfurt. Germans were, on the whole, very correct in their treatment of prisoners. Describes psychological questioning, cells, softening-up process before questions; considerable discomfort and disorientation as to time was experienced. Tough German attitude alternated with pleasant, but pointed conversation. Moved to the N.C.O.'s compound at Stalag Luft 3 at the end of Apr. 1943. Later sent to Stalag Luft 6 in East Prussia. A good camp, well set up, regular delivery of Red Cross parcels. (45:00) Worked in the camp hospital from Oct. 1943 to July 1944. During this time was promoted to warrant officer, class I. Left East Prussia as the Russian army approached. Moved (perhaps in error) by sea to Germany, then to Stalag Luft 4, a punishment camp. Harsh treatment by guards, meals poor, no Red Cross parcels. Later moved with about nine hundred R.A.F./R.C.A.F. prisoners into a separate compound. Evacuated again in Jan. 1945, marched to the west, slept in fields, dysentery a serious problem. Anecdote. (15:00) Arrived in Stalag 2-A in late March 1945. On Apr. 29, 1945 the Russian army released them. Excellent treatment by the Russians for about two weeks, deloused, moved to better barracks. Turned over to the Americans and then to the British. Flew to England. Leave. Promoted to pilot officer in June 1945. Discharged in Canada as a flying officer in Sept. 1945. Recounts difficulty that he, as a former prisoner of war had adjusting to freedom. Returned to university to study pharmacy. (30:00)

Capt. Ernest Edmund Teagle

The Calgary Highlanders
Record ID: 00000140
Teagle, Ernest Edmund, Capt., 1918-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ernest Edmund Teagle; interviewed by Mark C. Hill
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.): standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 120 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. Also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 20, 1985, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Nov. 19, 1918 in Regina Sask., lived for years in Calgary. Educated at University School in Victoria. Received good basic training in the 170th Cadet Corps at school. At the University of British Columbia he rose to the rank of Regimental sergeant major in the C.O.T.C. Joined the Irish Fusiliers (militia) in Vancouver, and sent to the O.C.T.U. at Gordon Head. Discusses the early form of battle drill taken at Vernon, B.C. (10:00) Equipment, drill, instructors in 1942. He instructed at Vernon for eleven months. Seven-week course placed the student in excellent physical condition and effectively prepared him, at the company level, to exist in battle. The battle drill school was an independent organization, not under the command of Brig. "Shorty" Colquhoun of Vernon Military Camp. This caused a certain friction as the battle school took military "liberties" more associated with units in the field than a training camp. Recounts two incidents where raids were conducted by battle school members dressed in German uniforms. (30:00) In 1943 reverted to the rank of lieutenant in order to proceed overseas to The Calgary Highlanders. Impressions of wartime Britain. Introduced to support weapons at battle school in England. Platoon commander in "D" Company, then in Normandy, of the carrier platoon. Heavy security before embarking for the continent in early July 1944. (45:00) Describes beaches in Normandy, then a quick move inland. In action at Hill 67 on July 19, under heavy mortar fire. Offers opinion of excellent German weapons. (15:00) Describes battle conditions, artificial moonlight at Tilly-la-Campagne. Verriers Ridge, German tunnelling. Impressions of German troops. Falaise. Wounded at the Seine, British hospital at Bayeux. Rejoined the unit in Sept. Serious reinforcement problem quickly developed. Officer reinforcements often former artillery officers who lacked any real infantry training. Canadian officer killed, because of lack of experience, by own forces. (35:00) Woensdrecht, house-to-house fighting. Walcheren Causeway toughest action, so much so that much of it remains blanked out. Comments on extremely close support by rocket-firing aircraft. (47:00)

(Side 2) Opinion on delays in clearing the Scheldt. Wounded again. When recovered he commanded the transport section at Grave until the end of the war. First encounter with Canadians in the black market. Anecdote of a captured German paymaster and another of an American lieutenant throwing his weight around. To England in Dec. 1945 and almost immediately returned to Canada. (20:00) Discharged. Returned to university for his final year. Worked for Imperial Oil for ten years. Decided to become a teacher. Retired. Is of the opinion that Canadian forces today (1985) lack much of the best of equipment, including weapons. Military colleges produce young men who are assets to the country. (26:00)
Maj.-Gen. Alfred James Tedlie, D.S.O.

17th Duke of York's Royal Canadian Hussars

Royal Montreal Regiment

The British Columbia Regiment (28th Armoured Regiment)

Record ID: 00000200
Tedlie, Alfred James, Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1916-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Alfred James Tedlie ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
8 sound cassettes (ca. 630 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Four original sound tape reels (ca. 630 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 28, July 9, 16, and 23, 1979, Sidney, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born of Irish parents on March 20, 1916 in Montreal. Educated in that city. In Oct. 1939 joined the 17th Duke of York's Royal Canadian Hussars and, as a trooper, was issued a full cavalry uniform and equipment. Describes conditions, much sport, machine-gun training. Transferred to the Royal Montreal Regiment in 1940, commissioned. Commanded an army demonstration team, toured Ontario and Quebec. Account of voyage overseas.

(Reel 1, Side 2) Took command of the machine-gun platoon. The regiment became the 32nd Reconnaissance Regiment, converting to armoured cars. Promoted to captain. Comments on the requirement for the regiment to become a reconnaissance unit. In March 1944 the regiment was disbanded and Tedlie was transferred to the British Columbia Regiment. A complete change to tank warfare. Discusses the 4th Armoured Brigade and the organization of a tank squadron. Landed in Normandy in July 1944 in command of the tank delivery squadron specifically for the use of his regiment. Heavy tank casualties in Aug. 1944 brought the entire squadron forward. In action on Aug. 13 during Operation Tractable. Good morale, describes actions, masterful use of ground by the enemy. Maj.-Gen. George Kitching. Morale tremendously influenced by the confidence in a commander. Experienced tank commander is vital to survival. Falaise.

(Reel 2, Side 1) Discusses the disastrous fight of the 28th Armoured Regiment on Aug. 8-9 when they lost forty-seven tanks. Considerable confusion evident in Operation Tractable. Personal feelings. Explains re-supply, tactical situation. (45:00) Carnage at Falaise. Admires German defensive tactics, 88-mm. gun very effective. Living in and under a tank. Describes an action where most of his squadron was lost, including his own tank. Tank crews became adept at abandoning a tank, rarely were "buttoned-up". (36:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Continued to command his squadron until the end of the war (Major, Sept. 1944), except for a few weeks when he commanded the 4th Armoured Division training school for tank commanders. Discusses the Sherman tank. Awarded the Companion of the Distinguished Service Order for action in Feb. 1945 in Hochwald Forest. Comments on

(Reel 4, Side 1) Promoted to colonel, chief of staff, Saskatchewan command. Director of Armour, then of Combat Development. Frequent meetings to plan military doctrine, in consultation with the Americans and British. Promoted to brigadier, 2nd Canadian Infantry Brigade. Went directly from there to command the international force for peacekeeping in Cyprus: Canadians, Finns, Danes and British. Lacked an intelligence organization, claims that military intelligence was unknown in the United Nations. Much self-reliance required of the soldier on the spot in Cyprus. It was a moderately successful operation, but gradually deteriorated into open warfare. Recounts the daily schedule of the commander. Close co operation with the police of both sides. In 1964 he was appointed commander of the 4th Canadian Infantry Brigade Group in Europe (for two years). Troops well-equipped and trained. Very friendly with the efficient German forces. Posted to the training command in Winnipeg where he had his first experience with integration. Later unification caused much dissatisfaction. October Crisis: integrated staff not successful. The army took command and an effective military operation was mounted. As a major-general and Deputy Chief of Staff for Force Development he was required to give much thought to future warfare. Recounts some of the responsibilities of the position. Retired in 1971 after thirty-two years of service.

Lance Corporal Gordon C. Thomas

67th Battalion (Western Scots), C.E.F.

Record ID: 00000141
Thomas, Gordon C., L/Cpl., 1898-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Gordon C. Thomas ; interviewed by William S. Thackray
1 sound cassette (ca. 30 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 30 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 28, 1980.
Born on June 14, 1898 in Victoria, B.C. He was a bugler in the British Columbia Horse, but was too young to join the Canadian Expeditionary Force in 1914 when his unit was called up. In Victoria, at age seventeen, he became a member of the 50th Gordon Highlanders. Transferred to the 67th Battalion (Western Scots), then training at the Willows Fairgrounds. Overseas in March 1916 to Bramshott, Eng. where they underwent advanced training. Thomas believes that, since a high proportion of the unit were loggers or miners, it became the 67th Pioneer Battalion in which their construction skills could be most effectively utilized. As part of the 4th Canadian Division they landed at Le Havre, France. Moved into the Ypres salient and suffered their first casualties on the first night of trench-digging. The battalion lived in trenches just behind the front line. Experienced a gas attack. Marched to the Somme where they dug many support trenches. During attacks they followed close behind the forward troops. Helped pick up the wounded; often the dead were so thick on the ground that they could not avoid walking on them. Moved to Vimy Ridge to dig tunnels in the chalky ground. Built a railway and camouflaged it so that all the excavated material sent to the rear would not be seen by the enemy. Forward troops had baths every three weeks to a month: if missed, one turned his shirt inside-out and carried on! Food at the front was basic: hot tea, rum, bully beef, stew. Comments on the validity of the rum ration. The battalion provided reinforcements for the infantry battalions and he was wounded on the first day of the battle for Vimy Ridge. Lost an eye. Evacuated to England. Posted for a while to a Pioneer School to help teach the construction of field fortifications. Returned to Canada. Spent some time in the Jubilee Hospital and Naden Hospital at Victoria. Discharged in 1919. Between the wars he worked as a contractor and real estate salesman. In World War II he was a supervisor for the Canadian Legion Services. Now (1980) secretary of the 67th Battalion Association. (30:00)

Flight Lieut. J.C. Uhlman

85th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Royal Flying Corps

Royal Air Force

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000201
Uhlman, J.C., F/L, 1896-
My Army and Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by J.C. Uhlman ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
6 sound cassettes (ca. 390 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives. Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 390 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels June 21, 26, July 3, 6, 19, and Aug. 23, 1979, Victoria, B.C.
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on July 2, 1896 in Carlton, N.S. After graduating from high school worked in the United States until May 1916 when he returned to Canada to enlist in the 219th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force (C.E.F.). Motivation and feelings for joining up. Account of the troopship to England. Life at Bramshott Camp. (30:00) On Dec. 27, 1916 transferred to the 85th Battalion, C.E.F. Heavy schedule of training, drill and inspections. Landed in France on Feb. 10, 1917. Describes war zone. (90:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Occupied trenches on Feb. 19, 1917. Comments on the Vimy Ridge area and preparatory work for battle. Wounded in the knee when moving forward late in the day of Apr. 9, 1917. Evacuated to England. (18:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) After convalescence was posted to a reinforcement unit where he applied to join the Royal Flying Corps. Began flying training in Sept. 1917. Aeronautic school at Oxford. Commissioned. Anecdotes of flying training, aircraft, etc. In Apr. 1918 the Royal Air Force came into existence. Promoted to lieutenant. Flew DH9 bombers which he always thought somewhat dangerous due to the fuel tank being mounted immediately in front of the pilot. Flying characteristics, armament. Navigation and bombing school. Pilot's pool in France, June 1918. Assigned to No. 104 Squadron. (45:00) Bombing mission described: over one hundred miles to industrial targets at Mannheim. Attitude toward lack of parachutes. (25:00) General comments.

(Reel 2, Side 2) Duration of raids, flying suits, formation flying essential for defence, rudimentary bombsights. Engine characteristics and problems requiring much time be spent on maintenance. Daily routine. (45:00) On Aug. 3, 1918 experienced engine trouble causing him to fall behind the bombing formation. Decided to bomb nearby railway line, chased by enemy fighters. Aircraft hit in fuel tank and perhaps engine; wounded in leg, air gunner also wounded. Luckily they were able to return to Allied lines. Time in both French and American hospitals. Sent to England where he was when the war ended. Returned to Canada. (30:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1) Homecoming to Yarmouth, N.S. Remembers the shock of having to fend for himself as a civilian. Worked in the United States until 1926. Joined the Royal Canadian Air Force in 1928 at Camp Borden (Flying Officer). Not a member of the permanent force, although on continuous duty. Posted to Vancouver where he flew seaplanes. No war training; worked entirely for the government. No wireless communications. Winnipeg: photography and mapping. Forestry patrols. Photographic course in 1929. (Reel 3, Side 2) Once flew across country using a railway map. Search and rescue. Geodetic survey. (30:00) As a flight lieutenant he worked in the Mackenzie River-Arctic area. Released from the Air Force in March 1932. Found employment with the Manitoba provincial air service. Appointed Director of that service in 1946, remaining until 1962. (35:00)

Lieut.-Col. Richard Norman Walsh
Royal Canadian Artillery
Born on March 28, 1913 in Imperial, Sask. Joined the militia (artillery) in Regina in 1930. Within two years qualified as a sergeant. All training done at the armouries, although they did have guns there were no horses to move them! By 1936 he was a battery sergeant-major and occupied that same post when war came in 1939. Called up on Aug. 28, 1939. Describes rations, accommodations, uniforms. Comments that for a time in the 1930's relations with civilians in Regina were not very good. The 18th Battery, R.C.A. became part of the 7th Anti-tank Regiment, R.C.A. which went into training at Shilo, Man. in 1940. The regiment had a total of four two-pounder anti-tank guns for training purposes. Proceeded overseas in 1940. (20:00) Besides training, the regiment defended an airfield and the south coast of England during 1940-41. At the end of 1942 he was sent to an O.C.T.U. and later on a four-month course in anti-tank gunnery. Trained on the six-pounder and later on the seventeen-pounder guns. Sent to a reinforcement unit as an instructor. (30:00) In Oct. 1943 he sailed for Algeria to obtain battle experience with the 6th British Armoured Division. Sent to Italy and, by good fortune, was posted to the 7th Anti-tank Regiment, part of 1st Canadian Corps Troops. Re-equipped with the American M-10 S.P. (self-propelled) anti-tank gun. Troop commander. Describes the battle at Monte Cassino. At the Gothic Line they provided close support for the infantry. Were attached to a wide variety of formations: British, Canadian, Indian, New Zealanders. Little firing against enemy armour, but much against buildings. (48:00)

(Side 2) Heavy fighting before the Rimini Line; first time in action as a complete regiment. Bagnacavallo. Supported the P.P.C.L.I. (Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry) at the Naviglio Canal. Explains the action of German Teller mines buried in the roadway. Canadian Corps moved to North-West Europe. Exchanged their American guns for seventeen-pounders. In reserve and no real action undertaken. For a short time they acted as infantry, occupation troops in reality. War ended, repatriated to Canada, arriving in Ottawa on July 1, 1945. Remained in the army until 1947. An officer in a militia unit until 1965. (25:00)

Maj.-Gen. Cameron B. Ware, D.S.O.
Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000202
Ware, Cameron B., Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Cameron B. Ware ; interviewed by Chris D. Main
2 sound cassettes (ca. 175 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives. Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 175 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with Maj.-Gen. Ware. Reels include 80 min. of interviews
conducted by Reginald H. Roy, June 23, 25, and July 10, 1979, Victoria, B.C. and a 165-min.
terview conducted by William S. Thackray, July 16, 1980, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 11, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000203
Ware, Cameron B., Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Cameron B. Ware ; interviewed by Reginald H.
Roy
2 sound cassettes 3(ca. 80 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with Maj.-Gen. Ware. Reels include a 175-min. interview
conducted by Chris D. Main, Aug. 11, 1978, Victoria, B.C. and a 165-min. interview conducted
by William S. Thackray, July 16, 1980, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 23, 25, and July 10, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

Record ID: 00000204
Ware, Cameron B., Maj.-Gen., D.S.O., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Cameron B. Ware ; interviewed by William S.
Thackray
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Archives holds additional interviews with Maj.-Gen. Ware. Reels include a 175-min. interview
conducted by Chris D. Main, Aug. 11, 1978, Victoria, B.C. and 80 min. of interviews conducted
by Reginald H. Roy, June 23, 25 and July 10, 1979, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1, interviewed by Chris D. Main) Born on Aug. 9, 1913 in London, Ont. Joined the
militia as a boy soldier in 1927, going on to the Royal Military College (R.M.C.) in 1931.
Describes conditions and purpose of R.M.C. More emphasis on military subjects than in today's
military colleges. Strict discipline, frequent punishments for infractions of the regulations. (45:00)
Upon graduation he joined Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry (P.P.C.L.I.) as a lieutenant.
Comments on regimental history. Commanded the machine-gun platoon and conducted research
into cold weather clothing. Sent as an exchange officer to the Rifle Brigade
in England. (45:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Returned to Canada upon the outbreak of war. Sent back to England in Oct.
1939 for infantry courses, did not see Canada again until 1945. Promoted to major in mid-1940,
company commander. Much activity when a German invasion was expected. In Feb. 1942
became second-in-command of the regiment. In Sicily (Aug. 1943) was appointed commanding
officer. On the voyage to Sicily his ship was torpedoed; he was picked up the next morning. (45:00) Landed in Algiers, immediately placed in a prisoner of war camp (for security reasons) until after the invasion of Sicily. Eventually was able to rejoin the regiment. Offers some ideas on the operation of an infantry battalion. (30:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1, interviewed by Reginald H. Roy) Recapitulates the torpedo incident. Battle for Leonforte. Had to watch the Sicilian population, great thieves. Peaceful invasion of Italy. Explains Montgomery's method of command and engendering respect. Moro River battle, awarded the Companion of the Distinguished Service Order (D.S.O.) as a result of a successful night attack after much skillful patrolling. Heavy fighting at Villa Rogatti before the battle for San Leonardo. (45:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Winter quarters. Training, early experience with armour, quality of Canadian commanders. Some detail of the approach and fighting at the Hitler Line. Returned to England for a rest from the great pressure to which commanding officers are subjected, lack of sleep, etc. Describes investiture of the D.S.O. by the King at Buckingham Palace. Promoted to acting colonel commanding a training unit at Aldershot. Later became commanding officer (C.O.) of the North Shore Regiment in Holland, May 1945. (35:00)

(Reel 3, Side 1, interviewed by William S. Thackray) Occupation troops. Posted to Camp Shilo as C.O. of the P.P.C.L.I. and in June 1946 moved to Calgary with the battalion which was only about four hundred strong at that time. Promoted to colonel and shortly thereafter became commandant of Royal Roads Military College, 1952-1953. (45:00) Some discussion of graduates and experiences at the college. Promoted to brigadier, Canadian Military Mission, Far East. Main object was to remove Canadian troops from Korea as simply as possible. Ottawa, Director of Military Training. Three years later he was sent to the Imperial Defence College. (45:00) Commanded the Canadian brigade in Germany. Made a great point of being allies of the Germans.

(Reel 3, Side 2) Canadian troops formed a well-trained, efficient brigade. Controversy regarding rocket artillery. Commandant of the National Defence College for four years. Details of the commandant's house, staff, lecturers at the college. Defence Minister Hellyer had the right idea for integration, but unification was something of a disaster. In particular, the management of personnel did not work well under the new system. Appointed and remained Colonel of the P.P.C.L.I. for eighteen years. Influence of Lady Patricia Ramsay on this appointment. In consultation with Ware, Lady Ramsay picked Lady Patricia Brabone (now Countess Mountbatten) as her successor. (45:00)

Flight Lieut. Philip Fay Waterman

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000143
Waterman, Philip Fay, F/L, 1918-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Philip Fay Waterman ; interviewed by Rick
Aylward
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 18, 1986, Vancouver, B.C.

Born on Dec. 25, 1918 in Alberta. Joined the R.C.A.F. in 1940. After the usual basic training and
tour of guard duty he was accepted for pilot training. While not adapting easily to military
discipline he was awarded his wings as a sergeant pilot in 1941. Posted to fighter training school.
Voyage overseas was delayed in Halifax due to filthy conditions aboard the Empress of Asia. In
England he had several personal difficulties with the R.A.F. attitude, prevalent in training
establishments, toward those of junior rank. Sent to an operational training unit (O.T.U.) for
several weeks, but ignored a posting to a bomber school. Posted to a staff-pilot school in North
Wales for a six-month period where he gained much valuable flying experience. Commissioned.
In 1942 sent to a Spitfire O.T.U. (Supermarine Spitfire fighters). Posted to No. 65 Squadron,
R.A.F. in Cornwall where they conducted coastal patrols in low-altitude Spitfires. (30:00) Moved
to Gravesend where they provided "high cover" to the U.S.A.F. (United States Air Force) for
which they were issued high-altitude aircraft. In Jan. 1944 he and one other conducted a low-
level attack on a German airfield near Aachen which was quite successful. On the return he was shot
down near Brussels by enemy aircraft. Unfortunately Waterman was dressed in civilian clothes,
except for his flight jacket, as he proposed to depart for London on leave as soon as he had
returned to base. Captured by the German army, questioned by the Gestapo for ten days as they
could not believe that he was not a spy, and eventually sent to the Luftwaffe interrogation unit
near Frankfurt. (45:00) Transferred to Stalag Luft 3 near the Polish border. Their rations in prison
camp were on the German scale of "nonworking civilian", but the weekly Red Cross
parcel kept them reasonably fit. As the Russian army approached they were given two hours
notice to leave camp on a forced march to the west. Waterman feels that the Germans did this in
case the P.O.W.'s could be used as a future bargaining point. Eventually released by the Russian
army. Stole a bicycle and in five days reached the American army on the Oder River. In Brussels
on V-E Day. England. Returned to Canada where he found the readjustment to civilian life
somewhat difficult for a period of a year or two. (20:00)

Col. Cyril Marrott Wightman

Canadian Scottish Regiment

Record ID: 00000144
Wightman, Cyril Marrott, Col., 1904-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Cyril Marrott Wightman ; interviewed by
Cameron Falconer
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 8, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Nov. 26, 1904 in England. Family emigrated to Calgary in 1912 and, after his father was wounded overseas with the 103rd Battalion, C.E.F., moved to Victoria in 1917. At age sixteen went to work for Western Canada Radio. In 1926 he joined the advertising department of the Daily Colonist. Two years previously he had joined the Canadian Scottish Regiment as a rugby player! Moved up through the ranks to a commission in 1928. A major by 1938. Called up on Sept. 1, 1939. Amalgamation of the two battalions of the regiment produced one battalion for overseas service and one for reinforcements. Reverted to the rank of captain in order to remain in the 1st Battalion and proceed overseas. Returning to the prewar period, he notes that officers purchased not only their uniforms, but their sidearms as well. A large unit, the Canadian Scottish Regiment had as many as four hundred all ranks. Comments on the association with the Royal Scots of the British army. The 1930's were a busy time: trained two nights per week plus one evening for rugby practice and, if one was attending course for promotion, two or three of the remaining evenings were taken up. Militia camps were originally held at Beacon Hill Park, then at Maple Bay and other Vancouver Island locations. (25:00) Great esprit de corps cultivated in the prewar unit. He believes that this was invaluable when war came. Discusses the size and composition of the battalion. World War II tactics a complete change from those used in prewar training. (45:00) The restricted officer-man relationship more relaxed under wartime field conditions. Mentions Debert, N.S. where they joined the 7th Brigade of the 3rd Canadian Infantry Division. Overseas, Aldershot, rations, barracks. More realistic training, including amphibious. General conditions in Britain. (30:00) Pre-invasion briefings. Exercises with live ammunition. Wightman was second-in-command of the battalion on D-Day and explains some of his responsibilities (45:00). No further account beyond D-Day is given. (Possibly incorrect account of the "torpedoing" of the troopship Stratheden [W.S.T.])

Lt.-Col. Ronald Edward Wilkins, O.B.E.

Royal Canadian Engineers

Record ID: 00000145
Wilkins, Ronald Edward, Lt.-Col., O.B.E., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Ronald Edward Wilkins ; interviewd by Chris Bell
4 sound cassettes (ca. 330 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives. Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 330 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. These tapes require considerable editing as the conversation is very wide-ranging. Recorded on original sound tape reels May 19 and June 2, 9, 16, 1984..
Wilkins, Ronald Edward, Lt.-Col., O.B.E., 1913- - Interviews
(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Dec. 17, 1913 in Vancouver, B.C. Spent most of his early years in the Okanagan and was educated there to the senior matriculation level. Entered Royal Military College in Kingston in 1931. The first, or recruit, year was extremely tough. Subjected to considerable hazing which was partly justified as the application of stress to future officers. (20:00) The remaining three years were excellent. Discusses Commandants, Generals Elkins and Matthews. After R.M.C. spent one year at Queens University to obtain an engineering degree. Of a class of twelve, seven were from R.M.C. (36:00) At the time considered himself lucky to have been accepted into the regular army, a good job for a young man during the Depression. Was appointed Works Officer at Work Point Barracks in Esquimalt. Pre-war equipment held by the Engineers was old and primitive. Main occupation was to oversee civilian contractors constructing coastal defences in the Victoria area. (45:00) A comfortable life for a young man. Comments on pre-war politicians and on post-war proliferation of government services which he feels now sap Canadian vitality. (26:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Some repetition. R.M.C., Queens, engineering students, etc. Returns to a discussion of the construction of coast defence works. (32:00) Life in the Officers’ Mess at Work Point included dressing for dinner five times per week. Thought about an army career. (45:00) General political discussion. (10:00) Service wives. Career prospects. (21:00) On the outbreak of war finding accommodation for the troops was a priority, including mainland B.C. Posted to Sydney, N.S. on coast defence construction. Slated for the cancelled Canadian occupation of Iceland. Promoted to major and an Engineer staff officer in Halifax. Canadian army staff college in 1941. (35:00) Appointed G.S.O. 3 (General Staff Officer, Grade III) at headquarters 1st Canadian Army Tank Brigade in England, then G.S.O.II at 1st Canadian Army headquarters. Discusses Brig. (later Maj.-Gen.) Worthington: great at training, but a bit eccentric. (50:00)

(Reel 2, Side 1) Impressions of Italian people in 1944. Returns to comments on 1st Canadian Army Headquarters where he was involved with organizing training exercises for the Engineers. (10:00) Did not get on with the C.R.E. (Commander, Royal Engineers) then Lieut.-Col. Geoffrey Walsh. Training concentrated on bridging, mine clearance, and roads until they became almost second nature. Posted as officer commanding 3rd Field Company (1st Canadian Infantry Division). Spent a few months in 1943 as a staff officer at Allied headquarters in Algiers. Promoted to Lt.-Col. and C.R.E. 1st Canadian Corps Troops in Italy. (30:00) Bridging and lifting mines were the main battle tasks. Points out that Corps Troops undertook somewhat heavier engineering tasks than regular field companies. Gustav Line, 1944. Monte Cassino. (45:00) Discusses German Schue and Teller mines. Heavy fighting at the Gothic Line and elsewhere. Comments on command structure and administration. North-west Europe in 1945. (25:00) Crossed the Rhine. War ends while in England. (30:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Army of occupation. C.R.E. (Works) in Oldenburg. Restored communications and utilities, including an ice plant brought from Bremen, for a skating rink on specific orders of Maj.-Gen. Vokes. Considerable use made of German contractors who were excellent. Non-fraternization was a very low-key problem. (20:00) Occupation Force unit was small, but with a very high proportion of experts. Returned to Canada in 1946. Commandant of the School of Military Engineering at Chilliwack. Major disagreement with Maj.-Gen. Worthington, G.O.C. Western Command, which caused dissatisfaction. Returned to Ottawa for a short time to a
routine job. Left the army in 1947 to a succession of civilian engineering positions, the last, before retirement, in Victoria. Personal and family comments. (36:00)

Flight Lieut. W.A. Wilson

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000146
Wilson, W.A. F/L, 1917-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by W.A. Wilson ; interviewed by Rick Aylward
2 sound cassettes (ca. 110 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives. Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 110 min.) : 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Aug. 10 and 11, 1986, Vancouver, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Jan. 17, 1917 in Banffshire, Scotland. He was motivated to join the Air Force by the entry of Italy into the war in 1940, also because he felt that he should do his bit as his friends were doing. Volunteered for air crew. Early training in Regina. Mentions some of his courses and the value of general military training. Trained as a navigator. Overseas to Bournemouth after a very comfortable crossing of the Atlantic. Was posted to a R.A.F. Regiment training school for officers. Anecdote. Feels that R.A.F. Training Command patronized "colonials". In Sept. 1943 was posted to an operational training unit at Honeybourne where they flew "Armstrong Whitworth Whitley" aircraft. "Crewed-up" which usually took place at the local pub. (20:00) Attended a course on procedures to use if he was shot down and taken prisoner. R.C.A.F. conversion unit to four-engined aircraft. Was posted to No. 427 Bomber Squadron, R.C.A.F. Assigned an unpopular room (No. 13) in the officers' quarters with an unfortunate reputation: most occupants seemed to get shot down. Operations against the enemy most often against industrial targets in large cities, although they participated in daylight bombing of rocket sites. Frankfurt and Berlin had particularly heavy defences. Discusses navigation problems during operations. High winds posed a particularly difficult one. If wind strength was incorrectly ascertained or applied, off course and heavy casualties could result. (35:00) On June 24, 1944 was shot down during a raid on Metz, France on his twenty eighth mission. Describes control of aircraft and conditions prior to bailing out, difficulty of leaving. On the ground spent a day hiding from the Germans near an airfield. (48:00)

(Side 2) Eventually tried to walk out of the area, but was captured by two Germans in a village where he was a prisoner of a Luftwaffe anti-aircraft unit which treated him well. Three days later met three others of his air crew and were driven to Brussels and placed in cells. Lunch, soup; supper, two small potatoes; breakfast, bread and coffee. Gives details of another interrogation. Train to Frankfurt where he was questioned again. Given extra clothing consisting of an assortment of cast-off Allied items. Train to Stalag Luft 3. Describes some other prisoners whom he met. (25:00) Reduced Red Cross rations in the camp. Comments on quarters, friends, sports, concerts, etc. In Jan. 1945 the prisoners were given two Red Cross parcels each and marched
toward Bremen. There they were placed in a bare barracks, no beds, had to build their own stove, one water tap per building. (40:00) Moved again on Apr. 10, 1945. Lived partly in the open. He and others managed to escape from a working party. Headed west for six days, but were captured within a few miles of the Allied armies, taken to Hamburg, and placed in a small prison which held about fifteen persons. Food better after making friends with a guard. Released by the 7th Armoured Division (British). He and three friends commandeered a Mercedes and decided to drive to Belgium. (47:00)

(Reel 2) Details of motor adventure. Had the Mercedes painted R.A.F. grey and, with phoney passes, started for Belgium. First night in Muenster with the American army. Bluffed their way through all the border crossings. Reported to the P.O.W. Centre in Brussels. Sold the Mercedes for forty thousand Belgian francs and for two weeks in Brussels had a great holiday. Flew back to Britain. July 1945 back in Canada. Considered himself a civilian in uniform, but the experience was worthwhile despite the hardship of the P.O.W. camps. Taught him very valuable lessons about life, camaraderie, and survival. (20:00)

Col. William Donald Wishart, O.B.E.

Royal Canadian Corps of Signals

Record ID: 00000205
Wishart, William Donald, Col., O.B.E., 1907-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William Donald Wishart ; interviewed by Chris Bell
4 sound cassettes (ca. 390 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 390 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels May 18, 31, June 7, and 21, 1984, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Born on Jan. 19, 1907 at Portage la Prairie, Man. Graduated from the University of Manitoba in 1931, the same year he joined the army. Comments on recruitment, officers, training, facilities at Camp Borden, Ont. Regimental sergeant-major had great influence on young officers. Went into debt purchasing uniforms, almost a standard occurrence. Details of mess life and customs. (45:00) Marriage for junior officers was not approved until promotion to captain was attained. Training equipment was old and often worn-out. Issued with No. 1 Wireless set in the mid-thirties. Served in Ottawa and in London, Ont., 1935-1939. Joined a 2nd Division signals unit upon the outbreak of war. (40:00)

(Reel 1, Side 2) Intensive training at Barryfield, Ont. Divisional signals organization. Promoted to major, appointed Lines Officer (telephone communications). Some very primitive equipment was in use, but later were issued commercial style "telephone trucks" which were a great improvement. Comments on his senior signals officer, Brig. J.E. Genet. (25:00) Thoughts on Maj.-Gen. A.G.L. McNaughton.
(Reel 2, Side 1) Employed on line communications at 1st Canadian Army headquarters. Difficulties in finding efficient signalmen; required much time to train them. Felt that the headquarters officers were very efficient. On D+20 went to Normandy where establishing communications was a high priority. Experiences in Europe -- a wide-ranging anecdotal account. (38:00)

(Reel 2, Side 2) Decided to remain in the Army; chief instructor at Vimy Barracks, Kingston. Remarks on the production of the Canadian No. 26 Wireless set. Preferred wartime soldiering to that of peacetime with the many constraints -- political and financial -- of the latter.


Mrs. (Nancé Eveline) Wright

Bletchley Park

Record ID: 00000147
Wright, Nancé Eveline, Mrs., 1920-
My Bletchley Park recollections [sound recording] / by Nancé Eveline Wright; interviewed by Chris D. Main
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard mono. Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 29, 1978, Victoria, B.C.

Born on Apr. 10, 1920 in England, Nancé Adair moved to Canada at the age of five years, staying until 1938 when the family returned to England to a house about nine miles from Bletchley Park. Attempted to join the Wrens (Women's Royal Naval Service) in 1940, but unsuccessful due to a lack of the required skills at that time. Explained this to a R.A.F. friend who worked at Bletchley Park and he arranged a job interview. Eventually worked for Hugh Alexander, former headmaster of Winchester School and a chess champion, one of the "backroom boys". (10:00) Discusses some of the "characters" there. When she joined, a naval commander explained that she could not leave Bletchley for the duration of the war. Continued to live at home. Salary eight shillings and sixpence per week. Long hours, often two shifts per day. One day off per week, occasionally one-week leave. She told her parents that she was just a general civil servant, although they guessed that this was not so. In the beginning her work was, in general, decoding which was often boring. (35:00) Later worked with the Enigma machines which received information from a large, computer-like machine called "the bombe" which produced somewhat simplified coded messages. These machines were operated by Wrens at Bletchley and outstations. Wright knew that the decoding through the Enigma machine was
Dr. David A.T. Stafford Collection of Interviews

Mrs. Sonia Birch-Jones

Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Record ID: 00000038
Birch-Jones, Sonia, Mrs., 1921-
My Special Operations Executive recollections [sound recording] / by Mrs. Sonia Birch-Jones ;
interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono. Also available as typewritten transcript (41 p.) in
archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound cassette Nov. 25, 1982, Victoria, B.C.

(Side 1) Born on Sept. 23, 1921 in Pontypridd, Wales. Early in the war Mrs. Birch-Jones was a
cipher officer in the Women's Auxiliary Air Force married to a R.A.F. officer named Houlston
(spelling approximate). After his death she obtained her release from the Service late in 1942
(spring 1943? See transcript of tape, p. 9). In order to achieve a complete change, she applied for
an overseas job and was sent to the Ministry of Economic Warfare. In 1943 (possibly Sept., p.
15, not March as on p. 3) she joined the Ministry at Baker Street in London and was confirmed
after two weeks of close surveillance. Signed a two year employment contract to remain where
sent anywhere in the world. All the young women were of the twenty-one- to twenty-five-year
age group and motivated by a desire to serve their country. A period of training followed and in
1944 they left by troopship for India as part of a secretive Force 136. Their group of seven were
the only women aboard and passed themselves off as Navy, Army, and Air Force Institutes or
Entertainments National Service Association personnel. Aboard ship Sonia Houlston (sic?) met a
British naval officer, seconded to the Indian Navy, named Charles Croucher whom she married
two days after arriving in Bombay, India. This caused an uproar and nearly her dismissal from
Force 136, but, due to a shortage of staff, she was retained. Began as a secretary in the Siam
section of the organization. Sent by train to Calcutta to a cantonment, formerly a very high class
bordello, complete with servant for each four bedroom bungalow where they were securely
housed. Their operations centre was in one of the better residential districts of the city, a short
taxi-ride away. She found secretarial work to be dull and, when the opportunity arose, transferred to the cipher section, also with a pressing shortage of trained staff. Describes some of the agents in Siam, Burma, Indonesia, and their work; also life with the agents who returned to Calcutta on leave and some of the styles they affected, e.g. foppish British officers, etc. They felt they were a very special group who sometimes had to suffer the gibes as layabouts offered by fighting troops on leave, and, for security reasons, were unable to respond.

(Side 2) Speaks of the women radio operators who knew the agents in the field, having met them as a matter of policy before a three-week or longer "tour" in enemy territory. A strong rapport was thus formed, which was essential. Comments on "typex", the use of decoding drums, and some of the mental operations required in quickly deciphering coded messages. There were always three women on duty, day and night, to receive messages from overseas, as well as their agents in the field. Later they were joined by some Americans (O.S.S.) who had an alarming lack of security consciousness. Mrs. Birch-Jones comments on the total freedom (in the modern sense) that she enjoyed in the service and as a member of Force 136. Treated by men as absolute equals, an experience that has supported her relationship with men ever since (see p. 29, ff.). Living a closely guarded existence, sometimes under considerable pressure, sharing with three other women, could cause tensions to arise, but, on the whole, both hard work and play kept life on an even keel. Within a week of the end of the war, Force 136 was packing to move to Saigon. Sonia Birch-Jones did not go, but returned to her husband after some incident, not explained, at "Chicalm" (sic). The end of the war meant a considerable letdown: returning to be a housewife took months of adjustment. Married life was not all that attractive, especially after returning to England. Comments on male/female relationships, the stigma (in those days) of divorce, etc.

F/O Thomas A. Cacchioni, D.D.S.

Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000154
Cacchioni, Thomas A., F/O, D.D.S., 1922-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Thomas A. Cacchioni ; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (66 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
No commercial reproduction of interview is allowed without F/O Cacchioni's permission.
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 13, 1983, Vancouver, B.C.

RESTRICTED COMMERCIAL REPRODUCTION

Born in Alberta circa 1922, lived in Kelowna. Joined the Royal Canadian Air Force at age eighteen. While undergoing pilot training he "buzzed" his girlfriend's home town and was
dismissed from pilot training. Became a bomb-aimer and went overseas at age nineteen, toward the end of 1941. Flew Vickers Wellington bombers at the Operational Training Unit. Performed very well in training and was offered "special duties". As a young man he had a great incentive to prove himself a good Canadian, since he came from an Italian family. In Northern Ireland converted to Handley Page Halifax bombers and was posted to Tempsford, to No. 138 Squadron, Royal Air Force, the Special Duty Squadron. Training anecdotes. Finally operations began, dropping supplies and agents throughout Europe. Experience with a "Belgian" in London who turned out to be a German spy. Explains that Tempsford was the main supply centre for Special Air Service and the Special Operations Executive. A sister squadron, No. 161, flew Westland Lysander and Lockheed Hudson aircraft which landed in enemy territory to deliver and pick up agents. Describes some of the explosives and weapons that they dropped: pigeons, chemicals, printing presses, etc. (20:00) Flying nearly always done on moonlit nights at low levels. Aircraft casualties caused by light flak weapons and by hitting land hazards. He had good night vision and came to know northern France, Holland, and Belgium very well. Explains drop procedure, done at six hundred to seven hundred feet. Feels that the agents they dropped were extremely brave: life expectancy in Europe was about six months. Refers to tragic circumstances in Holland where some fifty agents were dropped into German hands. On the last trip of his tour he was offered a chance to deliver arms and ammunition to the Lyon area and then to fly to North Africa for a little leave. After the drop they became lost in fog and broke cover over Marseilles. Escaped quickly and, despite engine trouble, reached the shores of North Africa. Engines supposedly fixed, but on return trip (July 11, 1944) their engines gave out and they ditched in the Mediterranean close to an Italian hospital ship (under British control). Upon impact the fuel tanks burst and the fumes nearly killed the aircrew. Picked up by a lifeboat, landed in North Africa, flew home via Dakar. (35:00) Great admiration for aircrew. Anecdote about Jamaican navigator who nearly killed them by becoming lost. Returned to Tempsford. Volunteered for another tour -- in Burma. (45:00) Not allowed to go as he was Canadian. Returned to Canada eventually to attend the University of Oregon for dental training. Returns to an account of dropping dummy parachutists loaded with explosives on D-Day. (04:00)

(Side 2) Comments on aircraft in squadron, experience with "Dambuster" squadron. Explains procedure and feelings when a night mission was on. Weather, drop zone, approximate location, description, etc. At the drop the aircraft speed was slow, nearly stalling. Feelings toward the Germans. His crew dropped between thirty and forty agents in forty-one operational missions. Procedure to be used in the event of ditching or crash landing: escape kits. Used to train for this in England. The "chop rate" (survival rate) was low because of the dangerous altitude. (25:00) Flew only five or six nights per month. Conditions in No. 138 Squadron. Comments on his pilot, "Hiram" Walker. Living conditions, horrible food, civilian contacts. How returned aircrew survived in civilian life. Attitude of Canadians and British toward the war. Own feelings of satisfaction about doing his job very well. (45:00) Psychological aspect of operations: not scared until his last few trips. Describes the nervous twitch many aircrew suffered: a facial and shoulder muscular contraction, the "operational twitch" caused by stress. (06:00)

Col. Pierre Chassé
Royal 22e Regiment

Special Operations Executive

Record ID: 00000155
Chassé, Pierre, Col., 1923-
My Army and Special Operations Executive recollections [sound recording] / by Pierre Chassé; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.): standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (39 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 75 min.): 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound cassette Apr. 12, 1983, Ottawa, Ont.

While Chassé was serving in Italy as a captain, the regiment, through Maj.-Gen. Georges Vanier in Algiers, received a call for two French-speaking officers to act as liaison officers with the French forces. This turned out to be a call for agents to go to occupied France. Recounts some prewar experiences: born on Apr. 4, 1923 in the Citadel, Quebec City, to a military family. Commissioned in 1941 as a second lieutenant. Took part in the invasions of Sicily and Italy. Since he and another officer had weapons and battle experience training as agents was brief. Cover story used: Pierre Dorval (?), a young artist. His mission was to represent the Allied High Command in the Rhone area and to attempt to coordinate the efforts of the underground in attacking the Germans. Claims the resistance caused about five thousand German casualties in about six months and later he personally accepted the surrender of about seven thousand Germans. Also prevented the movement of troops to the north to reinforce the German Army in Normandy after D-Day. Dropped into France on Apr. 6, 1944 and stayed there until Nov. that year. Explains that some “unfortunate” things happened to collaborators. Made contact with the Francs Tireurs Partisans, a Communist group. Carried about five million francs to help finance operations. Ammunition and explosives were dropped on request. Had to keep moving because of informers, many of whom were under pressure from the Gestapo. A few days after his arrival the Germans offered a reward of two million francs for his and another agent’s capture. Controlled guerrilla units by using the threat of withholding much-needed supplies. Comments on some cases where the Communist forces were discriminated against by the Allied forces; a pity, since the Communist groups were good at their business. (20:00) Sometimes the resistance was too enthusiastic and this resulted in unnecessary casualties. He had two radio operators in this team, contacted London or Algiers twice per day. Necessary to keep moving so that they would not be located by German wireless direction-finding equipment mounted in automobiles. Some discussion about a French officer, Col. Vaucheret (?) who was highly regarded and with whom he worked closely. Again comments on the problem of keeping resistance members under control. Many were very young and had to be reminded that they had few arms. Very difficult to stop these young men from launching suicidal attacks without heavy weapons against the Germans. (35:00) In Aug. 1944 he accepted the surrender of many Germans who did not wish to surrender to the underground. Details of this operation. Major problem feeding seven thousand prisoners. Reprisals carried out by the resistance in Lyon were rather shocking to him. Explains the importance of the Rhone Valley and the excellent terrain there for underground operations. A
problem was posed by people talking too much in a general way. One had to learn to be extremely discreet. (45:00)

(Side 2) Shortly thereafter he asked to be returned to England. The French government awarded him the Croix de Guerre with Palm for which he returned to Paris. He and a group of officers were asked to leave France within twenty-four hours because they had been closely associated with the Communist resistance which was not popular with de Gaulle. Critical of the British B-2 radio set issued in a suitcase because they all looked the same and became easily recognized by the Germans. Very dependable support by the Royal Air Force. Debriefing included his opinion of forged papers, money supply, etc. Mentions cyanide capsules in case suicide became necessary. British Intelligence were very good about supporting their agents, gave a very secure feeling. Discusses the position of our present defence forces: believes that they are necessary, but war is not. Comments on his method of dealing with fear. After six months in France he had lost forty pounds and had become very nervous. At the end of the war he remembers being amazed at the trivia about which Canadians complained. Found himself very self-contained and had great difficulty in communicating with people. Stayed in the army as he felt that there was still a job to be done. Enjoyed his military career; a wonderful life. Felt that by the time he commanded the Royal 22e Regiment he could in some way help to improve the lives of those he commanded. (29:00)

Miss Mary Isabella Ingram

British Military Intelligence, MI5

Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Ministry of Economic Warfare

Record ID: 00000156
Ingram, Mary Isabella, Miss, 1908-
My MI5 and Special Operations Executive recollections [sound recording] / by Mary Isabella Ingram ; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono. Also available as typewritten transcript (50 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Archives holds additional interviews with Miss Ingram. The two reels include 330 min. of interviews conducted by Chris Bell, July 14 (Id: 00000178) and 19, and Aug 9, 1983, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound cassette Feb. 3, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Cassette, Side 1) "Molly" Ingram joined MI5 in Singapore. This organization was the central body between the three services and the police and other civil authorities. She set up a cross-
indexed file of intelligence information: names, aliases, suspicions, contacts, etc. She went to Singapore in 1938. Eventually joined MI5 as personal assistant to the defense security officer who represented MI5. Gives an account of a plan, before Japan entered the war, whereby the Singapore police sabotaged a Japanese radio transmitter. Plotted to detain the Japanese consul general at a dinner party while sabotage under way. Tale of an errant civilian cipher expert illegally arrested and "saved from himself" and how she was able to placate him. Account of air raids on Singapore. Security measures. By Feb. 6, 1942 she was the last woman working in the police headquarters building; ordered to leave immediately. Singapore fell one week later. Interestingly, she had arranged to have herself shot should Singapore be captured, since she felt that the secret information she possessed would be of great value to the Japanese Intelligence. Describes the evacuation in a small, very dirty French vessel. (45:00)

(Cassette, Side 2 - long lead-in) Finally arrived in Delhi, India where a letter from the Singapore Inspector of Police helped her to obtain a position with the Ministry of Economic Warfare. Joined the S.O.E. at Meerut. Here the role of the Special Operations Executive is defined as creating alarm and despondency, disruption of the enemy war effort, and establishing commando-style training schools for agents. Comments on headquarters life; knew Brig. Ord Wingate, the well-known guerrilla leader. She assisted in producing Wingate's report on his first successful "Chindit" mission. Sent to Bombay in 1942. Anecdote called "Me and the Abortionist", a plan to arrange for the escape from prison of certain Indian Communists who would be trained at the S.O.E. commando school for service behind the Japanese lines in Burma. Visited the secretary of the Indian Communist Party (a Mr. Joshi [sic?]) on many occasions. Felt that her Indian taxi drivers thought her very strange as the building housing the Communist Party offices was far better known as a brothel and abortion clinic! Borrowed an aircraft from the R.A.F. and "bent it". Taught coding at the commando school. Operation "Goldfish", the kidnapping of the chief Gestapo agent in Portuguese Goa, and the subsequent destruction of wireless communications aboard Italian and German ships interned there. Asked to give her views on a proposal for the postwar resettlement of troops. (45:00)

Capt. Eugene Morris Johnson
Malacca Volunteers
Canadian Intelligence Corps
Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Record ID: 00000085
Johnson, Eugene Morris, Capt.
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Eugene Morris Johnson ; interviewed by David Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (51 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.  
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.): standard mono. also in archives.  
Archives holds an additional interview with Capt. Johnson. The reel includes a 90-min. interview  
conducted by James Murphy, Sept. 15, 1977, Victoria, B.C.  
Recorded on original sound cassette Apr. 29, 1983, Victoria, B.C.

(Tape 1, a ninety-minute cassette with fifty-one page transcript) Johnson was educated in  
Victoria, then sent to a job in a rubber plantation (Dunlop’s) in Malaya, arriving on New Year's  
1936/37. He describes his work and experiences in the position of assistant manager of a rubber  
plantation. He joined the militia, becoming a sergeant in command of a section of Vickers  
machine guns. Among the first in action against the Japanese at the Pahang River in northern  
Malaysia, they were quickly outflanked and started a retreat which ended in the defence of  
Singapore. A member of an official escape party he was transported to Sumatra on Feb. 14,  
1942, then to Java, and by passenger-liner (bombed, but not sunk) to Australia. Some discussion  
follows about feelings of defeat and humiliation suffered by the white man which effectively  
opened the eyes of the indigenous peoples. He returned to Canada where he was put through  
basic training again before his posting to the Japanese Language School in Vancouver. He  
comments on the effectiveness of the school's one-year course, instructors, etc., and the treatment  
of Japanese-Canadians. He was commissioned upon graduation and sent to India. He describes the  
Canadian "mutiny" at the jungle warfare training camp in Poona. In Aug. 1945 he was sent to  
Malaysia where he joined Force 136. He returned to Pahang, where he had been before the war,  
as part of the British administration. He makes considerable comments on the Malayan People's  
Army (Chinese) who were a well-organized guerrilla force. Many were disarmed, but by no  
means all, by purchasing arms and ammunition for gold and/or food. He sympathized with the  
M.P.A. and did not like to see the old colonial government methods being reinstated by both the  
British and the Malays. However, the latter, with a good deal of British aid, were able to keep the  
lid on communist aspirations for the time being, although serious trouble broke out in a few  
years. In retrospect he was glad that he did not stay in Malaysia after the war.

Flight Sgt. Robert L. Masters
Royal Canadian Air Force

Record ID: 00000157
Masters, Robert L., F/Sgt, 1922-
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Robert L. Masters; interviewed by David  
A.T. Stafford
4 sound cassettes (ca. 300 min.): standard mono.  
Also available as typewritten transcript (80 p. covering first three hours of tape) in archives.  
Summary of tapes also in archives.  
Tapes and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.  
No commercial use of interview is allowed by F/Sgt Masters.  
Four original sound cassettes (ca. 300 min.): standard mono.  
Recorded on original sound cassettes Nov. 27, 1982 and March 19, 1983.
(Cassette 1, Side 1) Born on May 14, 1922 in Nelson, B.C. His family moved to Seattle, Wash. where he was educated. For a time he worked for the Boeing aircraft plant at Sea Island, B.C. Joined the R.C.A.F. on Nov. 3, 1941. Explains patriotic feelings and the need to stop fascism. Trained as a wireless air gunner in Alberta. Poor food and a rough trip to England. Some difficulty between commissioned and non commissioned air crew. Civilian experiences in England. Posted to a conversion unit (Handley Page Halifax bombers). Joined a R.A.F. crew as mid-upper gunner and posted to No. 51 Squadron, R.A.F., No. 4 Group stationed in Yorkshire.

(Cassette 1, Side 2, transcript p. 21) Navigation exercises, bomb runs, gunnery practice against fighter aircraft. Feelings toward danger of mid-air collisions, learned landing techniques. On his third operational trip to Duesseldorf/Krefeld on June 21, 1943 his aircraft was shot down during the "photo run" by radar-controlled flak. Comments on the heavy flak defenses of the Ruhr; a fifty-mile belt of anti aircraft defenses. German radar was efficiently used and rapidly directed blinding searchlights or night fighters to the bomber aircraft. As mid-upper gunner he saw the line of shellbursts approaching the aircraft, but, before he had time to warn the pilot, the flak hit the port wing, damaging both engines. Refers here to pictures of the aircraft taken the day after it crash landed and the procedure used by the tail gunner to evacuate his position. The pilot had managed to crash land in Belgium. Explains feelings and technique of bailing out of the Halifax; plenty of time in their case, about half an hour after being hit. Discusses the use of homing pigeons which were standard equipment in bomber aircraft in 1943. Crews thus were able to advise England if they were safe. Pigeons were later discontinued since they could not survive the high altitudes common later in the war. Recalls a recent visit to the crash site where he was able to recover a few small artifacts from his aircraft.

(Cassette 2, Side 1, transcript p. 42) He parachuted into a field of cows. Avoided German troops, entered a small pub where he met members of the Belgian resistance who hurried him away. This area was close to the village of Mol in northeastern Belgium. Opinion of some resistance fighters and the informer who later caused the capture of some of his Belgian friends. Reflects on concentration and extermination camps and his dangerous association with the resistance. Attitude of the Gestapo toward civilians helping Allied airmen. Explains the system of five-man resistance cells.

(Cassette 2, Side 2, transcript p. 62) Operated for a time in a terrorist cell, most frequently against Belgian collaborators. In hiding in Turnhout, near Mol. Constant moves necessary. With false papers travelled by train and tram to Antwerp and Brussels. Moved to the French border as a first step to return to England, but returned to Brussels when news received that the previous group had been stopped in Paris. Moved to Liege (Sept. 1943) where he joined the terrorist group. Many of the families with whom he stayed were not involved in the resistance beyond hiding somebody for a few days. Masters acted as armourer for his group; reconditioned a considerable variety of arms. Personally thought the group was in danger due to slack security. Here he met an American airmen (Harry) with whom he later attempted to escape to Switzerland. (End of transcript, p. 80.)
(Cassette 3) In a party of three plus a guide they made their way to Paris which they quickly passed through, then on to Besançon, near the Swiss border. German patrols were very troublesome. Only "Harry" was able to cross a small river into Switzerland. Walked to the point of exhaustion attempting to find a safe route. Eventually ran into a German motorcycle patrol. After a stop in the local jail they were placed in the civilian prison in Besançon. Describes cellmates, very poor food, and living conditions. Luckily he had kept his R.C.A.F. identification card and through this was able to be identified by the air force interrogation centre at Frankfurt (Dulag Luft). Fortunately the Germans did not check for any underground connection. Describes Dulag Luft, Red Cross clothing, trip by train to Frankfurt in extreme cold.

(Cassette 4) Sent to Stalag 5A. Describes Argentinian "milk jam" in the Red Cross parcels; milk condensed until it reached the colour and consistency of peanut butter. Very good on bread. Returns to his experiences in Belgium and the friends he made during the war and had renewed since. (Total cassette time: about five hours.)

Robert Matula

Czech Army

British Intelligence, Czech Section

Record ID: 00000158
Matula, Robert, 1920?- My Army and Intelligence recollections [sound recording] / by Robert Matula; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
3 sound cassettes (ca. 210 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (117 p.) in archives.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
No copying or publishing of interview is allowed without Mr. Matula's permission.
Three original sound cassettes (ca. 210 min.) : standard mono.
Recorded on original sound cassettes Nov. 21, 1982 and Jan. 30, 1983, Chemainus, B.C.

RESTRICTED REPRODUCTION AND PUBLICATION

(Cassette 1, Side 1) A professional soldier in the Czech army. At the time of the surrender in March 1939 he retreated into Poland and remained near Krakow for about a month. The Czechs were sent to France by the Polish government where they were more or less forced into service in the French Foreign Legion. Served for six months and in Sept. 1939 were recruited by the Czech government-in-exile. Left the Foreign Legion with about five thousand others to join the Free Czech forces in southern France. Although taken prisoner by the Germans during the retreat of the French army in 1940, he and his unit escaped to rejoin the French army in its southward retreat. After the fall of France the Czechs were evacuated from Marseilles with the aid of the Royal Navy and taken to England. Became part of the Czech Infantry Brigade and later a driver-
instructor in the Czech Armoured Brigade. Asked if he would join a small group of agents returning to Czechoslovakia. Five men were sent to the Czech section of British Intelligence where they underwent intelligence, commando, and parachute training. Practiced undercover work in London: false names, papers, cover stories; both following others and being followed. Taught German points of view, small arms, etc. at Beaulieu. Trained in burgling techniques, explosives, general sabotage. Sent to southern Italy to await air transport to Czechoslovakia. While there he assumed the cover name of Robert Danyik (sic). (42:00, transcript p. 25)

(Cassette 1, Side 2) False papers were perfect: a lumber clerk in south Moravia and a butcher in northern Slovakia. Before leaving England his final dental work was done by a Czech dentist in the Czech style. Civilian clothes made by a Czech tailor in mid-European style. Their mission to Czechoslovakia was to assist in the organization of a resistance of between sixty and ninety thousand ex-military personnel to rise in conjunction with a drop of British airborne troops at some future date. Collaborators within the resistance were a major concern. As a lieutenant in charge of supplies for his group he was parachuted in on Sept. 13, 1944. The party of six was dropped into the mountains of Moravia, but unfortunately not in the correct dropzone. Took them two weeks to re-form the group. Their wireless operator was captured so that they did not have any contact with London, although they eventually were able to do so through another group. Experiences with the Russians. Felt that after the Yalta Conference they had been abandoned to some extent; Czechoslovakia was then in the Russian sphere of influence. Comments on the problem of Germans infiltrating the partisans. (42:00, transcript p. 53)

(Cassette 2, Side 1) Attempted to cooperate with Russian groups, but they were not well-trained and reported only to the Russian Army for whom they directly laboured. A major effort by the Germans to destroy the partisans made life very hard. At the approach of winter decided to disengage and rely on the civilian population for shelter. Hid in a pigeon loft for two weeks while German troops were billeted in the same farm. Moved on foot 230 km. to Brno where they lived in the outskirts, in another barn. (42:00)

(Cassette 2, Side 2) Retreated to the woods north of Brno where the group acted as partisans. An account of the ambush of German troops. Took German prisoners (some Ukrainians) who were quite happy to assist the partisans in fighting S.S. troops. Made contact with the Russian army and were initially treated as virtual prisoners, but eventually obtained Russian papers which allowed them complete freedom of movement. Able to get to Prague and became involved with the Czech government and Czech Communist Party. The latter did not want any part of the “western” Czech forces and made life difficult. Matula had the job of investigating all former Czech officers to ascertain their loyalty. Traced war criminals. Forced by the Communists to leave this important post to take a teaching position at the Czech Military Academy. Left the army and, after considerable difficulty, evacuated English wife to England. After much subterfuge and a chase by Communist agents he managed to take a train to a border area. (44:00)

(Cassette 3, Side 1) Further details of his escape on foot in Apr. 1948 over the border mountains to Bavaria. Moved to the British zone of occupation and contacted his wife, eventually rejoining her in England. General comments. (25:00)
Bombardier Norman Rubenstein

Royal Artillery

Record ID: 00000127
Rubenstein, Norman, Bdr., 1919-198-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Norman Rubenstein ; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (20 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard mono. also in archives.
Archives holds an additional interview with Bdr. Norman Rubenstein. Reel includes 90-min.
interview conducted by James Cross, March 7, 1982, Victoria, B.C.
Recorded on original sound cassette Oct. 30, 1982, Sidney, B.C.

(Cassette) Volunteered for the Territorial Army at the time of the Munich Crisis. A gunner in a Searchlight Battery, R.A. Sent to France to positions in the Pas de Calais. Moved to Arras as part of the defenses of the headquarters of the British Army. Moved back to Calais. Impressions of the defenses of Calais; not very actively engaged. Anecdotes. Captured by the Germans. Almost immediately problems began as Rubenstein was obviously Jewish. Escaped, but after a few days was recaptured by two members of the S.S. who threatened to kill him, but in the end spared his life because of his apparent lack of fear. Marched to Cambrai. Account returns to tales of the Army in England and later on in France (40:00).

Capt. Hugh Roulston Stephen

Royal Canadian Artillery

Canadian Intelligence Corps

Special Operations Executive, Force 136

Record ID: 00000071
Stephen, Hugh Roulston, Capt., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Hugh Roulston Stephen ; interviewed by David A.T. Stafford
1 sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono.
Also available as typewritten transcript (44 p.) in archives.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape and transcript are in the Dr. David A.T. Stafford collection of interviews.
One original sound cassette (ca. 90 min.) : standard mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound cassette March 30, 1983, Victoria, B.C.
Born on Apr. 25, 1913 in Guildford, Surrey, Eng. His family came to Victoria just before the war and in late Aug. 1939 he enlisted in the 5th (British Columbia) Coast Regiment, R.C.A. as a gunner. Was posted to 17th Searchlight Battery at Fort Rodd Hill. After a year he was commissioned and subsequently became Adjutant of the regiment. After Pearl Harbour he was unable, despite his best efforts, to proceed overseas to England. A large buildup of the Pacific coast defences occurred because of the fear of a Japanese attack. Volunteered to attend the Army Japanese Language School in Vancouver in 1943. Comments on the need for personnel capable of speaking Japanese and describes the school, curriculum, and instructional staff. A very intense and effective course. Upon graduation ten students were sent to the South East Asia Command after volunteering for what turned out to be the Special Operations Executive (S.O.E.). Their choice of occupation included operating behind Japanese lines, front-line propaganda broadcasting units, or in psychological warfare. Flew to India in March 1945. Explains the testing and selection process at the Jungle Warfare School at Poona. A very small percentage was found suitable for the lonely work behind the Japanese lines. Was chosen for the Psychological Warfare Dept. in Calcutta in Apr. 1945 because he was good at Japanese written characters and had been a journalist for a short time in London, Eng. Describes propaganda newspapers and their purpose: to inform the Japanese of the military situation. Also prepared slightly gloomy official-looking reports, placed where the Japanese could find them, all in an effort to promote a pessimistic attitude in the enemy. Provides an account of the almost unheard-of use of Japanese prisoners of war for propaganda purposes. The Japanese were convinced that they would be assisting the Emperor of Japan to bring the war to an end. Very useful for their knowledge of colloquial Japanese. Makes some comment on the Japanese attitude toward the war, how their reaction to a given situation might be quite different from that of a westerner. Contrasts Japanese Army brutalities, which were fostered by the highest ranks, with the great civilities and formal social structures of civilian life. In providing surrender pamphlets they had to produce a feeling of nostalgia for Japan and for the importance of beauty in the Japanese life. Gives an account of the Psychological Warfare Dept., independently run, the staff, method of delivery (airdrop), and effectiveness, particularly in the last few months of the war. Was ordered to fly to Rangoon after its capture.

(Side 2) Later flew to Singapore four or five days after the first allied landing. Japanese very cooperative. Took over Japanese-run radio stations and newspapers. Stephen produced a daily radio broadcast for the Japanese forces in southeast Asia with the full co-operation of a former employee of the official Japanese news agency who read the bulletins. Mentions the organized Japanese method of agreement by consensus. This experience promoted a change of feeling toward the capabilities of the Japanese people. In Canada the British were permitted to recruit Japanese-Canadians for service in the far east, but they were sent out as Canadians. Returns to a discussion of the Canadian feeling toward Japanese Canadians, west coast defences, the loyalties of the Japanese-Canadians, the necessity of removing them from the coast, and what he considers the disgraceful way in which their property was handled. Further accounts of early coast defence problems, Connie Smythe's "Sportsmans' Battery" of Bofors anti-aircraft guns, prospective military targets in B.C. and the U.S. northwest. At the end of the war he and some other Canadians in Singapore hitch-hiked home via the U.S. Navy to Philadelphia. Casualties of the S.O.E. were quite small compared to those in Europe. Demobilized in Canada. Attended the University of British Columbia for two years, then, with his father, purchased a large laundry and drycleaning business in Victoria. Entered civic politics, eventually becoming Mayor of Victoria.
Social Sciences Research Centre Collection

Interviews by Dr. Reg Roy for the Biography of Major-General The Honourable George Randolph Pearkes

Major-General The Honourable George Randolph Pearkes
V.C., P.C. (Can.), C.C., C.B., D.S.O., M.C.

Royal North-West Mounted Police

2nd and 5th Bns. Canadian Mounted Rifles

116th Battalion, Canadian Expeditionary Force

Princess Patricia's Canadian Light Infantry

Record ID: 00000236
My Army and political recollections [sound recording] / by George R. Pearkes ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
74 sound cassettes (ca. 98.4 hours) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Forty-one original sound tape reels (ca. 98.4 hours) :1 7/8 ips and 3 3/4 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Additional interviews with persons familiar with Maj.-Gen. Pearkes.
Note: In Box 6 there is a chronology of the life of M/Gen Pearkes. (File 13).

SUMMARIES OF TRANSCRIBED INTERVIEWS CONDUCTED BY DR. R.H. ROY

Box #1

Interview 1, 7 July 1965. 34pp. Box #1
Born on February 26, 1888 in Hertfordshire, England. Childhood, later attended Birkhamstead School. Upon graduation, attended the school-farm at Red Deer, Alta. where he learned a good
deal about the care of animals. Claims that these two institutions provided him with a strong sense of the value of duty.

**Interview 2, 23 July 1965. 25pp.**
Additional information regarding school days and immediately afterwards. Came to Canada in 1906 and not long after decided to take up a homestead near Rocky Mountain House. Managed for a while with the assistance of some outside employment. Mother and sister arrived to stay, required a new house, etc.

**Interview 3, 30 July 1965. 26pp.**

**Interview 4, 3 August 1965. 23pp.**
Police patrols in the Yukon. Purchased his discharge in 1915 in order to join the 2nd Canadian Mounted Rifles (2 CMR) in Victoria, B.C. Training experiences. Served as a riding instructor. The unit left Victoria on June 4, 1915, en route for England.

**Interview 5, 13 August 1965. 20pp.**
Taught equitation at Shorncliffe Camp, England. The unit moved to France as infantry in September, 1915. Specialized as a "bomber". Describes the early "jam-tin" bombs (hand-grenades). The unit had an easy introduction to trench warfare, attached to the Canadian Cavalry Brigade.

**Interview 6, 15 September 1965. 34pp.**

**Interview 7, 23 September 1965. 22pp.**
Wounded twice. Commissioned in April, 1916. Appointed Bombing Officer. Explains Gamage Catapult (for projecting bombs). Experienced a poison gas attack on the Somme. Describes the city of Ypres in 1916. Hill 60. Became Brigade Bombing Officer while the unit was on the Somme. After the battle of Moquet Farm was appointed a company commander in the 5th C.M.R. Leads a bombing attack on Regina Trench.

**Interview 8, 5 October 1965. 22pp.**
In the Somme battles impressed with the quality of our trenches. Bombing practices and techniques. Awarded the Military Cross. Wounded again. Moved to the Vimy area at the end of 1916. Efforts made to improve both the comforts and the discipline of the troops. Comments on Vimy Ridge and on early types of tanks.

**Interview 9, 12 October 1965. 33pp.**
Interview 10, 21 October 1965. 21pp.

Interview 11, 26 October 1965. 38pp.

No Interview 12: Mis-numbered!

Interview 13, 9 November 1965. 19pp.
Joins 116th Battalion, C.E.F. as second-in-command. When he left 5th CMR he was accorded a public tribute. Offers account of incidents in the 116th Bn. First conscripts, summer of 1918. Move to the Amiens area.

Interview 14, 16 November 1965. 22pp.


Box #2

Interview 16, 30 November 1965. 23pp.
Canadians in Europe after 11 November 1918. Decides to join permanent army. Staff College, Camberly. (116th Bn. disbanded) At Camberly there were some distinguished soldiers on course, who remained life-long friends. Appointed a major in the P.P.C.L.I. Posted as staff officer in Calgary. Comments on duties.

Interview 17, 7 December 1965. 25pp.
Interview 18, 14 December 1965, 18pp.
Transferred to Winnipeg, 1922. Plans for war and civil disturbances. Anecdotes of militia training. Important visitors to Winnipeg.

Interview 19, 22 December 1965, 18pp.
Military life and prominent individuals in Winnipeg. Meets and becomes engaged to Miss Blytha Copeman in North Saanich. Description of wedding, early married life, travels to Manitoba.

Interview 20, 29 December 1965, 22pp.

Interview 21, 6 January 1966, 24pp.
Refers again to the members of his Staff College Course at Camberly. Barriefield House in Kingston, Ont. Attends reunion of Victoria Cross winners in England. Describes Militia Staff Course at R.M.C. and work with the cadets. Military training, 1929/30.


(Begins with an aside: duties of the Lt. Governor.)
Returned to Canada, Jan. 1935.Posted to Ottawa as Director of Military Training. Describes responsibilities including dealing with the unemployed. Comments on the disagreement between the Deputy Minister and the Chief of the General Staff.

Interview 24, 1 March 1966, 21pp.
(Note: There is a supplement to this interview concerning the British Army, 1937 and as Director of Military Training.)


Interview 28, 12 April 1966. 20pp.
Germans invade the Low Countries and France. Anxious about shortages of equipment. Canadians expected to go to France. Preparing for the defence of Britain. 1st Cdn. Division posted to the Midlands. Comments on the fall of France. Problem of morale. Training became very active.

Interview 29, 21 April 1966. 18pp.
Opinion of General Montgomery. Degree of security when travelling by car. Officer friends. Training, troop movement by road. Court cases, the weeding out of officers. etc. Canadian staff officers; some problem with a perceived lack of dedication.

Box #3

Duties as part of the defence of Britain, one battalion always on one hour notice to move. Airfield defence. Weak defences on the south coast of England. Visit by Winston Churchill and Anthony Eden - a disaster - the "Battle of Winston Cross". Appointed General Officer Commanding (G.O.C.) 1st Canadian Infantry Division, July, 1940. Mentions senior officers.

Interview 31, 10 May 1966. 22pp.
General comments, persons known, etc. Air raids over England. Training for the expected invasion of England. (Comments on his current pressure of engagements).

Interview 33, 8 July 1966. 27pp.
Winter 1940/41. Shortages in England. Visits made and received. Not enthusiastic about "commando raids" as feels they are not very cost effective. Remarks on several staff officers, divisional conferences. Discusses photographs (subject not well defined).

Interview 34, 15 July 1966. 27pp.
Comments on the Home Guard. Training exercises, 1941, including Exercise Fox, great road confusion. Explains policy regarding a Canadian Corps. Some Canadian discontent at apparent

Refers to visits, years before, to the battlefields of the Great War. Remarks on the French Canadians in the First Cdn. Div. Dinner attended by the King. Visit by Canadian cabinet ministers. Comments on the German invasion of Russia.


Interview 37.1, 8 August 1966. (No transcript)
(Reel 20, Side 2, 1 7/8 ips, ca. 70 min. Starts at 2:40, ends at 3:30. Begins again at 10:03-10:23.)

Interview 38, 12 August 1966. 32pp. (Includes an account, 3pp., on Cdn. relations with U.S. Army)
Maj.-Gen. Pearkes remarks on the amount of correspondence he received from veterans, etc. As G.O.C. visits Lt.-Gen. John L. De Witt, the American army commander in San Francisco. Early planning for the invasion of Kiska Island, occupied by the Japanese. B.C. coast defences. Terrible weather and terrain conditions at Kiska. Decisions regarding troops used and their equipment and training.

Interview 39, 9 September 1966. 33pp.
Appreciation of the Japanese defences at Kiska, American opinion of Canadian troops. Individual combat training of Canadians was emphasized. Last minute permission of Canadian Government to proceed. Administrative details vis-a-vis the Americans. The Press and public relations. Plan of initial attack and after to press on westward. Writes letter to the Chief of the General Staff in Ottawa.
Interview 40, 14 September 1966. 34pp.

Interview 41, 21 September 1966. 27pp.

Box #4

Reinforcement problems. Returns to efforts to have 13th Infantry Brigade sent overseas as a unit. Continuing difficulty in obtaining overseas volunteers. Problems encountered when men temporarily released for farm work. Active support offered by Col. Ralston who eventually was forced to resign. Deplores the policy of the government in applying overseas conscription to only 16,000 N.R.M.A. men.

Interview 43, 13 October 1966. 28pp.
(Tape recording unusable - see transcript.)
Brig. W.H.S. Macklin as commander 13th Inf. Bde., report on the state of the Brigade, early 1944. Deserters and the somewhat inefficient system of apprehension. Low morale. Problem partly caused by efficient officers being posted, the inefficient remaining. Poor results in obtaining overseas volunteers despite great efforts. Emphasizes the degree which a lack of patriotism and the impression of an unfair manpower policy affected N.R.M.A. men.

Interview 44, 21 October 1966. 31pp.
"Odds and ends" as G.O.C., Pacific command. Resignation of Ralston, Min. of National Defence. General McNaughton takes over. Early attempts to implement his policies. Partial overseas conscription, a great mistake. Some officers spoke to the press causing considerable misunderstanding.

Interview 45, 1 November 1966. 21pp.
Interview 46, 16 November 1966. 18pp.
Life and routine as a Member of Parliament. Lobbyists or groups attempting to influence policy. Visitors welcome and otherwise. Policy on gifts.


Interview 48, 7 December 1966. 27pp.
Early political positions, defence matters, committees, etc. Some constituency problems, labour strikes, forest industry. Remarks that he approved of Brooke Claxton, Liberal Minister of National Defence.


Interview 51, 4 January 1967. 29pp.
Discusses defence cost, NATO, armed forces. Early talk of "amalgamation" of the services. Rescue facilities on the West Coast. Objects to the low numbers in the militia. Questions raised in Parliament, size of the regular forces and how to respond to an attack on Canada. Reunion of V.C. recipients.

Box #5


Comments on George Drew as leader of the Party. Considers him to have been an excellent choice, but perceived to lack "the common touch". Speaks of E.D. Fulton, George Hees, Robert Stanfield. Beginning of the Korean War. Serious problems with the army recruiting policy. Attacks government defence policy. Composition of units, officer training, etc.

Interview 54, 30 January 1967. 29pp.
Joint continental defence with the Americans. Lack of support in the cabinet. Returns to late 1951: Canadian participation in the Korean War and our troops in NATO. Council of Europe,

**Interview 55, 9 February 1967. 22pp.**
Remarks in Parliament regarding the West Coast fishery and the Americans. Attacks the government on the sorry state of Canadian defence. Experiences difficulty as an opposition M.P. in obtaining military information. Expresses positive feelings about the Commonwealth and advocates additional efforts in Defence research.

**Interview 56, 14 February 1967. 26p.**
Comments on "pairing" M.P.'s in the House and the Party Whip, etc. Speech on Civil Defence. The defence of Europe without Germany impractical, must rely on the Americans for the defence of North America. Militia in the civil defence role.

**Interview 57, 23 February 1967. 28pp.**
Pearkes speaks in the pipeline debate of 1956. As Minister of National Defence instituted weekly meetings with the Chiefs of Staff, Deputy Ministers, etc. High cost of retaining Canadian troops in Europe. Remarks that he supported Diefenbaker for leader. Comments on Fleming, Drew, and Hees. Constituency affairs. In April, 1957, major speech in Parliament on the necessity to give direction to defence. Advocated more co-operation and less controversy. Felt that in 1959 Diefenbaker seemed unsure of government direction.

**Interview 58, 9 March 1967. 29pp.**

**Interview 59, 23 March 1967. 27pp. (plus 10pp. Pearkes diary)**
Early days in office. Quotes interview with Gen. Foulkes regarding the previous government. Unsuccessful attempt to form Defence Committee of the Cabinet. Diefenbaker did not get on at all well at his first NATO meeting in Paris. NORAD, its establishment and command structure. Unfavourable publicity about NORAD. Control of nuclear weapons and the right of a commander to act quickly, if necessary. Diary: Political campaigning in 1957 and the many functions attended as Minister of National Defence.

**Interview 60, 31 March 1967. 26pp.**

**Interview 61, 5 April 1967. 18pp.**
Canadian role: tactical nuclear weapons in Europe and in Canada. Canadian fighter aircraft, the
Bomarc missile, and the Avro Arrow, which he finally recommends against. American Air Force to train in Canada, Bomars to fill-in for the Arrow. The threat of a Russian attack.

Acceptance of nuclear weapons, Bomarc B. Public view of defence and worries about escalation of the war threat. Blames Howard Green (External Affairs), to some extent, in making life with the Americans more difficult. The problem of advisers to the Min. of National Defence. Interview 63 - does not exist as a result of mis-numbering.

Interview 64, 28 April 1967. 28pp.
Defence Policy. Defence committee deliberations, 1960, often overtaken by events. The threat of attack and the Air Force response. Doubts that Diefenbaker grasped the defence situation.Pearkes attempted to keep the Canadian forces up-to-date. Control of nuclear weapons on Canadian soil. Mentions the long discussion process required by Diefenbaker in cabinet meetings. Thinks that Conservatives lacked a certain confidence.


The beginning of integration of the armed forces. Unification of command was most important. Care had to be taken not to break down tradition; move slowly. Defence co-operation with the Americans. Civil Defence for the militia.

Comments on Diefenbaker, in Opposition. Relationship with Quebec. Comments on the Cabinet. Process of obtaining money, budgets, the Treasury Board. Defence policy and deterrence. Attacks on the government regarding nuclear weapons. Considers that Diefenbaker had an inability to listen. Comments on Diefenbaker's contradictory policies.

Interview 68, 26 July 1967. 15pp.

Interview 69, 3 August 1967. 29pp.
Comments on defence policy pre-1957 and its application as a means of "purchasing influence". Pearkes' attitude toward government and governing. Discusses his financial problems on becoming Lieutenant-Governor of British Columbia. Returns to the Bomar system - reasons for accepting. Believed that defence requirements were more important than Canada's world image, as proposed by Howard Green. Problems inherent in the acquisition of new weapon systems. The bomber/missile threat.
Interview 70, 19 October 1967. 17pp.
Comments on a return visit to Passchendaele. Travels as Lt.-Governor. Official calls by officials, foreign dignitaries, etc. The selection of A.D.C.s. Rhodes Scholarship selection. Patronage as the Queen's representative. Guest list for social events.

Box # 6

Interview 71, 31 October 1967. 29pp.

Interview 72, 22 November 1967. 27pp.
Swearing-in ceremony as Lt.-Governor. Various topics regarding the position as Lt.-Gov. Position vis-a-vis the Governor General. Receives news of his appointment as Queen's Representative. Tours the Province. Trip to England.

Interview 73, 11 December 1967. 28pp.
Christmas at Government House. Entertaining the Staff. Church services. Garden Party at Government House, State Ball, State Dinners and the importance of seating, etc.

Interview 74, 6 November 1968. 22pp.

Interview 75, - May 1969. 7pp.
Maj.-Gen. Pearkes comments on first chapter of his biography by Dr. Roy. Information about Pearkes' family and early life.

Interview 76, 27 May 1969. 11pp.
Further description of Berkhamstead Farm. Description of farm life, circa 1907.

Berkhamstead Farm, neighbours, describes surrounding district. Homesteading at Clearwater, very hard-up. Mother and sister arrive. Relationship with Father in England. Separation of Mother and Father.

Interview 78, 13 November 1970. 27pp.
Royal Military College, 1929. Mentions a number of officers and former cadets. Army life in Ottawa, 1930's.

Interview 79, 6 July 1971. 11pp.
Interview 80, 13 December 1971, 19pp
Returns to the decision to seek election to Parliament. Details of nomination, first campaign. Family life as an M.P. was considerably disrupted.

Box #7

Record ID: 00000232
My Army recollections (Great War): C.B.C. programme "Canada in Flanders" [sound recording] / by George R. Pearkes; interviewer unknown
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Transcript (49 typewritten pages) in archives.
No tape held.
Recorded on original sound tape reel on unknown date (tape not held in this archive).

C.B.C. programme, "Canada in Flanders". Experiences in trench warfare, as bombing officer, Regina Trench, Passchendaele, etc.

Record ID: 00000233
Birthday opinions of "men and women on the street": radio station CJVI, Victoria [sound recording] / by George R. Pearkes; interviewer unknown
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Transcript (6 typewritten pages) in archives.
No tape held.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 1966 (not held in this archive).
Unknown (interviewer)

Opinions of Maj-Gen Pearkes by the "man in the street": CJVI Radio.

Record ID: 00000234
My political recollections [sound recording] / by George R. Pearkes; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy and Dr. Neil Swainson
1 sound cassette (ca. 77 min.): standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 77 min.): 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 1, 1968.
By Dr. R.H. Roy and Dr. Neil Swainson. Anecdote. Involvement in provincial politics, 1940/50's. Relationship to federal politics. Some provincial and federal political personalities.

Box #8

Record ID: 00000235
My Army and Political Recollections (sound recording) / by George R. Pearkes; interviewed by Dr. J.L. Granatstein.
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (57 typewritten pages) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Apr. 7, 1970 (not held in this archive).


Interviews about M/Gen Pearkes

Box #7

Record ID: 00000212
Abelson, M., Mrs.,
My recollections [sound recording] / by Mrs. M. Abelson ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 70 min.) ; standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 70 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 19, 1967.

Anecdotes about guests at Government House. Running the household. The public. Relations
with the staff. Maj-Gen and Mrs. Pearkes as a married couple, the atmosphere at Government House.

Record ID: 00000213
Auger, Fred
My recollections [sound recording] / by Fred Auger ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 10, 1966.

Mr. Fred Auger, 10 May 1966. 22pp.
Account of the beginning of the troop of Boy Scouts started by Maj-Gen Pearkes in Calgary in the early twenties. GRP was an inspiration to the boys. Comments on former members of the Troop. Impression of Pearkes, very calm, disciplined, organized.

Record ID: 00000214
Bostock, William N., Brig.,
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by William N. Bostock ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 50 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 50 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 1, 1966.

First met GRP when joined the 1st Cdn. Div. in January 1941. Found that Pearkes could inspire people to do what he wanted. Had the ability to make people feel that they were "the most important part of the war”. When Pearkes did not get command of the 1st Canadian Corps, suspects the reasons. Comments on high-ranking personalities. The Aleutian campaign.

Record ID: 00000215
Cheng, Roger, Capt.,
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Roger Cheng ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 75 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 75 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Feb. 22, 1971.

Secret Chinese-Canadian training camp in the Okanagan, run by W. (Mike) Kendall. After
training, sent to India, then Australia to gather intelligence. Commando training, demolitions, wireless technique. Further training in Australia. Undercover work in Borneo.

Record ID: 00000216
Clark, S. Findlay, Lt.-Gen., C.B.E., 1909-
My Army and political recollections [sound recording] / by S. Findlay Clark ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
6 sound cassettes (ca. 6 hours, 55 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Five original sound tape reels (ca. 6 hours, 55 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

Lt.-Gen. S.F. Clark, 16 June 1967. (No transcript.)
Came to know Maj.-Gen. Pearkes quite well when he was Chief of the General Staff and Pearkes was Minister of National Defence. Discusses nuclear war-heads for Bomarc and Honest John. Avro Arrow problem. Pearkes' policy of civil defence for the militia and possibly for the regular force. Pearkes favoured some integration for the services. Pro-American attitude of Pearkes logically led to American equipment for the Canadian services.

Decision to scrap the Avro Arrow fighter aircraft. Attitude to nuclear weapons in Canada. Small atomic weapons. Bilingualism in the forces. The army's Bobcat, not really financially feasible.


Defence, ministerial meetings, NATO, other treaties. U.S. stockpiles of weapons, particularly nuclear. Cost of manpower in the armed forces. Excess of commitments over finances and personnel.
Record ID: 00000217
Dixon, C. Garfield, Cdr., 1921-
My recollections [sound recordings] / by C. Garfield Dixon ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
Summary of transcripts in archives.
Transcripts are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcripts (8, 16, and 11 typewritten pages) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Nov. 6, 1969, Dec. 1969, and Feb. 9, 1970 (not held in this archive).

Commander C. Garfield Dixon, 6 Nov. 1969. 8 pp.
Comments on previous Lt.-Governors. Pearkes' office arrangements ruffled feathers.
Disagreement with former Lt.-Gov. Frank Ross.


Record ID: 00000218
Foulkes, Charles, Gen., C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1903-
My Army and political recollections [sound recording] / by Charles Foulkes ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono. Summary of tape also in archives.
[2 original sound tape reels, received 1997, not yet transferred to cassette].
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Three original sound tape reels (ca. 45 min. each) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel March 9, 1967, June 5, 1967.


Box #8

Civil Defence background and the Dept. of National Defence. Costly plans for the survival of the government. Critical of Diefenbaker and nuclear weapon responsibilities. Practical problems of the provincial/federal civil defence. Evacuation and fall-out in relation to cities. The beginning of

Record ID: 00000219
Fulton, Edmund Davie, The Hon., P.C. (Can.), Q.C., 1916-
My political recollections [sound recording] / by Edmund Davie Fulton ; interviewed by Reginald H. Roy
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (34 typewritten pages) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 10, 1972.

Hon. E. Davie Fulton, 10 May 1972. 34pp.
Pearkes as a new Member of Parliament, as a participant in caucus committees. Relations with Diefenbaker. Canadian influence with the United States on defence matters. Diefenbaker lacked empathy with the military. Arrow cancellation. Civil Defence. Pearkes' contribution to national defence, including a very open mind.

Record ID: 00000220
Graham, Howard D., Lt.-Gen., O.C., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1898-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Howard D. Graham ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 70 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 70 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 24, 1970.


Record ID: 00000221
Green, Howard Charles, The Hon., P.C. (Can.), M.P., 1895-
Political recollections [sound recording] / by Howard Green ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 45 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 45 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 16, 1971.


Record ID: 00000222
Harkness, Douglas S., The Hon., P.C. (Can.), M.P., 1903-
Military and political recollections [sound recording] / by Douglas Harkness ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (36 typewritten pages and 5 pp. notes by R.H. Roy) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 22, 1966 (not held in this archive).

Hon. Douglas Harkness, 22 June 1966. 36pp. (also 5pp. notes, R.H. Roy)
Comments on Pearkes and his association with the Militia in Calgary, in command of the 1st Cdn. Division, and some of the training exercises. Anecdotes. The character of Pearkes, as an M.P. in Ottawa. The Ottawa scene. Necessity for cancellation of the Avro Arrow. NATO. Minister of National Defence.

Record ID: 00000223
Howsam, George Roberts, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B., M.C., 1895-1988
My military recollections [sound recording] / by George Howsam ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 46 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 46 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
See also June 2, 1972 interview.
Recorded on original sound tape reel May 11, 1966.

Record ID: 00000224
Howsam, George Roberts, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B., M.C., 1895-1988
My military recollections (initially, W.W. I) [sound recording] / by George R. Howsam ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (20 typewritten pages) in archives.
See also R.H. Roy collection of interviews under ID 00000192-4 inclusive.
See also May 11, 1966 interview.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 2, 1972.
(With Auger. See Reel #48.)
Experiences with Pearkes in the 1920/30's. Planning at National Defence Headquarters in the
1930's. Howsam's early service life. Joined the army in 1916, then the Royal Flying Corps.
Training in Toronto.

Record ID: 00000225
Kendall, F.W., Lt.-Col.,
My Army and S.O.E. recollections [sound recording] / by F.W. Kendall ; interviewed by Dr.
Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 42 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 42 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel July 16, 1968.

Worked in Hong Kong for the British Secret Service in the pre-war period. Mining engineer by
profession. Organized the escape of some important people from Hong Kong in 1941. Escaped to
India and established a guerrilla training school at Poona. Part of the S.O.E. (Special Operations
Executive). Describes students, training. Established training camp in Canada. A civilian,
promoted himself to a Major when he reported to Pearkes' headquarters and then to Lt. Colonel.
Camp opposite Summerland, B.C. Practised covert operations on the B.C. coast. Claims that
Pearkes had a wonderful time when he visited their camp. The trained group was originally to be
infiltrated into Hong Kong, but ended in Borneo. Roger Cheng (Vancouver) became officer
commanding the operation. Comments on present day Hong Kong.

Record ID: 00000227
Ladner, Leon J., Q.C., 1884-
My political recollections [sound recording] / by Leon J. Ladner ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald
H. Roy
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (28 typewritten pages) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Apr. 5, 1972 (not held in this archive).

Mr. Leon J. Ladner, 5 April 1972. 28pp.
Conservative Party recruited Pearkes in 1945. Political scene in 1945, provincial vs. federal
wings. Columbia River Treaty. Pearkes support for Diefenbaker. Mentions Arthur Meighen,
George Drew, Howard Green. The election of a new leader. Peculiarities of Diefenbaker's
character. Considers that Diefenbaker vacillated to the extent that it destroyed his Cabinet.

Record ID: 00000229
Miller, Frank R., Air Chief Marshal, C.B.E., 1908-
My political and military recollections, [sound recording] / by Frank R. Miller ; interviewed by
Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 95 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 95 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.; also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 20, 1967.

Experiences with Maj-Gen Pearkes: non-existent until Pearkes became a politician and Miller,
Deputy Minister of National Defence. Diefenbaker's feelings toward "advisers and experts". The
Canadian NATO contribution and the necessity for it. The Avro Arrow and the bomber threat.
The Bomarc system and its rationale. Pearkes' style of management vs. the American style. Civil
Defence.

Record ID: 00000230
Molyneux, R.,
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by R. Molyneux ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H.
Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 20 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 20 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives. (Held as
Reel 10, with G.R. Pearkes interview no. 18.)
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 11, 1965.

Mr. R. Molyneux, 11 December 1965. 11pp.
(N.B. This interview is at the beginning of Reel #10 before Pearkes Interview #18.)
First met Pearkes when he led a raid on the Germans in 1916/17. Pearkes used to walk along the
edge of the trench; quite fearless. Molyneux became Pearkes' batman. Vimy Ridge,
Passchendaele, where both he and Pearkes were wounded. A few comments on Pearkes, the
soldier.

Box #6

Record ID: 00000231
Pearkes, Blytha (Mrs. G.R.), 1901-
My recollections [sound recording] / by Mrs. G.R. Pearkes ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
3 sound cassettes (ca. 230 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 230 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

Born 18 March 1901, Bow Valley, Alberta. Moved to Vancouver as a child, then to Sidney,


(Reel #23 - Part Side 1 and Side 2, ca. 60 min., after Interview #42.)

Box #7

Record ID: 00000237
Pearkes, Hilda, Miss,
My recollections [sound recording] / by Hilda Pearkes ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 40 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 40 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Sept. 30, 1965.

Family life in England; childhood, parents, the move to Canada. Living on a homestead in Alberta. Relocated to Victoria and, finally, to North Saanich.

Record ID: 00000238
Pearkes, John A., 1931-
My recollections [sound recording] / by John A. Pearkes ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 120 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 120 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

(Reel #50, Side 2.)
Childhood, his father as a family man. The Pearkes family travels from the perspective of a boy. Life in England during the war. Maj-Gen Pearkes' reaction to a number of events.

Comments about Maj-Gen Pearkes as G.O.C. in C., Pacific Command. Resignation. Enters politics as a Member of Parliament.
Box 8

Record ID: 00000239
Plant, John Lawrence, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B.E., A.F.C., 1910-
My Air Force and aircraft production recollections [sound recording] / by John L. Plant ;
interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Science Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 18, 1972.

Air Vice-Marshal John L. Plant, 18 December 1972. 32pp. (notes and letter to Dr. R.H. Roy) The
beginning of NORAD. The Avro Arrow programme which contained some very expensive
systems. Acted as General Manager of Avro. Americans reluctant to buy the aircraft. The Arrow
took so long to develop that the Americans had their own fighter on the drawing board before the
Arrow was ready. Some comment on the apparent inability of Canadians to effectively produce
highly sophisticated weapons systems. Aircraft vs. Bomarc controversy.

Record ID: 00000240
Pollard, M.E., Lt.-Gen.,
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by M.E. Pollard ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H.
Roy
2 sound cassettes (ca. 2 hours, 35 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 2 hours, 35 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

Pollard joined the Royal Air Force in 1938. Transferred to the R.C.A.F. in Nov. 1944. Acted as
Forward Bomber Control Officer for the 1st Cdn. Army in Europe. Describes service with the 1st
Cdn. Air Division with the NATO forces and their use and problems. Tactical nuclear weapons,
political constraint. Canadians were very highly trained, and it showed! Comments on the
Bomarc B nuclear missiles. Feels that equipment roles often confused because of the perceived
morality of using nuclear weapons in differing situations. Our CF 104's were only really capable
in the nuclear role. Problems of command/NATO.

was a fairly accurate weapon. Tactical use under Canadian command. A relatively inexpensive
defence system. The Sage radar system, Canadian designed and very good. Political discussion
of the Bomarc. They did keep the battle area well to the North, better than fighter aircraft could.
Comments on some of the politics.

Box #9
Record ID: 00000241
Potts, Arthur Edward, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., 1890-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Arthur E. Potts ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 60 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Oct. 15, 1971.

Maj-Gen A.E. Potts, 15 October 1971. 27pp.
Posted to Victoria in 1942. Military preparedness more in order to placate the civilian population than due to real military danger. Comments on training in general. Cancelled the armoured train at Terrace. Critical of Ottawa "Brass". N.M.R.A. problems. McNaughton, Mackenzie King. In his opinion the "Zombies" were badly treated, but were, in fact, only doing what the government told them to do. McNaughton tried very hard to get senior officers to obtain more "active" soldiers - a lost cause. Mentions training in England to 1942, Peakes, Crerar, and others.

Record ID: 00000242
Price, Charles Basil, Maj.-Gen., C.B., D.S.O., D.C.M. 1889-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Charles B. Price ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 60 min.) : standard 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape also in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 52 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 12, 1966.

First met Maj-Gen Peakes in the 1930's in Ottawa. Some friction with Peakes when they were brigade commanders in the 1st Canadian Div. in England. Traits of Peakes' character.

Record ID: 00000243
Rennie, C.H.
My political recollections [sound recording] / by cC.H. Rennie ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 95 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono. Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 95 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 1966.

Mr. C.H. Rennie, June 1966. 27pp.
Early political meetings with Peakes and his operating style. Running the election campaign. Peakes, the politician, possessed the "common touch". Peakes always in control, especially of himself. Comments on other candidates. Minister of National Defence. Rennie's opinion.
Record ID: 00000244
Roberts, Richard H.N.,
My political recollections [sound recording] / by Richard H.N. Roberts ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Aug. 7, 1968.

Mr. Richard H.N. Roberts, 7 August 1968. 26pp. (and 5pp. notes)
Became Secretary and later Executive Assistant to Pearkes when he was Min. of Nat. Defence.
Pearkes' operational style. Diefenbaker generally against the military, but laterally quite indecisive. Notes that Pearkes suffered considerable restraint because of this. Feels that Pearkes was a clever politician, always amiable and courteous. Mentions External Affairs. The Avro Arrow affair. Considers that Diefenbaker's expertise limited to domestic politics. Pearkes and the Royal Military College. Civil Defence and the Militia.

Record ID: 00000245
Smith, Douglas, Air Vice-Marshal, C.B.E.,
My Air Force recollections [sound recording] / by Douglas Smith ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
Summary of transcript in archives.
Transcript is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
No reel or cassette held.
Transcript (21 typewritten pages) in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel Dec. 4, 1972 (not held in this archives).

Air Vice-Marshal Douglas Smith, 4 December 1972. 21pp.
The Avro Arrow. The requirement for that type of aircraft. Blames the Air Force for so strongly advocating an aircraft that the country could not afford. Canadian air defence. The Arrow cancellation.

Record ID: 00000246
Spry, Daniel Charles, Maj.-Gen., C.B.E., D.S.O., 1913-
My Army recollections [sound recording] / by Daniel C. Spry ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 55 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Social Sciences Research Centre collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 55 min. ) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.
Recorded on original sound tape reel June 15, 1967.

Met Pearkes in Calgary while still a boy. As a young officer Spry studied the current military writers, encouraged by Pearkes, as Director of Military Training. In England 1939/40. Training

Record ID: 00000247
Sutherland Brown, Clare, Mrs.,
My military recollections [sound recording] / by Clare Sutherland Brown ; interviewed by Dr. Reginald H. Roy
1 sound cassette (ca. 80 min.) : standard, 2 track, mono.
Summary of tape in archives.
Tape is in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
One original sound tape reel (ca. 80 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono. also in archives.

Mrs. Clare Sutherland Brown, January 1966. 17pp.
First met Pearkes in Victoria when Brig-Gen. J. Sutherland Brown was District Officer Commanding. Relationship of "Buster" Brown with McNaughton. Mentions Pearkes and his mother and sister. Comments on some peripheral problems in being Lt.-Governor, social ones included. Finances a problem for Pearkes as Queen's representative. Anecdotes.

Dr. Barney Singer Interview

Mr. William Jacobs

Polish Underground

Survivor of the Holocaust

Record ID: 00000196
Jacobs, William
My recollections of the Holocaust and the Polish underground [sound recording] / by William Jacobs ; interviewed by Barney Singer
2 sound cassettes (ca. 165 min.) : standard mono.
Summary of tapes also in archives.
Tapes are in the Dr. Reginald H. Roy collection of interviews.
Two original sound tape reels (ca. 165 min.) : 1 7/8 ips, 2 track, mono.
Recorded on original sound tape reels Nov. 28, 1980, Victoria, B.C.

(Reel 1, Side 1) Describes working on construction projects under a "capo" in 1944/1945. Medical experiments on concentration camp inmates in 1943. Continuous hunger made people behave as animals. Fortunate in having a job in the blacksmith shop. Potatoes used as the medium of exchange. Professional class among the prison population least likely to stay alive; not ruthless enough in survivor skills. Polish civilian employees of the camp would occasionally throw food to the prisoners. Gypsies were treated the worst of all. Transferred to Czechoslovakia. Sent to Buchenwald where all prisoners had their clothes removed and replaced with one blanket. Usual meal was soup and one pound of bread for ten persons. Robbed fellow
prisoners of food. Malnutrition began to affect the mind. Sneaked out of camp with a work group sent to a camp near Stuttgart. Better food there. Became leader of a burial party; usually buried twenty to thirty bodies every day. Sent to another camp near the Italian-German border -- no rations -- slowly starving to death, ate grass. Slated to be shot, but at 10:00 A.M. on Apr. 29, 1945 the German guards told them that they could leave as the Americans were approaching. Americans handed out Red Cross parcels, some prisoners died from overeating. Given a pistol by an American officer, and, mad with revenge, Jacobs killed the families of two German Schutzstaffel members. Given boots from a German officer. Jewish refugee centre in Munich where he was given a German apartment (after throwing out the occupants). (45:00) (Reel 2, Side 2) As a prisoner, in 1942, he worked on the autobahn. One of six prisoners who stole a guard's lunch. Beaten and sentenced to be hanged, but managed to escape despite bullet wounds in the leg. Found by the Polish underground, had to prove himself by killing a German soldier and stealing his weapons. Captured by the Germans after a raid on a police station. Proclaiming his innocence, he was tortured for four days, then sent to a political and criminal labour camp where the rule was: work or be executed. Continues story from May 1945. In that month he met a Jewish girl in a refugee camp. They decided to return to Poland to see if any of his family were alive. Approaching Poland they learned that the Poles were still persecuting Jews. Trouble with both the Polish and Czech police. (45:00) Eventually returned to Germany where he and the girl were married. Dealt in the black market and in guns for Israel. Through an American soldier was able to contact his uncle in Paterson, New Jersey. Uncle sent visa, entered the United States in 1947. Worked for an Italian tailor for twenty-five dollars per month. Soon obtained a far better paying union job. Eventually in the late 1960's he was able to start his own coat business. Sold his interest in that business after suffering a heart attack while on vacation in Qualicum Beach, B.C. Moved to Victoria, B.C. Attitude is still very anti-German and pro-Israel. Feels that his survival was a miracle. (30:00)
1. Interview with Mrs. Olga Ghosh by Robert Winkenhower, 1 audio cassette (ca. 60 min.) : instantaneous, analogue, May 30, 1990
Box 1:
Military Oral History Interviews
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Spring 2005

1.1 Calder, John M. (Bill)
Interviewed by Jennifer Nicks 16 Feb 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- 1 mini cd
- folder with synopsis, forms

1.2 Chance, Peter
a) Interviewed by Marshall Horne 10 Mar 2005
- 2 audio cassettes
- forms, synopsis
b) Interviewed by Ned DeBeck 19 Feb, 12 Mar 2005
- forms, synopsis, photos
- cd is with Howard file

1.4 Charles, John A.
Interviewed by Marshall Horne 04 Mar 2005
- 2 audio cassettes
- forms, synopsis

1.5 Craig, Kathleen
Interviewed by Kate Sinclair 23 Feb 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- forms, synopsis

1.6 Eggenberger, Mary
Interviewed by Kate Sinclair 03 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- forms, synopsis

1.7 Foot, George
Interviewed by Peter Scales 11 Feb, 17 Feb 2005
- 3 audio cassettes
- forms, synopsis, photo
- computer 3.5" floppy disk is with Skaalen file

1.8 Gordon, Hugh
Interviewed by Cameron White 12 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- synopsis, forms

1.9 Hayes, Godfrey (Skinny)

1.10 a) Interviewed by Cameron White 25 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- synopsis, forms
b) Interviewed by Ned DeBeck 24 Feb 2005
1.11 Howard Art P.
Interviewed by Ned DeBeck 26 Feb 2005
- forms, synopsis
- cd is with Howard file

1.12 Kinnis, Arthur
Interviewed by Gene Johnson 11 Feb, 07 Mar 2005
- synopsis, forms
- cd (also includes Hayes, Chance)

1.13 Ladbury, Robert (Bob)
Interviewed by Jennifer Nicks 15 Feb, 23 Feb 2005
- 3 audio cassettes
- 3 mini cds
- folder with synopsis, forms

1.14 Lane, Barbara
Interviewed by Kate Sinclair 14 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- synopsis, forms

1.15 Lang, Jim
Interviewed by Gene Johnson 13 Mar 2005
- synopsis, forms
- cd is with Kinnis file

1.16 Pitts, Herb
Interviewed by Bryce Miller 04 Apr 2005
- 2 audio cassettes
- forms, synopsis

1.17 Raine, James N.
Interviewed by Peter Scales 04 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- forms, synopsis
- computer 3.5" floppy disk is with Skaalen file

1.18 Reeves, Ken
Interviewed by Bryce Miller 03 Feb 2005
- 2 audio cassettes
- forms, synopsis

1.19 Reid, Norman Leslie
Interviewed by Gene Johnson 10 Mar 2005 (part deleted)
- synopsis, forms
- cd is with Kinnis file

1.20 Resch, Gerald
Interviewed by Bryce Miller 04 Mar 2005
- 1 audio cassette
- forms, synopsis

1.21 Rodney, William
1.22  a) Interviewed by Nicholas Allen  09 Mar 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms, synopsis
b) Interviewed by Jennifer Nicks  10 Mar 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - 1 mini cd
   - folder with synopsis, forms

1.23  Rogers, Robert Gordon
Interviewed by John Brandon Graham-Knight  25 Feb 2004
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms
* trial run from a different course/instructor (Dr. David Zimmerman)

1.24-  Sager, Arthur
1.25  a) Interviewed by Gene Johnson  17 Feb 2005
   - synopsis, forms
   - cd is with Kinnis file
b) Interviewed by Nicholas Allen  22 Mar 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms, synopsis

1.26  Semmens, Edmund J. (Ted)
Interviewed by Cameron White  03 Mar 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms, synopsis

1.27  Skaalen, Lloyd
Interviewed by Peter Scales  09 Mar, 10 Mar 2005
   - 2 audio cassettes
   - computer 3.5" floppy disk (also includes Foot, Raine)
   - forms, synopsis

1.28  Spooner, Robert
Interviewed by Jennifer Nicks  17 Feb 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - 1 mini cd
   - folder with forms, synopsis

1.29  Welland, Robert
Interviewed by Marshall Horne  28 Feb 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms, synopsis

1.30  Wilson, Gerald Einar
Interviewed by Nicholas Allen  07 Mar 2005
   - 1 audio cassette
   - forms, synopsis

Military Oral History Term Papers
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Spring 2005

1.31  Allen, Nicholas
“Oral History vs. the Written Record”
DeBeck, Ned
“The Power, Trials, and Tribulations of Oral History: Evaluating Oral Sources through the Battle of the Atlantic”

Horne, Marshall S.
“The Battle of the Atlantic: The Advantages and Disadvantages of Oral History”

Johnson, Gene M.
“Evaders and Prisoners of War”

[Miller, Bryce]
“The Korean War: A study in Oral History”

Nicks, Jennifer
“Experiences Flying in the Air Force: Oral Sources in Comparison with Secondary Sources”

Scales, Peter
“Foot, Skaalen and Raine and the Early Cold War”

Sinclair, Kate
“Oral History: Three Wives of the Military and What their Story adds to the Historical Record”

White, Cameron
“The Royal Canadian Navy and the Battle of the Atlantic: An Oral History”
"Aboriginal Veterans"

Veterans interviewed:
- Alfred, Taiaiake G.
- Blackwolf, Richard
- Flett, Victor C.
- George, Ron
- Gray Thorne, Joe
- Wilson, Reginald G.

Interviewed by Jessica Wood

1 CD:
- Interviews
- Plus tss of summaries and permission forms
Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Fall 2006

11 Files

1.1 "Canadian Naval Aviation in the Post-war Period: Oral History vs. Secondary Sources"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Brygadyr, Stan (Colonel)
  – Fotheringham, Brant (Captain)
  – Harzan, Herb (Commander)
  – Veronneau, Jean (Brigadier-General)
Interviewed by Titania Guterson
6 CDs:
  – Interviews (4)
  – Summaries (1)
  – Term paper (1)
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.2 "Women in the Military"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Everard, Jean (Pilot Officer)
  – Frewen, Catherine (Captain)
  – Wojciechowski, Sharon
Interviewed by Taryn Jones
1 CD:
  – Term paper
3 Audio cassettes:
  – Interviews
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.3 "For You, The War Is Over"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Lereverend, Alfred
  – Puetter, Dietrich
  – Smith, James
Interviewed by Lucas Ker
2 CDs:
  – Interviews and write-ups (1)
  – Term paper (1)
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.4 "Riding to the Rescue During an International Embarrassment: An Investigation of the October Crisis of 1970"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Berezowski, J.C. (Lieutenant-Colonel)
  – Resch, Gerry (Major)
1.5 [NORAD]
Veterans interviewed:
- Patterson, Gerry
- Myles, Don
- Reid, Thomas
Interviewed by John Mooney
2 Floppy disks (3.5"):  
- Final draft (1)
- Summaries (1)
5 Audio cassettes:  
- Myles (2)
- Patterson (2)
- Reid (1)
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.6 "The Canadian Army In Korea, 1950-1953: Oral History and Memory of Canada's Forgotten War"
Veterans interviewed:
- Bishop, John (Lieutenant-Colonel)
- Peacock, Robert (Colonel)
- Reeves, Ken (Lieutenant-Colonel)
Interviewed by Kenan Murseli
3 CDs:
- Interviews
1 Floppy disk (3.5"):  
- Term paper
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.7 "Provide Preserve Protect: Naval Crisis Management and the Canadian Identity"
Veterans interviewed:
- Allen, Robin (Captain)
- Maze, Randy (Commander)
- Scotten, Ken (Captain)
Interviewed by Marie Perry
5 CDs:
- Interviews (3) w/summaries and additional material
- Term paper (1)
- OP 2CAN Pictures (1) (from Maze)
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms
Maze has tss bio and published article with photos
Scotten has tss of Michael Scotten Journal (son of Kenneth)

1.8 "Oral History and Canadian Involvement in United Nations Peace Keeping Operations"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Berezowski, J. Cecil
  – Mitchell, P.J.
  – Phillips, Barry
Interviewed by Will Pratt
4 CDs:
  – Interviews and summaries (3)
  – Term paper (1)
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.9 "British War Brides"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Smith, Peggy
  – Tayler, Edith
  – Wilkes, Sylvia
Interviewed by Kristin Price
2 CDs:
  – Peggy Smith interviews (1)
  – Term paper (1)
2 Audio cassettes:
  – Taylor, Wilkes interviews
Plus tss of summaries and permission forms

1.10 "Independent Dependents—The Wives of the No. 1 Air Force Division in Europe"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Baker, Kay
  – Eggenberger, Mary
  – Myles, Beth
  – Patterson, Gerry
Interviewed by Allison Smith
2 CDs:
  – Interviews and write-ups (1)
  – Term paper (1)
Plus tss of permission forms

1.11 "The Repercussions of Bomber Command"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Emmet, Norman
  – Hudson, Doug
  – MacGregor, James
Interviewed by Craig Young
6 CDs:
  – Interviews (4)
  – Summary (1)
– Term paper (1)
Plus tss of permission forms
2 audio compact discs, "War Stories: A Life Remembered", interview with Thomas Miller, recorded in 1987.
SC141
Military Oral History
Acc No: 2008-015
1 File
- 1 audio cassette, "Purse, Ross", [2008], 90 minutes.
- TS, "Interview of Ross Purse Preliminary List of Questions", n.d., 1 l.
- map with holo. notes, "Hong Kong, Dec. 1941", n.d.
- photocopy of TLS, from Capt. H. Brendall, R.A.M.C., Sept. 9, 1945, 1 l.
- TS, "Oeyama", n.d., 8 l.
- colour photograph of Ross Purse and his decorations, n.d.
Box 1:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Fall 2005

1.1 Bowen, Sarah
"The Cuban Missile Crisis: Examined Through Oral History"
Veterans interviewed:
- Bell, Ron, BGen
- Brodeur, Nigel, Adm
- Eggenberger, John
Interviewed by Sarah Bowen
3 audio cassettes:
- Interviews (3)
1 floppy disk:
- Summaries (3)
- Term paper (1)
TSS of summaries and permission forms

1.2 Chapman, Matthew
"Oral History and the Recollections of R.C.A.F. Bomber Crews"
Veterans interviewed:
- Baillie, James
- Hudson, Doug
- Irwin, Ross
Interviewed by Matthew Chapman
2 compact discs:
- Summaries (3)
- Term paper (2)
TSS of summaries, permission forms and term paper

1.3 Genest, Natalie
Veterans interviewed:
- Everard, Jean
- Fieldhouse, Norma
- Frewen, Catherine
Interviewed by Natalie Genest
TSS of summaries and permission forms

1.4 Goertzen, Judith
"Bats and Bananas: POW experiences in German, Russian and Japanese Prisoner of War Camps during WWII"
Veterans interviewed:
- Leir, Richard H., RAdm
- LeReverend, Alfred H., Pte
- Puettler, Dietrich B., Oberleutnant
Interviewed by Judith Goertzen
3 audio cassettes:
- Interviews (3)
1 floppy disk:
- Summaries (3)
- Term paper (1)
TSS of summaries, permission forms and term paper

1.5 Nielsen, Alyssum
Veterans interviewed:
- Ramshaw, Betty
- Tanner, Beryl
- Taylor, Edith
- Wilkes, Sylvia
Interviewed by Alyssum Nielsen
TSS of summaries and permission forms

1.6 Walton, Louise
Veterans interviewed:
- George, Robert E., VAdm
- McLean, Douglas J., Cmdre
- Summers, Kenneth J., RAdm
Interviewed by Louise Walton
TSS of summaries and permission forms

1.7 Weatherbe, Steve
“Challenges in Armoured Warfare in North West Europe: An Oral History Perspective”
Veterans interviewed:
- Rogers, Robert G.
- Sheppard, Patrick
- Tedlie, A. James
Interviewed by Steve Weatherbe
1 floppy disk:
- Summaries (3)
- Term paper (1)

1.8 Wood, Jessica
“Warriors Remember: Aboriginal Veterans & Oral History In Canada”
Veterans interviewed:
- Clark, Ernest
- McKenzie, Claude
- Planes, Frank
Interviewed by Jessica Wood
3 audio cassettes:
- Interviews (3)
1 compact disc:
- Summaries (7)
- Term paper (3)
Military Oral History Term Papers  
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Spring 2005

1.9 Term Papers:
- "The Power, Trials, and Tribulations of Oral History: Evaluating Oral Sources through the Battle of the Atlantic" by Ned DeBeck
- "Evaders and Prisoners of War" by Gene M. Johnson

1.10 Term Papers:
- "Experiences Flying in the Air Force: Oral Sources in Comparison with Secondary Sources" by Jennifer Nicks
- "Foot, Skaalen and Raine and the Early Cold War" by Peter Scales
- "The Royal Canadian Navy and the Battle of the Atlantic: An Oral History" by Cameron White

1.11 Term Papers with Notes from VAdm Ret’d N.D. Brodeur:
- "The Korean War: A Study in Oral History" by [Bryce Miller]
- "Experiences Flying in the Air Force: Oral Sources in Comparison with Secondary Sources" by Jennifer Nicks
- "The Royal Canadian Navy and the Battle of the Atlantic: An Oral History" by Cameron White

1.12 VHS videocassette:
- The Canadian Navy and the Cuban Missile Crisis; Capt D.P. Ryan, VAdm N.D. Brodeur, Capt C.P. Nixon; (with 1992 epilogue); Policy Publishers Inc.; (Donated by VAdm Ret’d N.D. Brodeur, December 2005)
Box 1:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Fall 2005

1.1 Chapman, Matthew
"Oral History and the Recollections of R.C.A.F. Bomber Crews"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Baillie, James
   – Hudson, Doug
   – Irwin, Ross
Interviewed by Matthew Chapman
4 audio cassettes:
   – Interviews (3)

1.2 Genest, Natalie
Veterans interviewed:
   – Everard, Jean
   – Fieldhouse, Norma
   – Frewen, Catherine
Interviewed by Natalie Genest
3 audio cassettes:
   – Interviews (3)
1 floppy disk:
   – Bibliography (1)
   – Summaries (3)
   – Term paper (1)

1.3 Nielsen, Alyssum
Veterans interviewed:
   – Ramshaw, Betty
   – Tanner, Beryl
   – Taylor, Edith
   – Wilkes, Sylvia
Interviewed by Alyssum Nielsen
7 audio cassettes:
   – Interviews (4)
1 floppy disk:
   – Summaries (4)
   – Term paper (1)

1.4 Walton, Louise
Veterans interviewed:
George, Robert E., VAdm
McLean, Douglas J., Cmdre
Summers, Kenneth J., RAdm
Interviewed by Louise Walton
4 audio cassettes:
  - Interviews (3)
1 floppy disk:
  - Pre-interview data sheets (4)
  - Summaries (4)
  - Term paper (2)

1.5 Weatherbe, Steve
“Challenges in Armoured Warfare in North West Europe: An Oral History Perspective”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Rogers, Robert G.
  - Sheppard, Patrick
  - Tedlie, A. James
Interviewed by Steve Weatherbe
4 audio cassettes:
  - Interviews (3)

1.6 Wood, Jessica
“Warriors Remember: Aboriginal Veterans & Oral History In Canada”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Clark, Ernest
  - McKenzie, Claude
  - Planes, Frank
Interviewed by Jessica Wood
3 audio cassettes:
  - Interviews (1)

1.7 Karod, Suneil
Veterans interviewed:
  - Finley, Hartland
  - Pask, Kenneth
  - Sager, Arthur
3 audio cassettes:
  - Interviews (3)
1 floppy disk:
  - Summaries (3)
  - Term paper (1)
Box 1:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. David Zimmerman, Fall 2008

1.1 Anderson, Dana
"Canadian Peacekeepers in Bosnia and Croatia"
Veterans interviewed:
− Childerhose, Gary
− Phillips, Barry
− Walton, Thomas
Interviewed by Dana Anderson
TSS of consent and release forms
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
− Consent forms (3)
− Email correspondence (3)
− Interviews (3)
− Release forms (3)
− Summaries (3)
− Term paper (1)

1.2 Bienvenu, Kyle
"Unification"
Veterans interviewed:
− Huges, Bill
− Veronneau, Jean
− Yanow, Robert
Interviewed by Kyle Bienvenu
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
− Interviews (4)
− Personal photos and documents
− Pre-interview questions (1)
− Summaries (3)

1.3 Campbell, Heather
Veterans interviewed:
− Butler, John
− Costeloe, Geoffrey
− Goodman, Charles
− Maule, Peter
Interviewed by Heather Campbell
TSS of consent and release forms, summaries
Personal photos and documents
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
− Consent forms (4)
- Interviews (5)
- Personal photos and documents
- Release forms (4)
- Summaries (4)

1.4 Disher, Courtney
Veterans interviewed:
- Bartram, Dave
- Eichel, Scott
- Summers, Ken
Interviewed by Courtney Disher
TSS of consent and release forms, summaries
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
- Consent forms (3)
- Interviews (3)
- Release forms (3)
- Summaries (3)

1.5 Gillam, Nicola
Veterans interviewed:
- Drover, Lee
- Hasset, Tom
- Huber, David
- Kempling, Jim
Interviewed by Nicola Gillam
TSS of consent and release forms, summaries
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
- Consent forms (4)
- Interviews (5)
- Release forms (4)
- Summaries (4)

1.6 Gower, Katrina
"4 Canadian Mechanized Brigade Group"
Veterans interviewed:
- Paone, Paul
- Philips, Barry
- Roberge, Leopold
Interviewed by Katrina Gower
TSS of consent and release forms, summaries
NATO badge and shoulder epaulette
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
- Consent forms (3)
- Essays (2)
- Images (2)
- Interviews (3)
- Release forms (3)
- Summaries (3)
1.7 Leitch, Quinn
"The Silent Service"
Veterans interviewed:
- Barnes, Lloyd
- Lund, Wilf
- Tate, Maurice
Interviewed by Quinn Leitch
TSS of consent and release forms
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
- Consent forms (3)
- Essays (1)
- Images (2)
- Interviews (3)
- Release forms (3)
- Summaries (3)

1.8 Lopeter, Louise
Veterans interviewed:
- Brodsky, G.W.
- Derkson, R.A.
- Paone, Paul
Interviewed by Louise Lopeter
TSS of consent and release forms
Photographs of Maj. R.A. Derkson from his service with the UNFICY in Cyprus in 1974 (5)
Items donated by Lt. Col. Paul Paone:
- Army issue can opener
- Egyptian flag acquired in Egypt in 1975
- Russian pin given to Paone during his service with the UNEF II after an encounter with a Russian family
- Uniform sleeve. Worn with United Nations uniform to signify nationality
- United Nations, Canadian Flag and 'Canada' patches. Patches were worn on uniforms to signify they were from Canada on a United Nations mission
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
- Consent forms (3)
- Interviews (3)
- Release forms (3)
- Summaries (3)

1.9 Reumkens, Brock
"Training and Equipment: Canada’s Army during the Korean War"
Veterans interviewed:
- Hryhoryshen, Gord
- Sherritt, J.K.H.
- Stewart, Robert
Interviewed by Brock Reumkens
TSS of consent and release forms
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
  – Consent forms (3)
  – Essays (3)
  – Interviews (4)
  – Questions (3)
  – Release forms (3)
  – Summaries (3)

1.10 Sawatsky, Kristen
Veterans interviewed:
  – Adamson, Dave
  – Frewen, Jerry
  – Skaalen, Lloyd
Interviewed by Kristen Sawatsky
TSS of consent and release forms, summaries
1 digital versatile disc (see 1.11)
  – Consent forms (2)
  – Essays (1)
  – Interviews (4)
  – Release forms (3)
  – Summaries (4)

1.11 1 digital versatile disc
"Veterans Oral History Project, H394 - Interviews and forms, Fall 2008"
File 1:

Japanese-Canadian Veterans Oral History Project
- Veterans interviewed:
  - Inouye, Lanky
  - Murata, Kenny
  - Nakamura, Richard
  - Sato, Arthur
  - Ubukata, James
  - Ujimoto, Ken
TSS of consent forms
1 digital versatile disc
  - Interviews (9 mp3 audio files)
  - Summaries (6 Microsoft Word documents)
  - Questions (1 Microsoft Word document)
File 1:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. James Wood, Fall 2009

- Blencoe, Jonathan
  "Protestant Military Chaplains: A Question of Balance"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Fowler, Albert [598]
  - Reid, Alexander [599]
  Interviewed by Jonathan Blencoe
  TSS of release forms
  1 compact disc:
  - Essay (1)
  - Interviews (3)
  - Summaries (2)

- Duncan, Caroline
  "For Each Dear Life of Sacrifice: Post-war Commemoration"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Goodman, Charles [600]
  - Hughes, Bill [601]
  - Pitts, Herb [602]
  Interviewed by Caroline Duncan
  TSS of release forms
  1 compact disc:
  - Essay (1)
  - Interviews (5)

- Hill, Ryan
  "Three Perspectives on Canadian Army Operations in Normandy during the Second World War"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Edmondson, John [603]
  - Goodman, Charles [604]
  - Wilkinson, George [605]
  Interviewed by Ryan Hill
  TSS of release forms
  1 compact disc:
  - Essay (1)
  - Interviews (4)
  - Summaries (3)

- Pye, Andrew
  "The Royal Canadian Navy and the Cuban Missile Crisis"
  Veterans interviewed:
- Brodeur, Nigel [606]
- Welland, Robert [607]
- Yanow, Robert [608]
Interviewed by Andrew Pye
TSS of release forms
1 compact disc:
  - Essay (1)
  - Interviews (3)
  - Summaries (3)

- Rosberg, Tyson
"God’s Gift to the Empire: Canadian Veterans and the Memory of the British Commonwealth Air Training Program"
Veterans interviewed:
  - Ashbaugh, Fred [609]
  - Sproule, Fred [610]
  - Sutherland, Wilf [611]
Interviewed by Tyson Rosberg
TSS of release forms
1 compact disc:
  - Essay (1)
  - Interviews (3)
  - Summaries (3)

- Williams, Elizabeth
Veterans interviewed:
  - Kempling, James [612]
  - Philips, Barry [613]
  - Swan, Terrance [614]
  - Willbond, William [615]
Interviewed by Elizabeth Williams
TSS of release forms
1 compact disc:
  - Interviews (8)

- Zouak, Jehan
Veterans interviewed:
  - Norman, Derek [616]
  - Pitts, Herb [617]
  - Willbond, Billy [618]
Interviewed by Jehan Zouak
TSS of release forms
1 compact disc:
  - Interviews (3)
  - Summaries (3)

1 compact disc
"Veterans Oral History Project, HIST 394 - Interviews and Forms, Fall 2009"
File 1:

**Interview with LCol Cyril Neroutsos**

1.1 1 compact disc and an oral history release form.
Description from disc: "From TAPES LCol Cyril Houlton NEROUTSOS age 86 discusses X FORCE & bridge over the Moro River Italian Campaign WWII"
Box 1:

**Military Oral History Interviews on Videotape**

1.1 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Hill Wilson, Chief Pilot, Pacific pilot authority

1.2 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Commander E. S. (Ted) Simmens CD, RCN rtd

1.3 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Col (E) W. E. (Dusty) Rhodes CD RCN rtd

1.4 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Commander Phillip G. Bissell CD RCN rtd

1.5 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Commodore George Douglas RCN rtd

1.6 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Alan Wyatt Nov 2004

1.7 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Captain Keith Young CD RCN rtd

1.8 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Commander Graham Bridgman RCN rtd

1.9 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Captain Peter Hinton CD RCN rtd

1.10 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: LCol James Butterfield CD RCN rtd

1.11 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: LCol George A. Powell CD RCN rtd

1.12 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: LCol (P) Sheldon Rowell CD RCN rtd

1.13 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: LCol George A. Goodeve RCN rtd

1.14 1 videotape (ca. 120 min.)

From label: Cdr (L) Bill Krogel

**Military Oral History Interview on Audio Cassette**

1.15 1 audio cassette (ca. 90 min.)

From case: Life on board Magnificent. Interview with Dick Meadows Nov/2001
Files:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. James Wood, Spring 2012

1.1 Ayers, Caylan
"The Sea King: A Narrative of Adaptability"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Colonel John McManus (702)
  – Lieutenant-Colonel Ed Mitchell (703)
  – Colonel John Orr (704)
Interviewed by Caylan Ayers
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries
Digital copies of essay, interviews and summaries on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.2 Balfour, Jimmy
Veterans interviewed:
  – Al Giesbrecht (705)
  – Slade Lerch (706)
  – Stew Parkinson (707)
Interviewed by Jimmy Balfour
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms
Digital copies of interviews and summaries on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.3 Conquist, Stefan
"Op Athena: Enlisted Experiences from Kandahar"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Master Corporal Stephen Clews (708)
  – Corporal Scott Evans (709)
  – Bombardier Charles Paquet (710)
Interviewed by Stefan Conquist
TSS of releases forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries
Digital copies of essay, interviews and summaries on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.4 Eriksson, Camas
"Canadian Soldiers in Cyprus: Understanding the Human Experience of Peacekeeping Through Oral History"
Veterans interviewed:
  – John Joly (711)
  – Cam Ross (712)
  – Terry Swan (713)
  – Tom Walton (714)
Interviewed by Camas Eriksson
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms, related documents
Digital copies of essay, interviews, summaries and photographs on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.5  Lundeberg, Faelan
"Painful Homecomings: Vietnam Veterans Since the War"
Veterans interviewed:
– Giselle Bissley (715)
– Doug Lawrence (716)
– Stan Oakes (717)
Interviewed by Faelan Lundeberg
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms, related documents
Digital copies of essay, interviews and summaries on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.6  Maher, Ceilidhe
"Oral History and the Trivialized Aspects of the Second World War"
Veterans interviewed:
– John Innes (718)
– Jim Macdonald (719)
– Neil Rhodes (720)
– Fred Sproule (721)
Interviewed by Ceilidhe Maher
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries, related documents
Digital copies of essay and interviews on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.7  North, Steve
Veterans interviewed:
– John Innes (722)
– James Vanyo (723)
Interviewed by Steve North
TSS of release forms
Digital copies of interviews (audio and video), preliminary interview forms, interview summaries and photographs on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.8  Ratiu, Ovidiu
Canadian Forces under UN and Nato in Yugoslavia: From "Peace Keepers" to "Peace Makers"
Veterans interviewed:
– Barry Phillips (724)
– Mike Soley (725)
– Stanley Willow (726)
Interviewed by Ovidiu Ratiu
TSS of release forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries
Digital copies of essay and interviews on compact disc (see 1.12)
1.9 Schade, Dan
"Mapping the North: 408 Squadron and the Shoradetic Survey"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Flight Lieutenant Richard Acton (727)
  – Lieutenant Colonel Georg Baker (728)
  – Flying Officer Robert Kanngeiser (729)
Interviewed by Dan Schade
TSS of release forms
Digital copies of essay, interviews, summaries and preliminary interview forms on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.10 Stewart, Meghan
"Health Care Risks to Canadian Troops in Africa"
Veterans interviewed:
  – Major Joan Clement (730)
  – Colonel Peter Green (731)
  – Major Philip Lancaster (732)
  – Major General Cam Ross (733)
  – Lieutenant Colonel Stanley Willow (734)
Interviewed by Meghan Stewart
TSS of release forms, interview summaries, preliminary interview forms, related documents
Digital copies of essay, interviews, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries and related documents on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.11 Wood, Hannah
Veterans interviewed:
  – Nigel Brodeur (735)
  – Gary Garnett (736)
  – John Mason (737)
Interviewed by Hannah Wood
TSS of release forms and preliminary interview forms
Digital copies of essay, interviews and interview summaries on compact disc (see 1.12)

1.12 Compact disc (CD) of interviews, summaries, photographs and essays
Box 1:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Shawn Cafferky, Fall 2007

1.1 Interview by Ed and Sharon Fitch
Veteran interviewed: Harry Schiff (738)
File contains: 1 compact disc of interview notes, release form and digital audio file (1 Sony Digital Voice recording .dvf file)

1.2 Interviews by Curtis Hansen
Veterans interviewed: Dave Huber (739), Doug Maclean (740), Leander Drover (741)
File contains: pre-interview data sheets, consent forms, 1 compact disc of digital audio files (3 Sony Digital Voice recording .dvf files), photographs, summaries

1.3 Interviews by Sarah Beth Hutchison
Veterans interviewed: Kathleen Brodsky (742), Claudette Lake (743), Mary Eggenberger (744), Alex and Molly Reid (745)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, 3 compact discs of interview audio files (4 CD Audio .cda files) and interview summaries, 2 cassette tapes (note: files on compact discs require disc for playback)

1.4 Interviews by Suneil Karod
Veterans interviewed: Arthur Sager (559), Hartland R. Finley (557), Ken Pask (558)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, summaries (note: audio recordings of interviews are with Accession 2008-043)

1.5 Interviews by Elena Merritt
Veterans interviewed: Lieutenant-Colonel Barry Phillips (746), Captain Kathryn Durrance (747), Sergeant David Huber (748), Sergeant Harold Miller (749)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, pre-interview data sheets, summaries, 4 compact discs of interview audio files (5 Sony Digital Voice recording .dvf files) (note: Phillips disc is blank; the interview is missing)

1.6 Interviews by Chris Perry
Veterans interviewed: Bob Welland (750), Jan Drent (751), Nigel Brodeur (752)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, interview summaries, 1 compact disc of an audio file (1 CD Audio .cda file), 1 cassette tape (note: file on compact disc requires disc for playback)

1.7 Interviews by Val Rundans
Veterans interviewed: Brigadier-General Ron Bell (753), Colonel John Eggenberger (754), Colonel Tom Reid (755)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, biographies, essay (“The Point of the
Arrow is Sovereignty: Continuities and Discontinuities in the Integration of North American Air Defence"), 1 compact disc of digital recording maps (3 Microsoft Word .doc files) and interview audio files (4 Sony Digital Voice recording .dvf files)

1.8 Interviews by Natasha Taschuk
Veterans interviewed: Lieutenant Colonel Robert S. Peacock (756), Lieutenant Colonel Barry Phillips (757), Lieutenant Colonel Julian Cecil Berezowski (758), Colonel David Walters (759), Brigadier General James I. Hanson (760), Colonel Donald Bruce McGibbon (761), Colonel George Olson (762)
File contains: pre-interview data sheets, release forms, consent forms, summaries, 1 compact disc of interview audio files (9 Sony Digital Voice recording .dvf files)

1.9 Interviews by Louise Tumchewics
Veterans interviewed: Don Schurman (763), Gerald Walls (764), Wesley A. Milne (765), Doug Hudson (766)
File contains: consent forms, release forms, interview summaries, 4 compact discs of interview audio files (2 Waveform Audio .wav files), 1 audio cassette (note: the Schurman and second Walls disc are unreadable; the interviews are missing)

1.10 Interviews by Steve Weatherbe
Veterans interviewed: A. James Tedlie (539), Patrick E. Sheppard (538), Robert G. Rogers (537)
File contains: consent forms, interview synopsis sheets, release forms (note: audio recordings of interviews are with Accessions 2008-041 and 2008-043)

1.11 Interviews by Jonathon Wolsey
Veterans interviewed: Rear Admiral Ken Summers (767), Vice Admiral Jean Yves Forcier (768), Commodore Doug McClean (769)
File contains: pre-interview data sheets, summaries, release forms, consent forms, 3 audio cassettes

1.12 Interviews by Jessica Wood
Veterans interviewed: Ernest Arthur Clark (540), Claude A. McKenzie (541), Frank Planes (542)
File contains: interview synopsis sheets, pre-interview data sheets, consent forms, release forms (note: audio recordings of interviews are with Accessions 2008-041 and 2008-043)
File:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Timothy Balzer, 2013

- Stewart, Meghan
  Veteran interviewed: Peggy Chalmers (770)
  Interviewed by Meghan Stewart
  TSS of release form, interview summary, preliminary interview form,
  photocopies of related articles

- Ayers, Caylan
  Veteran interviewed: Horace Gerrad (771)
  Interviewed by Caylan Ayers
  TSS of release form, photocopy of map

- Digital copies (MP3) of Chalmers and Gerrard interviews on compact disc
Files:

Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Timothy Balzer, Spring 2013

1.1  Bond, Celeste
"Administration and Politics as a Barrier to Peace: The Arab-Israeli Conflicts"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Bill Donaldson (772)
   – Murray Edwards (773)
   – George Wilkinson (774)
Interviewed by Celeste Bond
Release forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews on three compact discs

1.2  Dunn, Kymberly
"Cyprus Peacekeeping and the Value of Oral History"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Ron Caven (775)
   – Colonel Paul Crober (776)
   – Major Murray Edwards (777)
Interviewed by Kymberly Dunn
Release forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews on three compact discs

1.3  Fish, Cameron
"Remembering a Forgotten War: The Contribution of Oral History to the History of the Canadian Army in the Korean War"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Major Murray Edwards (778)
   – Eddie Hadel (779)
   – Phillip Leigh (780)
Interviewed by Cameron Fish
Preliminary interview forms, release forms
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews and interview summaries on one compact disc

1.4  Hayward, Madi
"Post Military Aviation Employment: Comparing World War II Air Force Veterans with Cold War Air Force Veterans"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Willis Cline (781)
– Stan Hegstrom (782)
– Richard Spratt (783)
Interviewed by Madi Hayward
Release forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews on three compact discs

1.5 Illsey, Ray
"Canadian Submarines – Benefit or Not?"
Veterans interviewed:
– Commander Lloyd Barnes (784)
– Commander Lawrence Dawe (785)
– Commander Ted Heath (786)
Interviewed by Ray Illsey
Interview summaries, release forms
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews on three compact discs

1.6 Kowalski, Luke
"The Public Face of the Royal Canadian Air Force: The Importance of Air Shows and Demonstration Teams to the R.C.A.F."
Veterans interviewed:
– Captain Gary Brown (787)
– Lieutenant-Colonel Dan Dempsey (788)
– Major-General Scott Eichel (789)
Interviewed by Luke Kowalski
Release forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (WAV) of interviews and interview summaries on three compact discs

1.7 Noon, Cheryl
Veterans interviewed:
– Stanley Hegstrom (790)
– George Hickson (791)
– William Mills (792)
Interviewed by Cheryl Noon
Release forms, preliminary interview forms
Digital copies (MOV) of interviews and summaries on one compact disc
Hegstrom interview and summary missing from disc

1.8 Reynoldson, Courtney
"From Blue Beret to Battle Helmet: Canada, the UN, and NATO in Bosnia-Herzegovina"
Veterans interviewed:
– Colonel David Myles (793)
– Colonel Patrick Quealey (794)
– Colonel Graham Thornton (795)
Interviewed by Courtney Reynoldson
Release forms, preliminary interview forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (AIFF) of interviews on three compact discs

1.9 Schneider, Matthew
"Officers First, Pilots Second: RCN Aviation and the Cold War"
Veterans interviewed:
   – Stanley Brygadyr (796)
   – Geoffrey Craven (797)
   – Albert Horner (798)
Interviewed by Matthew Schneider
Release forms, interview summaries
Digital copies (MP3) of interviews on three compact discs
Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 394, Dr. Timothy Balzer, Spring 2014

- Fast, Ben
  "Training for the Skies: Comparisons of Second World War and Cold War Aircrew Training"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Captain David V. Berger-North (799)
  - Flight Lieutenant Lewis Duddridge (800)
  - Warrant Officer Peter Lake (801)
  Interviewed by Ben Fast
  Release forms, interview summaries
  Digital copies (MP3) of interviews, summaries and paper

- Fitterer, Sarah
  "A 600 Metre View: Oral History, Historical Narrative, and the Canadian Experience in Afghanistan"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Stefan Conquist (802)
  - Anne Irwin (803)
  - Nick Kerr (804)
  Interviewed by Sarah Fitterer
  Release forms, interview summaries
  Digital copies (MP3) of interviews, summaries and paper

- Jezierski, Janel
  "The Value of Oral History Explored Through Canadian Maritime Air Support, 1941-1994"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Scott Eichel (805)
  - Herbert Matthews (806)
  - Blair Wilkinson (807)
  Interviewed by Janel Jezierski
  Release forms, interview summaries
  Digital copies (MP3) of interviews and paper

- Taylor, Sarah
  "The Forgotten Diplomats: Using Oral History to Study the Neglected Subject of Canadian Military Attachés"
  Veterans interviewed:
  - Kevin Carlé (808)
  - Jan Drent (809)
  - Robert Earl George (810)
  Interviewed by Sarah Taylor
  Release forms, interview summaries
  Digital copies (MP3) of interviews, summaries and paper
Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
History 426, Dr. Timothy Balzer, Spring 2015

1) Carey, Isobelle
“Bomber Command, Second World War”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Lew Fiddick (811)
  - Barry Hall (812)
  - Reg Price (813)
Interviewed by Isobelle (Izzy) Carey
Release forms
Digital copies (MP3, M4A) of interviews, summaries (DOC)

2) Carr, Mackenzie
“South East Asia Air Operations”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Colonel (Hon.) Jeff Morris (814)
  - Atholl Southerland-Brown (815)
  - John Taylor (816)
Interviewed by Mackenzie Carr
Release forms
Digital copies of interviews (MP3), summaries (DOC)

3) Dale, Diana
“The Canadian Experience in Afghanistan”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Master Corporal Rob Chalmers (817)
  - Bombardier Stefan Conquist (818)
  - Lieutenant Darrell Stubbington (819)
Interviewed by Diana Dale
Release forms
Digital copies of interviews (AIFF), photographs from Darrell Stubbington (JPEG), summaries and essay (DOC)

4) Glover, Alexie
“The Value of Oral History: Investigating the History of Canadian Cold War Military Families”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Captain Kevin Carle (820)
  - Betsy Theriault (821)
  - Elizabeth del Villano (822)
Interviewed by Alexie Glover
Release forms
Digital copies of interviews (MP3), summaries and essay (DOC)

5) Mayer, Ethan
“Korea 1950-53: A Comparison of Oral and Documented History on Canada’s Involvement in the Korean War”
Veterans interviewed:
  - Charlie McLean (823)
6) Youngblood, Taylor
“The Second World War the Soldiers History: Comparing Written sources to Oral Testimonies”
Veterans interviewed:
- Bert Braidwood (826)
- Sergeant Denys Cook (827)
- Major Murray Edwards (828)
Interviewed by Taylor Youngblood
Release forms
Digital copies of interviews (AIFF), summaries and essay (DOC)
Military Oral History Interviews and Papers
HIST 426A, Dr. David Zimmerman, Spring 2016

Box 1, Folder 1  Interviews by Courtney Yanta, 2016; includes preliminary interview forms, interview release forms, and student essay
Box 1, Folder 2  Interviews by Kate Riordon, 2016; includes interview release forms and student essay
Box 1, Folder 3  Interviews by Josie Gray, 2016; includes interview release forms, interview summaries and student essay
Box 1, Folder 4  Interviews by Trevor Gallagher, 2016; includes interview summaries and student essay
Box 1, Folder 5  Digital files, 1 CD-R (audio files and other formats); electronic copies of interviews (MP3, WMA), interview summaries (DOC), preliminary forms (DOC), notes (DOC), photographs (JPEG), student essays (DOC)
Box 1, Folder 6  Interviews by Alexander Morgenthaler, 2016; includes interview summaries and preliminary interview forms

Interview descriptions

Courtney Yanta
*Remembering Yugoslavia: The Canadian Military's Service in the Balkans*
Veterans interviewed:
- Tyson Stephen King (829)
- Tamara Leigh Featherstone (830)
- Ryan James Gow (831)

Kate Riordon
*The People's War: Three Oral Histories of the British Army in Northern Ireland*
Veterans interviewed:
- Don Stedeford (832)
- Eric Peter Green (833)
- Richard Eaton (834)

Josie Gray
*Canada in Afghanistan: Counter-Insurgency, Counter-IED, and Development*
Veterans interviewed:
- Jayden Keith Simpson Cormier (835)
Trevor Gallagher
"We Were Dead Once We Flew into Burma": Chinese Canadians in Force 136
Veterans interviewed:
  - Gordon Quan (838)
  - Ronald Lee (839)
  - Victor Wong (840)

Alexander Morgenthaler
NORAD: The Veterans' Experience
Veterans interviewed:
  - Mark Thomas Dodd (841)
  - Robert Lorne Holland (842)
  - Peter Keith-Murray (843)